

**Published by The Partnership Machine, Inc.,  
137 E. Leach ↔ Des Moines Iowa 50315  
[www.Saltshaker.US](http://www.Saltshaker.US)  
515/244-3711  
Copyright 2006 AD by Dave Leach, all rights reserved**

This is one of a few copies printed  
for the purpose of getting readers' feedback,  
while seeking a contract with a mainstream publisher.  
This copy includes manuscript revisions through  
December 19, 2018 AD

### *What readers have said about The Angel Diary:*

*"Thank you for the opportunity to view your manuscript of The Angel Diary. I have found it to be an exceedingly interesting book. It reminds me of C.S. Lewis' 'Screwtape Letters'. It is of that excellence of quality. Your theories shine with purpose. Of course I am a strong believer in the King James Version and have had many scimmages over it. It is still the most tried and true, and all others are just a counterfeit. So it blesses me that you use King James, and it also blesses me that you write out the Scriptures. You cover many important topics such as 'The Life of the flesh is in the blood.' While I take this writing to be 'fiction', it is truly thought-provoking with your support from Scripture. May God use this as a tool in your hand to promote the Gospel and to showcase the defeat of our enemy, Lucifer, the once cherished angel who now awaits his final destination – the fires of Hell."*

*-- Dr. B. L. Rice, Bible College President, pastor of  
Commerce Community Church, West Des Moines, Iowa*

*"What I've read so far I like. It's a good book. I have it almost read. My husband has read more of it than I have. I have to keep fighting him for the book." -- Rhonda Paine, Des Moines Iowa  
(Church background: Fundamentalist)*

*"I think it's delightful." -- Kris Hoover, Des Moines, Iowa  
(Catholic)*

*"I'm liking it. I can't read it straight through; Steve is reading it the same time I am and he keeps losing my book mark. I*

*like how much Scripture it has.” -- Kay Stroh, Indianola, Iowa (Baptist)*

*“I like it. I think it is a good starting point for conversation with an unbeliever.” -- Pastor Jewelly Rice, Des Moines, Iowa (Charismatic)*

*“I used to wish I had lived in Bible times and been with people like Jesus and Noah. But in ‘Noah’s Favorite Sermons’, [Book 3], you hit a lot of nails on the head, and I thought about how controversial Jesus was, always arguing with the authorities, and now I’m glad I didn’t live then, because I’m afraid I would have been like ‘Sister Nice’, and would not have stood up for Jesus, but would have gone along with the religious leaders.” -- Thelma Leach, my mother (Assembly of God)*

Dave Leach published the Prayer & Action News from 1986 to 2015. That, plus his cable TV show which he has hosted from 1995 to 2015, his candidacies for public office, and his controversial, Bible-quoting stands against abortion and sodomy, have gotten him media coverage from local newspapers to CNN International, (mostly untrue and negative), and have gotten him listed in Who’s Who in Media and Communications and Who’s Who in America. At Drake university he did not major in Controversy, but in Music. He owns the Family Music Center in Des Moines, Iowa. Not “a denominational kind of guy”, he has been on the music staff of a variety of churches, and performs as a musician in churches as well as in secular settings. Contact him through [www.Saltshaker.US](http://www.Saltshaker.US) or [DaveLeach@Saltshaker.US](mailto:DaveLeach@Saltshaker.US)

(Prehistoric)

# The Angel/ Diary

## A Duad

### **Book One** (-0.0 BT through 1 AT)

Hell Born <> Creation <> Two Trees  
God's Past <> The Fall

### **Book Two** (1 AT through 600 AT)

The Tree of Laws <> Murder! <> Cain's New Life  
<> Why a "God of Love" "allows evil" <> Gods  
and Dictators <> Young Noah <> Noah's  
Romance <> Noah's Guzbo Soap Ministry <>  
Noah on Trial <> Getting Ready to Start Over  
<> Finished! <> Thunderstorm!

# Contents

## Book 1: From – 0.0 BT through 1 AT

How the Diary was Discovered (introduction) vi

## Part 1: Before Time *"The Cause of Hell"*

**1 Beelzebub's "Amazing" Choices** 1

What did Beelzebub expect to accomplish? ◇ How could angels not feel joy? ◇ How could the Fallen Angels claim the fire caused pain?  
◇ The substance of Hell Fire

**2 Fires of Blessing** 14

The resistance to God that caused fire to hurt ◇ The wonderful blessing of Hell Fire ◇ The same light that comforts the righteous terrifies the wicked

**3 Hell at the Movies** 27

The first step to pain: Selfishness

**4 Demon Drink!** 39

Categories of addictions: The Dizzy Group. ("Uppers", or "Stimulants"); The Headache Group. ("Downers", or "Depressants"); The Meditation Group ("Empty Minds"); The Do Your Own Thing Group ("Empty Lives")

**5 God's Fireside Chat** 51

Fire is fire ◇ God's Presence, if not Fellowship, in Hell ◇ God answers some prayers from Hell

**6 God won't FORCE you into Heaven** 59

God's T-shirts ◇ Don't close your eyes, and accuse God of making you blind! ◇ Hell is self-inflicted

**7 Judgment** 77

All will participate in Judgment ◇ We will remember the Old Heaven and the Old Earth, but won't long to return ◇ To grieve over the sins of others is a quality God seeks in us

**8 The Book of Life!** 82

The Word that Began Time

## Part 2: Creation

**9 The Beginning of Time** 87

It all started with a ball of water: God's tears

**10 Days 2-4: The Universe** 98

Billions of years in a day

**11 Evolutionists from Hell** 107

The Invention of Sarcasm ◇ Evolution Banging Out Life ◇ Theory of Revolution ◇ Plants need Animals

## **12 Man! . . . . . 115**

Man's Soul: the Reflection of God. Man's Body: Showcase for Blood  
◊ The Power to Imagine Possibilities ◊ Why God started with just  
one man, in contrast to the great swarms of animals ◊ Adam's  
Sacrifice: Foundation for Love ◊ Other differences encouraging Love

## **Part 3: The Two Trees**

### **13 The Tree of Grace . . . . . 129**

How Life is dependant, for its very existence, on Love ◊ The Costly Fruit of  
the Tree of Life ◊ Made to be eaten, but not yet ◊ The Blessing of a  
Prohibition ◊ The Fruit of the Tree of Knowledge identified

### **14 Laws from Hell . . . . . 140**

Why man was not ready to eat of either tree ◊ The Blessing of Ignorance

## **Part 4: God's Past**

### **15 When God Was Alone . . . . . 160**

Why God Decided to Create Consciousness ◊ The Nature of Consciousness,  
Loneliness, Love, and Evil ◊ Previous universes ◊ Matter cannot grow  
or atrophy, but only wind down; Consciousness must either grow, or atrophy  
◊ Matter can be "wound back up" only by consciousness; consciousness  
can be "wound back up" only by Love

### **16 How Consciousness "Dies" . . . . . 174**

How Consciousness Grows; How it "Dies": Reality, and Oblivion ◊  
Creativity requires Intensity of Concentration ◊ Oblivion is Not Nice ◊  
Quitting is simpler than Winning ◊ God's Blueprints of the Future

### **17 The Deadly "Simple Life" . . . . . 183**

God's Solution to the Lure of Simplicity ◊ It is *wonderful* to care about  
others enough to want to suffer for them ◊ "Self" is a heavy chain, which  
Beelzebub sought to escape; which we can "lose" through Love ◊ "Choice",  
the power to choose, is holy. But to demand reverence for the "Choice" to be  
evil profanes the very power to think

### **18 God Keeps Everyone Safe . . . . . 190**

God gives the wicked considerable freedom -- but not absolute freedom --  
in order to guarantee absolute safety for all ◊ How limited intelligence  
encourages Love ◊ The greatest punishment for the wicked is inflicted  
by the nature of consciousness itself

### **19 Travail Within the Trinity. . . . . 208**

That authority, against which consciousness rebels, is essentially its own  
◊ Obedience, the key to satisfaction ◊ The Commandments of God are not the  
chains of an alien tyrant pushing us down into slavery to purposes other than our  
own. They are the key to the chains of the very nature of our own Consciousness

### **20 How to Lose Weight . . . . . 237**

The publisher said we have to add something  
to all this Bible stuff that will make it marketable

### **21 Beelzebub introduces himself . . . . . 258**

Had he been smart enough to invent used cars, he could have sold a million of them ◇ Beelzebub teases, intrigues, and flim-flams Adam	
<b>22 Preparing Adam</b>	<b>267</b>
God's discussion with Adam after Adam met Beelzebub ◇ God gets Adam to open up about his meeting with Beelzebub	
<b>23 Bad Things to Good People</b>	<b>275</b>
The angels can't comprehend why anyone would call God's preparations "bad" ◇ Who is "good"? And which of God's preparations are "bad"? The angels prepare dreams	
<b>24 Sin Lieth at the Door</b>	<b>279</b>
God explains to the angels why He let Beelzebub into Eden	
<b>25 Woe! Woe!</b>	<b>294</b>
Beelzebub bamboozles a semi-willing Woman	
<b>26 In the Mouth, Sweet as Honey</b>	<b>308</b>
How forbidden knowledge changed human thinking.	
<b>27 In the Belly, Bitter</b>	<b>327</b>
Faith, contentment, and peace replaced with suspicion, restlessness, and hostility	
<b>28 God Stops the Charade</b>	<b>334</b>
God stops Adam and Woman's fast spin towards Hell's utter misery	
<b>29 Angel Tears</b>	<b>353</b>
Angels cry, God laughs; why did the angels think Adam's mistake would permanently close Eden? Every human will begin there, and will remain as long as they trust and serve God!	
<b>30 Pain</b>	<b>366</b>
The benefits of pain	
<b>Epilogue</b>	<b>371</b>
Reasons for writing like this	
<b>Telephone Call from Hell</b>	<b>376</b>
No synopsis can prepare you for this	
<b>Last Page</b>	<b>381</b>

# How the Diary was Discovered

It happened during excavations in the Grand Canyon, that hotbed of dispute between evolutionists and creationists.

Evolutionists insist it was carved by a river over millions of years. Creationists observe that it is so similar to the smaller canyon created in a single day by a mud flow from Mt. St. Helens March 19, 1982 (which had first erupted almost two years before) that a more likely scenario is its rapid creation by the swift drainage of an inland sea during or after Noah's flood.

It was in that appropriately grand setting that a spectacular artifact was discovered which seemed from another age or another world.

The artifact was unearthed just before sunset, but as the light waned the artifact grew brighter, making it clear that it was, itself, a source of light.

As it grew brighter, it began to shimmer, as if it were becoming chemically unstable and might at any moment disintegrate or, worse, explode.

The scientists reasoned that it was reacting chemically to air, so a brave soul volunteered to try to put it into an airtight container. But when he attempted to pick it up with some padded tongs, the artifact burst into a thousand fragments like a white dandelion which a child attempts to pick up by its head.

The flat fragments scattered about like the pages of an ancient book, and glowed white like embers in a breeze. After a few moments they wholly disintegrated, like embers fully consumed. Their light wafted upwards like the smoke of a fire, slow and massive at first, then more concentrated and faster, until finally it shot skywards like a lightning bolt and disappeared.

Not since a Russian oil-drilling team dug a hole to hell and reported hearing the screams of the damned, an event carried in some of America's most respectable Supermarket Tabloids, had there been such a stir in the scientific community!

When the video footage was examined, writing was discovered on the fragments.

It was in a language which appeared to be a precursor of

Hebrew. Painstaking frame-by-frame reconstruction of the video footage of the writing has produced substantial excerpts of what must have been a lengthy document.

The author identifies himself as “Comunicus”. The scientists on the team won't commit themselves to any of the bizarre theories about the nature of the document, or the background or identity of Comunicus. They will say only that they are *unable to disprove* a couple of the theories which are based on an analysis of the text, and which find support, in the view of the non-scientists employed by our team, in the mysterious nature of the artifact itself.

The two leading theories allege that the document was the diary of Comunicus, and that *Comunicus was, or is, an angel*.

**TRANSLATOR'S NOTE:** My guide in selecting excerpts has been my ability to construct complete stories from the fragments. Where information was missing I did my best to fill in details which seemed implied, but when too few fragments of a story were available to tell it without excessive guessing, I omitted it.

Another criteria was whether I myself could make sense of the record. Many items were of events and environments so unimaginable to me that my poor attempts to translate them would have resulted in gibberish. Fortunately several of the entries were of events also recorded in the Bible, so that I had the advantage of corroborating literature, sort of a spiritual Rosetta Stone, to flesh out some of the obscure terms and provide them a sensible translation.

To aid in this inquiry, I developed a computer program which searches text for any similarity to Scripture and lists the comparable references. This works fairly well with any text, but it was made more effective with the Diary of Comunicus by my discovery that the mathematical arrangement of Comunicus' text can be programmed to select references with precision.

Specifically, I discovered that the total of the numerical values of each sentence, divided by the hypotenuse of the Factor of every third line, added to the number of light seconds from the sun to the moon, subtracted from the mean temperature of the mountain bearing Noah's Ark, produces an arrangement of three numbers. When the first number is taken to refer to one of the 66 books of the Bible, the second number is taken to identify the chapter, and the



third number is taken to identify the verse, a passage is selected which bears uncanny resemblance to the text under study.

The scientific community has dubbed my computer program *The VerseScout*. That is the banner under which, for the reader's benefit, I will report, along with my translation, its findings.

Not always is the relevance of the *VerseScout* report, to the Diary passage in question, obvious, so I have designed a plugin to explain the relevance, called *VerseScout Relevance Report*.

I have published these VS and VSRR reports completely unedited. You are reading them precisely as they came out of the computer, so that you may be confident that I have kept all this VS as objective and scientific as possible.

My interest has not been to make any definitive inquiry whether the history recorded by Comunicus has been accurate. Its variance with scientifically established facts has impressed me that such an inquiry would not be profitable. Especially where his notes affirm the Bible, which is not where newspaper scientists turn for evidence.

Scholars interested in examining the complete reconstructed text of the Grand Canyon Artifact #34,778 may write to the Smithsonian Institute, which will be glad to tell you where you can find help.

As a personal note, I recommend you do NOT read the *VerseScout* and *VerseScout Relevance Report* entries. As any scientist knows, the Bible is boring. Only the words of men (well, in this case, an angel, though we do not have the writings of other angels to establish a general rule) are interesting.

*VerseScout: John 5:43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.*

Oh no. I thought I turned that thing off for the introduction! But see what I mean? That wasn't interesting at all, was it, compared with my ideas? Well, use your own judgment. I feel obligated, in the interest of Science, to make available the results of these computer tests. But personally I think this will read a lot faster if you just skip what God has to say and go right to the good part.

Just look at the Bible! How many Christians read it even once through, in their whole lives, though it is only the length of five short books, or one Doctoral Thesis, or one half the IRS Code, or one third of a politician's itemized deductions? Doesn't that prove it is not worth reading? I'm just thinking of you.

The only reason I'm including these *VerseScout* reports is to satisfy a few scientists who want to see footnotes documenting the primary text. Not that they would actually *read* them.

You ask, "Well then why didn't you bury them in small-print footnotes at the end of the book so they wouldn't bother us while we're trying to read?"

It's my wife's fault. She insisted. She said there may be an occasional reader who reads, not only for entertainment, but for accurate information on how to live, who will want to track what corroboration these Diaries have in the Bible, who will never find them at the end of the book. I tried to explain to her that I have never met such readers, but, well, I know you will understand guys, but I didn't want to have to put up with my own cooking.

But the important thing is that this book's scientific status be made clear, which I hope has been accomplished by seeing to it that the relevance of the Word of God has at least been protested.

My final reason for recommending you do not read the VS or VSRR reports, is that they are hard to read. You will notice the *VerseScout* entries are in the King James Version. I wanted to use a modern version, but the *VerseScout* program was not able to bridge the 6000 year gulf between the concepts at Creation and concepts today. My computer kept crashing. Had I not thought of using the KJV to shorten the gap by 400 years, I would not have been able to make the program work at all.

Likewise, date code errors plagued the computer's VSRR reports, plunging its output back 150 years, when American grammar was far more complex, words were bigger, and sentences were longer – in short, when grammar approached the complexity employed by King James' translators, who as faithfully as possible honored the grammatical complexity of the original Greek, I read somewhere.

I was able to keep Comunicus' Diary notes simple enough to meet modern publishing standards (short sentences, easy grammar, little words) simply because I did the translation myself.

It would have taken an extra few years to translate the VS and VSRR reports to meet modern publishing standards because first of all, I would have had to *understand* the reports. Literature of this sort is not within my area of expertise. I am a Scientist, after all.

But I couldn't see the point. Why would anyone want to read them anyway? Just skip them. Who wants to read what *God* wrote, anyway? Just read what *I* wrote.

One other tiny detail, about something some people care about who do not care about God: grammar.

"Help," screamed the drowning damsel.

Can you honesty tell me the damsel put a comma after the word "help", rather than an exclamation point? I think not! I think, "putting, within quote marks, punctuation not belonging to the quote but to the sentence that contains it, is not very scientific!"

It is much more scientific to say:

"Help!" screamed the drowning damsel.

Or at the least:

"Help", screamed the drowning damsel. A scientist should be precise. Why put punctuation inside quote marks that is not part of the quote? Who thought up that, anyway? When punctuation is not part of a quote it belongs outside. Duh. And yet the publishing world favors false attribution of punctuation to people quoted.

I would think at least Bible students would sympathize with this point, especially when it is the Bible being quoted, and the Chicago Manual of Style would have punctuation falsely associated with words of Scripture. I understand Bible readers can get pretty touchy about changing even the punctuation of Scripture.

However, it is not a great issue with me. I just write scientifically because, well, I am a "scientist".

One other detail about the excavation that will interest some: we learned later that the padded tongs which destroyed the artifact were a giant version of a dental tool familiar to the woman manipulating the tongs, since she was a dental technician from Mexico who was in Arizona illegally.

After she destroyed the artifact we of course fired her. When we found out her background, we of course, reported her to ICE out of love (for our nation). In the photograph of the event on the book cover, you can see her waving from the window of the ICE helicopter.

She is now back at her old job pulling teeth at the Matamoros prison for \$9 a day. They pay her that much so she can afford to buy anesthetic. She doesn't have an x-ray machine. The last we heard she was begging missionaries for a bright light.

I relate this only to show that our team was not only scientific: it was responsible and patriotic.

**CONTROVERSY ALERT:** As a scientist, I feel it my duty to warn you that this project didn't turn out the way our team had hoped. As scientists, we of course welcome "controversy" when it disproves God or the Bible. But unfortunately nothing in these pages quite rises to that level of scientific credibility.

Yet what it does do, I, and I would hope the public will, find even more distasteful. It undermines a point or two of traditional theology, yes indeed it does. But then does it leave us alone, armed with an argument against God? No ho! It then offers an alternative theology which leaves the credibility of both God and the Bible intact!

Examples abound in these pages of novel spins on familiar Bible stories. These spins are not quite controversial because they enter arenas upon which tradition has taken no stand. Such as, exactly what hung on the Tree of Knowledge? Or, what was it like for God when He was alone?

But the constant drumbeat of attacks on Evolutionary Science, along with the irrational, uncritical acceptance of the existence of God and the validity of religious Myths, gives me mixed feelings about the computer program I created.

As a scientist, I am pleased with the accuracy with which my VS and VSRR computer programs have functioned. However, on this subject, they have produced a diatribe which is annoyingly religious. Again, I personally urge the reader to pass over them and all their references to what God has said, and just read my brilliant translation of the words of Comunicus (printed in this font) which I did myself.

I doubt if any of this religiosity will be adequate to squelch the marketability of this book, however, since Chapter 20 does tell how to lose weight.

# **Boredom Alert: do NOT read the following introduction**

WARNING: The following introduction is serious, and therefore not worth reading. It is a *serious* explanation of the origin and purpose of this book. Therefore it is not entertaining at all. Please skip it. For the sake of an undisturbed escape from reality, skip right now to Chapter One.

The purpose of this book is to share the treasures I have found in Scripture as I find them myself. As the old hymn states, “I love to tell the Story of unseen things above! Of Jesus and His Glory! Of Jesus and His Love! I love to tell the Story because I know ‘tis true. It satisfies my longings as nothing else can do.”

I have found wonderful truths and clues about wonderful things which open up to us our Purpose in Life. Wonderful things from what “fruit” hung on Eden’s Two trees, to what motivated Satan to rebel, to what is the nature of Hell Fire, to what the universe is made of, to how consciousness works, to what Love is and how it fills all our desires. And all subjects in between!

With lots and lots of Scripture so you can decide for yourself how far my speculation departs from the verses that are its basis.

These studies have a greater purpose, however, than to merely entertain by satisfying curiosity about abstract Bible questions irrelevant to how we live. They target Biblical misunderstandings which, corrected, may help save America.

I have spent 40 years of intense research showing people how to get what they most urgently want – what they pray most for – after confirming from the Bible that what they pray for, God wants for them.

I have found that when people are shown how to make their dreams come true, there is some kind of deep resistance to doing it.

I am astonished every time I meet this natural resistance to accepting what we most want. When I first experienced this I assumed it was my fault. The solutions I offered weren’t that good.

My research was flawed. My explanations poor. So I doubled down and refined my information. I tested my solutions by communicating with the best experts I could reach on my subjects. I didn't attribute failure to some natural resistance of consciousness until top experts agreed my information was sound.

But eventually I noticed that God's *perfect* research, explanations, and solutions meet that very same resistance.

Heaven is what everyone most wants, by definition – and yet how few desire it!

Jesus offers the power to move mountains – yet how few have enough faith to even push!

God rescued Israel from slavery through Moses, 40 years after Moses' initial offer to help was met with contempt – and even after all those miracles, even after miraculous military victories over about a dozen terrorist armies, the Israelites picked up stones to kill Moses, Aaron and Joshua so they could return to slavery rather than enter the Promised Land!

Jesus offers love, success in what genuinely matters, eternal life. How few care! Jesus, who loves every human enough to die for him, is a universal curse word in every human language. People don't curse Mohammed. People don't curse Buddha. People don't curse Confucius. But the only true God, and His Son Jesus.

Writing this book over the past 20 years (starting in about 1998) has enabled me to understand what it is in the nature of consciousness that accounts for that resistance. Understanding it is the key to working through it so that people may accept the blessings they crave so that “your joy may be full”, as Jesus explains in John 16:24.

Since consciousness is what we have that is in the Image of God, my study explains not only human consciousness, but the consciousness of angels and even of God, although there are differences in the pressures felt by infinite versus very limited consciousness which come into focus as we reflect on them.

Part 4, “God's Past”, explores the triune nature of consciousness (God's Trinity is called “Father, Son, and Holy Ghost”. Ours is called (“Thou shalt worship the Lord God with all thy”) heart, soul, and strength. God's Son is perfectly obedient; our soul is at continual war with our heart. Reflecting on Bible clues about these things helps explain how we humans can possibly

choose what hurts us.

Some examples of the relatively miniscule tidbits I have offered over my years:

Spouses being divorced against their will want a way to put the court proceedings on pause so they can save their marriage. See some solutions at [www.saltshaker.us/AmericanIssues/Divorce/DivorcePage.htm](http://www.saltshaker.us/AmericanIssues/Divorce/DivorcePage.htm), I prepared that after many divorced fathers like myself complained that they wished they could stop the madness and save their marriage. But after I got it ready, and told complaining spouses about it, they said “oh it’s no use trying” rather than even study it. Only one father used the legal procedure, and saved his marriage.

Prolifers want a way to court-proof laws against abortion. See what proliferers can do legally and politically at [www.saltshaker.us/SLIC/index.html](http://www.saltshaker.us/SLIC/index.html) But I have presented these ideas to proliferers for years with no results. I find interest, enthusiasm, even agreement when I talk to people but after I give them four pages to read I don’t hear from them again.

Immigrants fleeing to us to save their own lives or lives of their families, who don’t want to hurt us but to work with us, want laws that will recognize their contribution and allow them a way to come legally. My solutions include *economic evidence* that a lot more legal immigration can only bless citizens and in fact may be the only way to save America from crushing federal debt; *Bible studies* which address the theological claims on both sides of the issue, in addition to a study of similarities between E-verify and the technological features of the Mark of the Beast described in Revelation 13 and 14; and a legal brief challenging the constitutionality of immigration quotas which could be raised in almost any immigration proceeding. See how immigrants can use these solutions at [www.saltshaker.us/HispanicHope/HispanicHope.htm](http://www.saltshaker.us/HispanicHope/HispanicHope.htm) and at [www.Talk2me.saltshaker.us](http://www.Talk2me.saltshaker.us). I have described this opportunity to hundreds of immigrants whose hearts are broken for their own suffering loved ones, but so far, no organized action. Just complaints.

South Sudanese want their elected dictator, Salva Kiir, to stop terrorizing the land; they want peace and freedom. See the opportunity at [www.savetheworld.saltshaker.us/wiki/Saving\\_South\\_Sudan](http://www.savetheworld.saltshaker.us/wiki/Saving_South_Sudan)

Loving parents who have lost their children to a child abuse bureaucracy which way too often leaves children with dangerously

abusive parents and takes them from good homes, want sanity in the bureaucracy. See how they can put it there at [www.saltshaker.us/AmericanIssues/ChildAbuse/ChildAbuse.htm](http://www.saltshaker.us/AmericanIssues/ChildAbuse/ChildAbuse.htm)

Pastors want revival. I present Bible solutions at [www.Saltshaker.us](http://www.Saltshaker.us).

Christian political activists want respect for God restored to American culture. I present solutions at [www.Saltshaker.us](http://www.Saltshaker.us).

I have published thousands of articles about these and other matters at:

- \* my periodical “Prayer and Action News” which was mailed out between April 1989 and March 2015,

- \* the Uncle Ed. Show which aired on cable TV from 1996 to April 2015 (1019 trips to the studio to deliver shows),

- \* [www.cafeconlecherepublicans.com](http://www.cafeconlecherepublicans.com) and [www.examiner.com](http://www.examiner.com) and (now defunct),

- \* <https://ipatriot.com/author/DaveLeach/>

- \* <https://independent.academia.edu/DaveLeach>

Youtube channels: [www.youtube.com/user/Biblewizard2](http://www.youtube.com/user/Biblewizard2),  
[www.youtube.com/user/ArmyOfGodRecruiter](http://www.youtube.com/user/ArmyOfGodRecruiter),  
[www.youtube.com/user/FamilyBandChannel](http://www.youtube.com/user/FamilyBandChannel)

How can people turn down, or ignore, solutions to the very problems which most trouble them? I thought I was the only one in the world to experience rejection for helping, until I considered that every human has the experience of offering helpful ideas only to have them politely ignored, or even smashed rudely down. Beginning with parents who find it a struggle just to persuade their own children to grow up and be all they can be. Or spouses who find some of their kindest, most well-meant words misconstrued into hate.

But empathize with God!

God offers Heaven, which is the definition of what everyone wants, and the majority of humans turn it down!

God offers answered prayers, to goals as high as mountains, and people are bored. The same people who fantasize about finding an old lamp they can rub and get a genie who will grant three wishes, being the definition of what anyone would want, roll their eyes at God’s offer to help us achieve *all* we could wish for! Not just three things!

God offers love, which only makes people indignant.

*Psalm 109:4 For my love they are my adversaries: but I*



*give myself unto prayer. 5 And they have rewarded me evil for good, and hatred for my love.*

I dare not give up! What if I get to Heaven and Jesus asks, “Why did you give up right before that mountain you were pushing was about to collapse from your pressure, like the Walls of Jericho? Why didn’t you believe My promise that they would fall if you would believe enough to not give up?”

This book is part of my work of understanding human resistance to what humans want, and overcoming it.

On the other hand, while it is true that my own personal problems have dropped to nearly zero interest for me, compared to my interest in other people’s problems, there is an aspect of this inquiry which approaches personal obsession.

I have an insatiable curiosity about Biblical things. Like, 70 years of yearning to understand, often at an intensity like that of Daniel during his three weeks of fasting to understand a puzzle that didn’t even directly affect him. (Daniel 9-10)

The Bible gives me hope that what I seek, I will find. (Matthew 7:7)

I did not find the fully satisfying answers I sought in Victor Frankl’s “Meaning of Life”, or in psychology. I found a lot in the churches I have joined, but I found the rest in answer to prayer as I wrote this book, as I assembled the Bible’s many puzzle pieces into a clear picture.

I have written, to help people suffering from depression, unhappiness, and thoughts of suicide, or who just wanted to make sense of why we are here, and what we ought to be while we are here.

Unfortunately, I have learned that finding the answers desperately sought by others is the easy part. Presenting what others most desperately need, in a way that they will accept it, is like trying to move a mountain. But that is this book’s second goal. A goal by no means impossible according to Jesus. (Luke 17:6) But pretty daunting, to a mere human like myself. Hence the format of this book, with its whimsical, hopefully entertaining plot line. (Although, Matthew 11:16-19)

I have written, in order to stop our great nation’s slide off

its Biblical foundation in time to save it from ruin. A blindness has come over America's churches to the simple Matthew 5 mandate to shine the light of God's Word, not just into "church", but where it is darkest.

What is darker: sprinkling instead of immersing, or church members murdering their own unborn babies?

Not raising your hands when you say "Glory to God", or failing to immunize your children against schools and culture that wants men to marry men and spread diseases that shorten lifetimes way more than smoking?

Believing miracles are only for the past, or public policy that equates all religions to the extent that the anti-freedom Koran is respected more than the Bible upon which freedom is founded, leaving our children puzzled why we want them to prefer freedom over barbarity, and Heaven's book over Hell's book?

In how many churches can you even learn that elections, as documented in Deuteronomy 1:13, were practiced in Israel until 1 Samuel 8? Or that Jesus de-legitimized dictatorial political systems and replaced them with elected authority where votes are earned by service, such as in the United States today? (Luke 22:25-30)

Not that the traditional doctrine wars of churches ought to be completely vacated. But as Jesus said,

*Matthew 23:23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and **have omitted the weightier matters** of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and **not to leave the other undone.***

I was somewhere around 11 years old when depression began to grow in my life, with the help of my school peers treating me about the way children generally treat each other.

Other people's expectations threw me off balance as I tried to develop expectations of my own. The expectations of adults were usually OK and even helpful, but the expectations of my peers were often unreasonable, unreachable by their mixture with false accusations, and about childish fashions that didn't interest me.

About that same time, I started reading the Bible all the way through, influenced by my grandmother. It was a world free of

depression. A world of impossible goals coupled with promises that we can actually reach them – promises despised and denied by our culture, but so wonderful that once I heard them I became very alert to evidence whether they were true.

A world where good and evil are clearly labeled. A world where my faults are revealed to all, yet where I am welcomed, loved, and respected as much as any king. Yes, even respected – by God! A world where everyone is invited to be a superhero, using powers that make Superman look as weak as a lame worm!

But the promise of limitless potential did not instantly cure me of depression. In fact, I experienced deep depression from about the age of 11 through 21, though I read the Bible through two or three times during that time and believed and trusted it. And even though God on a few occasions gave me a glimpse, sort of a vision, letting me see that the very reality which depressed me was actually perfect and a source of Heaven-grade joy. But those wonderful glimpses gave me little understanding.

After that I began writing a book. Without any explanation, I had the confidence that by the time I reached the end of it I would have all the answers I wanted, to questions I had no idea existed as I began. I would understand the meaning and purpose of life, and it would be wonderful, I was, as it were, promised. By, I understood, God.

Now, half a century later, I am still trying to finish it. Not that I still lack the answers. The answers have flooded in beyond anything I could ever have imagined, giving me much joy. What has delayed me has been two things: first, I have found so many urgent things to write about and publish, related to what people do as a result of misunderstanding our purpose – urgent problems which hurt many people.

In other words, I write a lot about politics.

Second, I have found little interest in what I have discovered, even though the longing to understand these things appears to be fairly universal. The very understanding that most people most want, they most resist when offered by another!

It is also what most people refuse to admit they care about, when offered it.

I am still working on understanding this tragic irony. And I am still struggling to present what I have found in an entertaining

enough format that some will receive it.

Ecclesiastes 1:18 says “For in much wisdom *is* much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.” He must be talking about the grief I experience that now that God has shown me so much, I find so much resistance when I try to share it, even from those who say they are desperate for such answers.

I could understand if people would listen to what I have found and then conclude it is not correct, or helpful. But when people desperate for meaning in life shut their ears to the initial offer of answers, and will not listen to them, and will even persecute those who are too forward in offering them, I have to go back and re-read my own book to understand that, because it is so unbelievable. I am still working on that.

For a while I wondered if the rejection was just something about me. I wondered if only I experience it, while no one else on the planet does. Until I remembered that even God experiences it. God offered Eden to the first humans, the Promised Land to Israel, and Heaven to us – am I repeating myself? – but human enthusiasm for it is pretty tepid.

If acceptance of a perfect presentation of the best dreams come true is that spotty, I shouldn’t take it personally if my own very human presentation of solutions much less important isn’t popular. But still!

*Matthew 10:23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. 24 The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, [“Dung God”] how much more shall they call them of his household?*

Although the answers I have found are validated by the Bible, they are not like anything I have seen theologians write who offer to explain life’s purpose according to the Bible.

The example before me at the moment is a small tract, “The Purpose & Meaning of Life” by Ken Ham. It offers to answer what God did to get us into Heaven despite our sins, but does not explain what purpose of life we will experience in Heaven more

than here, what “sin” really is, why it is contrary to our best interests, and if not, why God would be against something that makes us happy.

Such tracts are typically about the purpose *God* has for us, not the purpose we have for ourselves. I had determined early in my writing, through simple logic, that what will most satisfy *us* is *our* purpose – not what will satisfy someone else, if that is different. If someone else has a purpose for us that is different than what will most satisfy us, then he is our enemy to the extent he imposes that purpose on us, making our own satisfaction less available to us.

But I have found confirmation in Scripture that God even sacrifices *His* own best interests, to help us find what will most satisfy *us*. God loves us, in that sense, even more than human parents who routinely and joyfully sacrifice their own best interests to help their children to, in the words of the Marines slogan, “be all you can be”. Way more than we love ourselves.

The literary vehicle that has evolved from those first pages I wrote 50 years ago, before computers were small enough to fit in homes, is the diary of an angel. The literary device is fiction, and it is funny, but I show you the Scriptures confirming the principles explained.

The diary begins before creation: when Satan rebelled. The angel writes about what went through the minds of Satan and those who followed him, and what happened to them as a natural consequence. It explains that sin is that which does not satisfy, despite the illusion that it does satisfy – a self deception we recognize today as something very much like an “addiction”.

(I don’t call him “Satan” in the book, but “Beelzebub”, a title used in the King James Version seven times. Because, first, it means “Dung God”, also “Lord of the Flies”, which seems so fitting; and second, because the name is funny.)

During the chapter on creation, we learn how starlight from stars billions of years ago managed to reach Earth in four days. We learn how animal consciousness was made differently than human consciousness. Man alone, of all life on earth, was given the power to visualize alternatives to current reality, power to choose whether to prefer them, and power to make them so. Thus man was given the power to choose between better and worse – between good and

evil.

Animals, by contrast, are essentially robots, unable to choose to behave outside their programming. Although amazingly intelligent robots, compared to anything mankind has dreamed of building.

We learn that “evil” is a tool. It is our capacity at work to identify what we wish to change.

On that Seventh Day, the first Day of Rest, God gathers all the angels together and tells the angels stories of what it was like When God Was Alone. Here we learn about the nature of Consciousness, a miracle we actually share with God, but which is not experienced by plants or animals. We learn that there are certain features of consciousness which really could not have been created any other way that can be imagined.

One such feature is the intense concentration it requires to create well, which tempts consciousness to retreat from such labor and accept less than its best.

Another such feature is the horror consciousness feels when half-finished creations turn into nightmares, presenting consciousness with a choice at that point: either buckle down and correct the mistakes and create well, or further retreat, in search of that mythical “oblivion” sought by drunks, which can never exist for consciousness. Because consciousness can’t get very close to it before it returns screaming, from boredom, back to complexity and challenge.

Love – defined in John 15:13 as placing another’s interests over your own – is what rescues consciousness from this seesaw, motivating it to create well no matter the personal cost, because that is what *others* need from us.

We learn from 1 Corinthians 13 that this love is the one thing that does not disappear when we transition from Earth to Heaven. We learn that love feels like happiness and satisfaction. Love *is* happiness and satisfaction.

This analysis of consciousness naturally leads to an understanding of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit “Trinity” within God’s Person, and how that compares to the Heart, Soul, and Strength “trinity” within each of us

Book One concludes with The Fall, a very graphic, very realistic picture of temptation and deception, then and now.

In Book Two, we learn what really hung on the Tree of Life and the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. You WILL NOT BELIEVE where Bible clues lead us on that subject! (Until you read the supporting verses, and maybe not even then.)

The angels observe the amazing balance which humans must achieve between Law and Grace to reach the potential God gave them. We learn the purpose, for ourselves, of God's commandments, we learn several ways humans misuse them, and we learn when they should *not* be applied.

We learn how to apply these principles to human laws also. We even learn how the laws of America are, to an amazing degree, founded on these principles.

Stories of the following 15 centuries before the Flood flesh out how all of this works together with God's promise to work alongside us, helping us reach our dreams. We follow some of Noah's very interesting adventures, court trials, and mission trips.

*We learn that "evil" is a tool. It is our capacity at work to identify what we wish to change. What is good about it is that God gives us the capacity to change as much as we are willing to concentrate on changing.*

Of course this includes our willingness to correctly understand how the thing works that we want to change, so that our clumsy efforts to tinker with reality do not become the evil which others pray Jesus will enable them to change!

This fictional diary "records" several conversations that angels had with God.

I have discovered, quite by accident, that when I explain what I have found from the perspective of an angel, and of God, with lots of Bible backing, mysteries from the past become clear.

Partly because when I present these ideas as if they were in conversation, I am able to portray more of the personality of God as I have come to know Him over my 70 years so far on this perfect planet – this planet, perfectly prepared, not just 6,000 years ago for some abstract "bride of Christ", or for mankind in general, but perfectly prepared and offered to each of us through each and every moment of those 6,000 years, in each and every place on this perfectly prepared planet.

We glimpse the plan God has followed these past 6,000 years to prepare a race of humans willing to choose Heaven, and

unwilling to ever leave. We glimpse how this plan has shaped human history, culminating in nations – America in the lead – which choose to shape their laws and culture increasingly, over the centuries, after the principles of Heaven.

Yet as we approach the close of this era we see Islam, founded on the principles of Hell, the most enduring of pagan barbarity, which controls a quarter of our planet as Revelation 6:8 prophecies, (represented by a horse which is green, the color of Islam, according to several translations) maintaining to the end a clear choice for mankind: Life, or Death. Love, or Hate. Happiness, or Horror. Good, or Evil. God, or Satan. Purpose, or Emptiness.

The fact that human consciousness has proven more inclined to choose such evils over God’s best for us, over the centuries, proves the power God has granted us to choose. It shows how much God has laid on the table for us to choose from. He grants whatever we ask and will work hard for, with little restriction, as Job 1 confirms – God even answers *Satan’s* prayers! Unfortunately, Satan’s prayers to God are bolder than the prayers of us Christians!

This universe God gave us is truly a reality in which we may have whatever we desire. But it is better than having a bottle you can rub and have a Magic Genie give you whatever you wish for, instantly. In this reality, you get to *earn things by your own labor*. You get to share credit with God for what you create – and God delights in sharing the honor with you! Matthew 10:25. And that labor includes the study and concentration it takes to correctly understand what you seek to change, so that when you change it, it will truly and deeply satisfy you – which means among other things that it will be a blessing to others, manifesting your Love.

By presenting all of this on a Wordpress blog, I hope to generate discussion of these truths. I hope you will not only comment on what is right or wrong, but offer specific suggestions how to make this “diary” better – how to edit it.

Thus endeth my sober explanation of what I have tried to accomplish with this book. Now hang on, because now the book is about to begin, which gets crazy real fast.



# Part One: Before Time

## *“The Cause of Hell”*

### Chapter 1

### Beelzebub’s Amazing Choices

BT (Before Time) -- Amazing! I thought the creation of the Host was amazing. My own creation was amazing. Not to mention God’s very existence.

But among these events another has just occurred that demands admittance to the same class, if not to the head of it.

Our great, beautiful, and wise leader has just rebelled against God! How could the paragon of created wisdom do that? Amazing!

We even had to coin a new word to distinguish the kind of “amazing” that applies to what God has done from the kinds of “amazing” that apply to what Beelzebub just did.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 12:24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. (See also Matthew 10:25; 12:27; Mark 3:22; Luke 11:15,18,19)*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *This name for Satan is of Chaldean origin. It means “Dung God”. A slightly altered pronunciation of the title survives in English, in the epithet preferred today by polite Christians as an alternative to “damn”: “Dang”.*

So the word we came up with, to refer to that aspect of “amazing” which was uniquely Beelzebub’s, was “stupid”.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:22 ...without a cause...whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *What word describes Satan’s rebellion? This verse lists things we must not do “without a cause” – without justification. Except that in all English translations, “without a cause” modifies only the first item on the list, and not calling someone a fool which is third. However, the flexibility of Greek word order may permit the clause to modify all three, which avoids a contradiction with 20 verses in the New Testament in which God’s people use this same Greek word to describe men. (Mt 7:26, 23:17,19, 25:2,3,8, Ro 2:20, 1Co 1:18, 20, 21, 23, 25, 27, 2:14, 3:18,19 4:10, Eph 5:4, 2Ti 2:23, and Tit 3:9.)*

*The warning that careless accusation may lead to Hell should be sobering enough to discourage its over-use. But on the other hand, when one's condition really is as serious as this word is, should we speak accurately?*

*To say any less than the truth about sin is to risk the curse of Isaiah 5:20: "Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil..." See also the curse of Ezekiel 3:18-20, which says if we fail to warn a sinner, his sentence will be transferred to us.*

*God put them in our vocabulary for a holy purpose. When we use them for a profane purpose, or conversely when we do not use them when Truth cries for it, the result is disastrous, and we justly risk Hell.*

What makes the new word so appropriate is how much smarter he used to be than we are, compared with which, he now acts like he is in a "stupor". In other words, his intelligence appears to be largely inaccessible to him.

Temporarily, I trust! Just look at him out there, at war with God! Oops, got to go! Firefight!

BT2 – That was a pretty short war! Beelzebub didn't have a chance, of course. What possessed him to try?! What was he trying to accomplish?

Well, at least I *think* the war was short. The attacks *appear* to be over. The Thunder Bombs – sickening low rib-rattling rumblings produced by their six-stringed sound cannons – have died down.

But they are jumping up and down and shouting that *they* have won!

What is all this bad-smelling billowing blackness, above and bounding Beelzebub and his brigades? Until someone comes up with a better name for it, I'm going to call it "smoke". But what causes it?

And the colors! The fire has changed colors! Now, where it surrounds the Fallen, (uh, excuse me: the "winners"), it is orange!

But back to Beelzebub.

Has he really made himself oblivious of the fact that he could not even have *started* his "war" except by God's consent, which was given only long enough for his followers to see their folly, in the hope that would bring them to their senses?

**VerseScout:** *2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.*

It is so illogical that I am left with wild speculation. Did he think he

could *kill* God? And if he did, did he think he could live, himself, without God sustaining him?

Absurd, of course, yet so is every other possibility.

My *concern* is for *all* who left God, who *should* have known better. But my *questions* focus on Beelzebub, because he *really knows* better.

More troublesome than that – and scarier: this had been such a surprise. *Are more surprises possible?*

Of course not. What's wrong with my faith, that I could wonder such a thing even for a moment? Surely this is the first and last time anyone will ever rebel against God! Beelzebub will quickly accept the reconciliation offered by God, and all this will survive only in jokes.

As brief as everyone knows this rebellion will be, the logical puzzle posed by Beelzebub's rebellion still intrigues me.

Maybe he thought he could defeat God, somehow, without killing God. But for what?! Not only cannot I comprehend the wisest of all creatures embarking upon such a *hopeless* mission, but I can't come up with a *motive*.

There is the reason he himself gave me, when he tried to persuade me to join him, but it is equally implausible. He had said his goal was to push himself away, even if only slightly, from God's loving arms, so they weren't wrapped so tightly around him, "smothering" him, so he could have just a little "freedom".

"Just a little", he had emphasized, though whatever significance that had floated over my head.

"Freedom!" What an amazing – or rather – no, we'll just leave it at "amazing" – use he makes of that wonderful word! By it, he doesn't mean maximum opportunity to worship, love, obey, and learn from God! He doesn't mean the adventure of partnering with God in imagining a better, more interesting reality, and then proceeding by God's authority to make it so!

I've been struggling to grasp what he does mean by the word. I almost think he wants "freedom" *from* the Adventure we call "life". "Freedom", even, from sharing the power of God!

He talked about how we are *distinct* from one another. Well, technically, I suppose, you could say we are, just as the individual lovations that comprise our bodies are distinct from one another. So far so good, I suppose.

But then he made an "*amazing*" leap from that premise. He said it made more sense, therefore, to work to satisfy our own "selves", as he called us, than to sacrifice our "individual desires", as he called them, on the "altar" of love of neighbor.

I had tried to get out of him how our “individual desires” could possibly differ from the needs of the entire Body of our Angelic Host, of which we individual angels are but parts, like the individual lovatons of our individual bodies.

He said something about it being more relaxing, or comfortable, to not have to think beyond the immediate needs of our “selves”. He said it takes mental effort, which causes “stress”, as he called it (he likes that new word especially), to create good things, because creating is a team effort that requires us to think about what will serve others along with what will serve ourselves. Success also requires paying attention to God’s advice, which would better be spent on one’s “self”, he told us.

I had said, “But if we forget blessing others, why, we would have to forget love!”

He had answered cryptically, “That’s the point! Love *of others* is not in our best interests! Love *of others* is *contrary* to our own interests! That is why we must oppose it.”

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 109:4 For my love they are my adversaries: [or, “they hate me for loving them!”] but I give myself unto prayer. 5 And they have rewarded me evil for good, and hatred for my love.*

He concluded, “A truly logical being will become a lover *of his own self!*”

I would have expected a “truly logical being” to notice that “Love of self” is an oxymoron, since “love” only has a clear meaning when focused *outside* one’s “self”, to use his term.

**VerseScout:** *John 15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

Beelzebub even made a new word for the attitude he thought proper for an angel: “self-ish”.

But even if one wanted to be self-ish, how *‘amazing’* it is to stop wanting to help others! What about all our luxuries that we have because we help each other? Our cooperation is what makes technology possible.

But the greatest luxury of all is Love itself! Love *feels* like happiness. Love *is* happiness.

I tried to decipher Beelzebub’s strange sayings, and the strange contortions of his face into completely unfamiliar shapes, requiring the use of twice as many facial muscles, if possible suggesting that he was not full of joy. But what else is there is to feel?

After watching Beelzebub, I didn't have much desire to find out.

Beyond that problem, I couldn't figure out how anyone could *want* to deny himself the ecstasy, the full life, the sense of worth, the adventure, and the sheer happiness of doing wonderful things for others – being wonderfully useful – alongside God. Since that is much of what there is to live for, what purpose would remain if we “loved” only ourselves?!

At my horror of the consequences his path would bring upon our Body, he insisted our Body would become far stronger if each part of it were under pressure to struggle “as if its life depended on it.” The process would weed out the weak members, he maintained, leaving only the strongest. “Survival of the fittest”, he termed it.

Well, in the first place, there was never a threat to anyone's survival before Beelzebub invented “self-ishness”. But now smell the stench of death all around, especially pungent nearest Beelzebub himself! Especially when he raises his arms, or opens his mouth.

***VerseScout:** Romans 7:9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** The Bible frequently uses words like “death” to describe a spiritual stupor while the body remains physically alive.*

Beelzebub talked as if we need the incentive of sheer survival to stretch our minds. He talked as if mere survival has greater power to motivate us to our capacity than love!

That doesn't appear to be true for Beelzebub or his screaming spiritual scions! They all have lost most of their strength, and most, their ability to reason. None have reduced their “stress”, or increased the peace they now claim! Quite the contrary!

***VerseScout:** Jeremiah 6:14 They have healed also the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, [God's Word translation: They treat my people's wounds as though they were not serious] saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.]*

Beelzebub says / am so constituted that I would become stronger if I were motivated by a threat to my very survival, rather than “merely” by love.

How is that even logically possible? Let me diagram this idea:

1. “Strong” means able to do great things.
2. One becomes “strong” the more one cares about doing great things.
3. Love means caring about others even more than yourself.

Therefore,

4. Caring only about yourself inspires less caring than love.

5. Therefore, Love makes one stronger than Selfishness does.

I thought of the amazing things our Body is able to accomplish because each member, sustained and protected by the others, is free to wholly concentrate on the skill God gave only him. If even a few of our members were lost, their irreplaceable skills would seriously weaken, not strengthen, our Body. What is Beelzebub thinking?

God just says to keep watching and praying, because events will unfold very rapidly which will answer our questions. I saw a strange expression on God's face, too, that I had never seen.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 18:10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *although no man can see God's face, and live, Exodus 33:20, angels can.*

There is something moving on His face that reflects rays eerily. We are learning a new word for what God is doing. It is called "crying".

**VerseScout:** *John 11:35 Jesus wept.*

*Ezekiel 9:4 And the LORD said unto him, ...set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations...5 And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: 6 ...but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; ....*

*Matthew 5:48 Be ye therefore perfect, [complete, mature] even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Shed tears for the lost appears to be an entrance requirement for Heaven. It is definitely a Godly quality – a mark of spiritual maturity. Jesus said to the extent we are spiritually mature, we share the qualities of God. God must, therefore, shed tears over our sins. John 11:35 confirms God's capacity for crying.*

If the purpose of Beelzebub's "war" was not to actually *defeat* God, was it to persuade as many of our brothers as he could to join him in defeat? We are amazed that even one, let alone so many, would choose to "succeed" in such pathetic failure.

And now a new thing has occurred. Beelzebub, along with all who joined him and who were, of course, defeated with him, are producing loud, awful sounds with their throats. It is absolutely the worst singing I

have ever heard.

I'm going to go over and ask what's gotten into them.

BT3 – “Hi, Smokey! I have to ask about your singing. I know you know how to sing in tune, and sing beautifully. But I have never heard anything so off-key as now. It doesn't express your joy at all. Is it some new style?”

By the time my question was out, several of Smokey's friends had surrounded us. Their faces showed muscle contortions like I had seen before on Beelzebub, although less extreme. But with another difference that suggested to my mind the message “you are not welcome!”

What was wrong with my brain, I wondered, that it would suggest such a possibility, so foreign to the joy of fellowship which is the perpetual experience of every angel?

Stinky spoke. “We have no joy.”

You could have knocked me over with a Thunder Bomb. How could such a thing be possible? What else is there to feel?

“Oh, I get it”, I laughed. “You're kidding. You were always a great kidder, Stinky. But this time you've outdone yourself! You sure had me going there for a bit!”

“No one is kidding” a voice said.

I looked around at the growing sea of faces, all staring at me, all bearing those contortions processed by my reeling brain as “Leave us!”

“That is not possible” I offered as a question disguised as a declaration.

Smokey said “Not only have we no joy, we feel the opposite. Get used to this new word, because if we have anything to do with it, it is coming your way: ‘pain’. Another great new word: ‘suffering’.”

Though I had never heard such words, the sound of them made me shudder. In fact, the words made me feel what my suffering friends felt.

“Our sounds do not express our joy, Bozo, because we have no joy. They express our pain and suffering. We do not call them ‘singing’. We call them ‘screaming’.”

I was cheered for an instant by being called ‘Bozo’, an allusion to happier times when we did a lot of clowning around together. Except that the title this time was awarded in a spirit quiet alien to happiness.

“But what could possibly account for such a terrible phenomenon as ‘pain’?” I asked. “What can possibly cause ‘suffering’?”

The contortions morphed into what my brain processed as another new thing to feel: *disgust*. A slow, grinding voice answered, “As if you

didn't know, it is caused by all this fire that we are in."

I doubled over, laughing. Then I knew they were pulling my leg! And what a good one this had been!

Thick dark smoke came out of their ears, becoming so thick I could see no one. Uncertain whether they were even still there, I lifted off and returned home.

**VerseScout:** *Luke 16:23 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, Son,... 26 ... between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; ...*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The impassable barrier does not prevent clear communication. It does not prevent kindness – such as Abraham calling the man “son”. It does not prevent instruction, or truth.*

*But it does prevent any interference with the infliction, upon those in Hell, of what they had done to others.*

*In the rest of Abraham's answer, he reminds the formerly rich man that what he is experiencing now is exactly what Lazarus had suffered before.*

BT4 – They've been making those terrible sounds too long for it to be a joke. My friend Joy observed, “Even if their claims began as a joke, the tension of their throats, proved by the strained tone of their singing, surely causes such stress to their vocal chords as to be a source of pain by itself.”

We flew before God to ask for understanding, but we couldn't catch God's eye. It was as if the strange substance in God's eyes was obstructing His peripheral vision. That is impossible, of course, since God sees everywhere without the requirement of peripheral vision, or of eyes. But God likes to teach us with images.

God certainly knew we were before Him, and knew what we wanted. And yet God's *appearance* was that of preoccupation with walking among our rebellious brothers, knocking on the doors of hearts and waiting for any door to open, while continuing to “cry”.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 3:20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.*

I wondered if God's appearance of preoccupation, to the point of inattention to us, was possibly His actual answer to our question. Possibly He was modeling a more appropriate response from ourselves. But we



didn't understand.

We glanced over at God's workshop, where He was working on future solutions. The substance flowing out of His eyes are being collected there, into a ball of the substance hovering above God's workbench. What is God making? Will it, whatever it is, restore our fallen brothers?

We walked away, disturbed, yet intrigued.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 14:9..If any man worship the beast... 10 The same...shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:*

*John 19:34 But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.*

*Ecclesiastes 1:18 For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Contrary to the popular theology that Hell will be separation from God, Hell's occupants are "in the presence of the Lamb". Together with Ezekiel 9:4-6, the passages indicate sin will grieve God in Eternity. This is confirmed by the fact that grief is a partner with wisdom.*

*Apparently it was God's grief for our sins, more than the physical torments, that killed Jesus on the Cross. That is proved by the blood mixed with water from the soldier's spear which John was able to observe even from a distance, (John 19:34), according to "The Physical Cause of the Death of Christ", written in 1871 by Dr. W. Stroud (available as a free ebook online).*

My good friend Joy asked, "A few of us are forming an expedition to try to determine what happened, and what we can do. We need a good scribe to record our observations, and the close friendship you used to have with Beelzebub is legendary. Maybe he will talk to you. There may come a time when that contact will become invaluable. Want to come along?"

"Absolutely!"

Instantly I was with the expedition, led by Brainy.

*[Editor's note: This occurred before Time, so everything happened instantly. Also, everything took forever.]*

Slimey was the first we met upon our descent. I was glad to see him. He was my co-star in one of our first movies. He sang lead in two of our hit songs. How I long for a reprise! Except that now he is *so* far out of tune!

"Slimey, old friend! What a happy surprise to see you again!"

"Same to you, Comunicus! Say, isn't this a lot of weather we're having?"

"There certainly is a lot of it", I agreed.

“More than ever. This may be a record”, he pointed out.

Although Slimey was way out of tune, at least he didn’t have any of the contortions on his face I had seen with Smokey and his friends. But there was something subtle around his eyes. So subtle that I could not be sure of it. Something suggesting a loose connection between his thoughts and his words.

“I see you brought the neighborhood”, he said. “Are you on an expedition?”

Joy answered. “Yes. We have heard claims that Beelzebub’s followers are experiencing something called ‘pain’. We have come to try to understand and find a way to help. It was said that the cause of pain is fire. Crazy, huh?”

Slimey laughed as if delighted with the opportunity to be of service, but it was a strange laugh. “What good fortune that you have met me now!” Fortune? Our steps are ordered by fortune, now, and not by God?

*VerseScout: Psalms 37:23 The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD: and he delighteth in his way.*

“I see you are headed that way”, he said, pointing in the direction we were facing. “If you will just go this way,” he said, pointing in another direction, “it just so happens a delegation from Beelzebub is meeting there to prepare an appeal to Gabriel about our suffering. I know they will be glad for your feedback in preparing their petition.”

We thanked Slimey profusely for his advice, and headed off the second way. When we had gone far enough that Slimey was nearly out of sight, I turned back to him to smile and wave. Slimey was still smiling, but it was a very different smile. I hadn’t seen such a smile since the beginning of the firefight.

Just then my ears imploded and I was knocked off my feet with the rest of our party. My brain turned off.

When it was on again, I realized we had been hit with a Thunder Bomb. We had been led right into a trap. We heard laughter in the distance: hard, strained, joyless laughter. And words, such as “Does that help you understand ‘pain’?”

Yes, it did. Only briefly, of course, since healing begins instantly. But then a very great pain began, which would not heal. The pain of realization that Slimey, and his friends, had done things I never imagined any angel could ever do.

They wanted to *hurt* us. What could possibly motivate a soul to

hurt another? Suddenly I understood the “crying” we had seen in God. We cried, loudly. The substance we had seen coming from God’s eyes, we felt stinging our own.

Since it came from the feeling of our hearts being, as it were, torn, we called it “tears”.

Hurting us had made them happy, though a sad kind of “happy”. No happiness we ever wanted: a dark, terrifying happiness, which they thought distracted them from their “pain”.

What could possibly motivate a soul to find pleasure in another’s pain?

None of the wisdom God had given me, nor any experience of any angel recorded in any of my diaries, had prepared me to understand such a tragic mystery.

Slimey had intentionally *deceived* us. I had never even heard of the word “deceive” before, but it entered my mind just as I needed a word to describe this entirely new experience. Slimey “lied”. How the rules for relationships have changed!

Before the Fall it never occurred to anyone to deliberately say something that is not true. How can anyone *want* to be out of touch with reality? And since God has created us to depend on each other, as well as upon God directly, for understanding of reality, how is it possible to deceive another without it leading to deception of one’s self?

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 12:14 For the body itself is not made up of only one part, but of many parts....17 If the whole body were just an eye, how could it hear? ....26 If one part of the body suffers, all the other parts suffer with it; ...27 All of you are Christ's body, and each one is a part of it. [GNB]*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *A lie, told by one soul to deceive another, is as harmful to the Body into which God wants to unite us as a finger which could send signals to the brain to deceive the brain about what the finger is feeling. It misdirects the brain, and thereby the whole body, towards actions which may unintentionally destroy even the finger.*

Slimey wasn’t “ashamed”. He had no sense of having done something to be regretted.

To the contrary, he seemed very pleased that his deception had succeeded. His contorted face expressed the idea that he actually considered his successful deception of us a proof of his intelligence.

The Fallen now surrounding him praised it as evidence of Slimey’s greatness! They were making speeches honoring his deed and pledging to follow him in future plots!

Will we ever understand such amazing logic? Is it possible to

understand?

The laughter around us was peppered with “Lookit those little crybabies! One Thunder Bomb and they turn into waterfalls!”

Of course, by then we were completely healed, physically; our crying was for the suffering they were causing themselves. They figured that out, eventually, when our wailing increased as our understanding of them increased, rather than decreasing as we were physically healed.

We figured out that they figured that out, because their taunts shifted from laughter at us crying for ourselves, to “angry” complaints that we cried for them. (What horrible new words we were learning! “Angry”! “Complaints”! “Horrible”!)

They “growled”, “They are judging us!”

“Judging, judging, judging!”

This complaint puzzles me. First, because I can’t be sure what we are doing which is described by this word, and second, because if it is any of the things I would guess, I don’t know how it could draw a complaint.

Slimey’s companions use the word as if their complaint is that we think, and that we care.

We think about their suffering. We try to understand it. We try to see if there is anything they are doing that is causing it, so we can help stop it.

And we care. We care that they suffer. We don’t want them to suffer.

“Judging”, they call this.

But they *want* us to know how much they suffer!

They *want* us to be troubled by how much they suffer!

So why do they hate us for doing what they want us to do? Why do they call it “judging”?

I think what we are doing “wrong” is that we are not blaming God.

They want us to understand how much their pain is *God’s* fault. They *don’t* want any help from us stopping it, if any part of our help is to show them how they can end it by changing something they think or that they do, like resist God.

They have a word for that: “Criticizing, criticizing, criticizing! You aren’t so perfect yourself, that you can come and tell me my faults!”

Well, no, we aren’t perfect, which is exactly why we normally *welcome* each other’s help correcting our failures to achieve what we want.

*VerseScout: Proverbs 9:8 Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee: rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee.*

*Proverbs 15:10 Correction is grievous unto him that forsaketh the way:  
and he that hateth reproof shall die.*

“Why don’t you accept us as we are?”

“You are full of ‘hate’.”

“You are ‘intolerant’.”

“Hate, hate, hate.”

“We have a right to believe whatever we want.”

When we tried to show them evidence that the terrible things they believe are not true, they answered, “When truth isn’t what we choose to believe, then evidence is irrelevant. Duh!”

Joy struggled to grasp what he now described, as we recapped our expedition: “Not only do they complain about us, but also about God! They tell us ‘If God is a god of Love, why is He making us suffer?’ I can’t imagine which of God’s loving actions they are blaming for their suffering!”

I joined in, “Nor can I! God is pouring out more love upon them than all our love put together!”

But the facts could not be denied.

## Chapter 2

### Friendly Fire

BT5 – Joy suggested “Gentlemen, I think we should seriously grapple with this claim they make that an angel can be ‘burned’ by fire, making fire a source of pain. Can such a thing be literally possible?”

What an offering of laughter we made to God! I doubted whether Joy would ever be taken seriously again!

“When Heaven burns up”, joked Sarcamson. Ha!

“Because life is killing us”, added Smarty. Ha, ha!

“Love is the source of hate, and pleasure is the source of pain!” roared Ditsy. Ha, ha, ha!

That summed up the logic we are dealing with. When we swim in fire as our natural medium, when God *is* fire, when there is no place *besides* God, and when we exist in Him, *how can fire cause pain?!*

Or, if fire causes pain, *how come we never noticed before?!*

**VerseScout:** *John 3:20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. 21 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Light, truth, challenges, God’s presence, and indeed life itself, are not always comfortable for those who love God, but we learn to love it and do not associate it with pain, as they do who hate it. The difference is not our experience, but our response, and its interaction with our response.*

Lots of laughter. Lots of discussion. No answers.

And for some reason, God was still not ready to explain.

As I walked past God’s Workshop, underneath the hovering ball of “tears” as we now call them, growing on God’s Workbench were two lovely decorations. I don’t know a good way to describe them. They were complex, beautiful, and covered with small flat green things. Growing on one of them was books. Dripping from the other was something red. As I stood in awe, trying to imagine what they were or what use they might serve, I noticed some blueprints of the devices beside them on the workbench. I strained to read the title on the blueprints. I think it said

“The Two Trees”, whatever “trees” are.

BT6 – We have noticed Darkness in the fallen angels. No angel has ever actually seen Darkness before, not even from very close. We have theorized that tiny spots of it exist in all of us on occasion, but that the Consuming Fire of God “burns” them long before they are visible.

So how did these spots get so big?

BT7 – What a theory!

It was the topic of a luncheon to which Joy invited me.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 18:1 And the LORD appeared unto him [Abraham] in the plains of Mamre: and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day; 2 And he lift up his eyes and looked, and, lo, three men stood by him: ... 8 And he took butter, and milk, and the calf which he had dressed, and set it before them; and he stood by them under the tree, and they did eat. (The next chapter indicates two of the men were angels.)*

*Psalms 78:25 Man did eat angels' food: he sent them meat to the full. [Referring to the 40 years of manna in the desert, Exodus 16:15.]*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *This doesn't prove that angels routinely eat, but it indicates they at least can. Although in Judges 13:16, an angel refuses to eat. If manna was literally “angels' food”, then humans can eat angels' food as surely as angels can eat human food. Perhaps they also enjoy many other bodily pleasures, as we do.*

“Do I have this right?” I asked. “Are you saying our lost brothers' desire to have ‘space’ between themselves and God, because *they actually do not love God's fiery Love*, is a wish, or prayer, *that God has granted?!*”

**VerseScout:** *John 3:19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Consider the similarity between light and fire, viewed scientifically. Fire produces light. Light produces heat. We feel light's heat, the brighter it is, such as in sunlight. Every source of light as well as of fire suffers loss as material is consumed. Electricity shares these properties. And yet our experience of the three is quite distinct.*

*Statements about light in the Bible, such as the one here, are assumed to be metaphors; that is, it is not literal light which is hate. But evidence and truth expose lies and comfortable delusions, pressuring people to get better in touch with reality, a direction in which human nature is not naturally inclined. Similarly, light exposes objects in our path, pressuring us to step around them before we collide. This makes light as useful a metaphor of truth as it is familiar.*

*But there are many who actually hate literal light. They prefer the night. They move in darkness.*

“Yes”, answered Smarty in his rolling, golden voice. “I think God has allowed their wills to create a barrier between them and us, to protect them from any Love overwhelming enough to crush their wills.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 16:26 ....between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.*

*Psalm 81:11 But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. 12 So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Bible says the “great gulf” blocked any effort to “quench” the flame, as Mark 9:43-48 puts it. But conversely, could the gulf be also the choice, of the lost, to keep out too much Light? When people want God gone, God honors their choice.*

“Not just our love, but even God’s Own Love”, Joy said.

“In this peculiar scenario,” Joy continued, “God restrains His nature, which is to shine the Light of His Fire on the darkness of resistance, ‘consuming’ all resistance as fire consumes its fuel.

“God does not *entirely* abandon them, but He does allow their darkness to grow, since that is what they fervently desire, and because they love it so much.

“The larger it grows, the greater the amount of heat that is produced when the darkness reaches the limits God has set.”

“*Heat?*” I asked, when Joy had no more to say, as if his explanation were finished. “How does *heat* enter into the theory? Does *heat* have something to do with the pain they allege?”

Joy answered, “The theory is that the same heat which keeps us warm and comfortable, if too intense, can cause pain!”

I raised my eyebrows.

“Our theory fits some of the statements we recorded of our lost brothers.

## **Dialog with the Damned**

“Remember Stinky? He told Brainy, ‘How could a God of Love allow so much evil in Creation?’”

I held up my hand in a “stop” gesture. “I need to process this. And by ‘evil’, he meant – ?”

“‘All this painful fire’, he answered us when we asked him the



same question.”

“So, fire being Love, Stinky was demanding how a God of Love *could allow so much love* in Creation?”

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 12:5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. 9 Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? 10 For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. 11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. 12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; ....28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear: 29 For our God is a consuming fire.*

“Yes, but Stinky will no longer acknowledge that God’s Fire is Love. He insists it is a source only of pain, which he calls ‘evil’.”

“And he experiences love as ‘pain’ to the extent he resists it?”

“Yes. He blames God not only for his own personal suffering, but for the suffering he now sees all around him.

“He blames God for the suffering each soul brings upon himself directly.

“He blames God for the suffering which his friends deliberately cause each other since The War.

“He blames God for allowing him and his friends the power to hurt each other.”

Of course God doesn’t limit how much we can *Choose* to hurt each. God only limits how much we can *act* on our choice. He doesn’t let anyone really destroy anyone.

**VerseScout:** *Job 1:6 Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them. 8 And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? 9 Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? 10 Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his*

house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. 11 But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. 12 And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** God even answers Satan's prayers, though limited to what He can turn into a blessing for Job. A related discussion throughout the book of Job was how many wicked people God allows to become rich and powerful. God allows all of us free will to choose any goal we want, and considerable though limited power to reach it. The fact that God's respect for our choices is so great that He even indulges Satan, is an assurance of how willing God is to answer our prayers as we walk with Him!

Squeaky piped up. "And it isn't just suffering, that they call 'evil'. When I asked Dirtsy what *he* meant by 'all the evil in creation', he told me 'Life is hard!'"

I said, "so you mean mere difficulty – the very challenges God gives us to fill our lives with activity and meaning – the goals whose very difficulty makes them interesting, adventurous, and exciting as we near them – Dirtsy now calls *evil*?"

**VerseScout:** Matthew 25:20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, ... behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** It is exciting to succeed – to double one's capacity – to accomplish more than we thought possible, or at least that we were sure we could.

The fact that Jesus used this familiar story of human relationships to illustrate the nature of the Kingdom of God indicates several characteristics of consciousness which we share with the inhabitants of Heaven. Notice how the capacity of consciousness grows. The more faithfully we take care of small responsibilities, the greater responsibilities we will be given, by God as well as by men.

"The same. Right. Challenges are now 'evil'.

"Of course, life's challenges have become much greater for them since The War, now that they no longer accept God's help solving them!"

"Amen, brother! They do the opposite of what God advises, and then blame God when their 'solutions' create more problems!"

"That's like one of the messages delivered by the Thunder Bombs",

Squeaky reminded us. He really didn't have to sing it. But he did.

“I feel so right doing wrong;

“I feel so wrong doing right;

“What kills me makes me feel alive.”

After we finished laughing at how well Squeaky's scratchy voice represented the distortion of the Thunder Bombs, we learned he wasn't done.

“Then there was ‘It can't be wrong, ‘cause it feels so right.’”

*[Translator's note: these very same words were handed down over the millennia until they were copied into the 1977 song, “You Light Up My Life” by Debbie Boone, the Gospel singer and daughter of gospel singer Pat Boone; also, the 1978 song “Falling in Love” by Freda Payne, and the 2014 songs “Counting Stars” by Ryan Tedder, “Dumb” by Redrama, and “Down in a Hole” by Uncle Tony.]*

Joy continued as quickly as he could: “A few of us have postulated this theory in the form of a general principle:

*“The greater the resistance to love, the greater the painful heat caused by the friction of resistance.”*

Brainy took up the thread. “The theory explains why this phenomena has never before been observed: no angel has ever before deliberately resisted God's love. Thus the heat we have experienced, produced by the flickering flame which God perpetually conducts within us, has never before been uncomfortable, but has only produced warmth such as what we experience at the sight of a heart opening a little wider than before, which ‘warms our heart’, as we say.”

Joy added, “A corollary is that with them, their resistance is so stubborn, and so ongoing, that if God's Fire gave their Darkness any rest, it would grow and swallow them up in the infinite despair of utter meaninglessness!”

I thought of my own questions about the reason for my existence: how does my existence benefit God? And how does my love benefit me?

**VerseScout:** *Job 35:3 For thou saidst, What advantage will it be unto thee? and, What profit shall I have, if I be cleansed from my sin?*

*Job 35:4 I will answer thee, ...6 If thou sinnest, what doest thou against him? ...7 If thou be righteous, what givest thou him? or what receiveth he of thine hand? 8 Thy wickedness may hurt a man as thou art; and thy righteousness may profit the son of man.*

When such questions occur to me I simply turn to the answers God has given me, and my soul overflows with gratitude.

But I can see how, for hearts too hard to contemplate God's answers, such questions could become so very dark as to be worse than

any bodily suffering.

I can see how, in fact, suffering could become a blessing to them, because it forces the mind away from that rebellion-darkened black hole. It at least lifts the mind to contemplate Right and Wrong, even though, turned from God, they think the very suffering which is their salvation is “wrong”.

“But for us,” Joy continued, “when a dark spot suddenly grows due to our spiritual carelessness, God can safely heal our darkness gradually, with a gentle warm comfortable fire, when unrestrained fire would be too intense, causing us pain.”

**VerseScout:** *Mark 9:47-50 ...Hell fire: Where...the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire,...have salt in yourselves...*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “Quenched” means to put out a fire, for example by throwing water on the fuel, before the fire has finished consuming its fuel.

*The only difference Jesus identifies, between the “fire” we all experience and the fire in Hell, is not in its nature but in its duration, or intensity.*

*Fire, light, and rebuke are frequently used Biblical metaphors for the same process of cleansing sin. The evil fight it; the saints “come to” it willingly, (John 3:21). Outside Hell, the fire is restrained while sin remains. This restraint has for its purpose making it “bearable”, according to 1 Corinthians 10:13.*

“Oh, I think I know what you’re talking about”, I said. “You mean the wonderful tingling in our spines we feel when we see a heart facing a choice between serving self, or loving another, and chooses love.”

“Right”, Joy confirmed. “The very thrill that Beelzebub makes fun of!”

We laughed at the thought. The very “crying” which draws us to our most popular sound/light shows, which we watch over and over so we can cry again and again, Beelzebub mocks as “sentimental”!

But now, the theory goes, this very pleasure, in too strong a dose, can cause pain? Or is it that this pleasure, if *resisted*, can cause pain?

I asked the two, “I almost have this thing into a movie formula which will always make viewers cry. Tell me if I’m right. It seems like the story has to show someone whose heart has closed itself a little. Then the story must show the influence of Love on this heart, until the heart opens so wide to Love that it not only receives love, but gives. That’s when our hearts overflow with gratitude, more for the closed heart now open, than for hearts which were never closed.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if*

*he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.*

“That’s when we all ‘cry’. Is that it?”

“That comes pretty close”, Brainy said. “A variation is when a heart is humble enough to realize that he does not deserve kindness, and so does not expect it, feeling lonely and sorrowful. Then when he realizes he is loved more than he could imagine, he cries in joyful gratitude, and we cry with him.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 7:44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head... 47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Of course, the best kind of thanksgiving is crying.*

*The woman was painfully aware of her need for forgiveness, so when she sensed it, she was moved to tears of gratitude for her relief. (Continued in Appendix C, The Forgiven Woman)*

Joy clarified, “It isn’t the mere evidence that we are loved more than we deserve that makes us cry, but the *choice* we finally make to *believe* that evidence. Not believing evidence that one is loved, but crying because we imagine we are hated, we call ‘tragedy’.

Brainy interjected, “The point when one finally believes the evidence is always unpredictable. Entire stories wait for that moment, hopeful, but never certain when it will come, because the choice is not directly related to any evidence. But when love finds some creative new way to express itself, which usually requires significant cost, and the one loved finally breaks down and receives it, we cry. Because it reminds us of how long we ourselves resisted, and how much creativity love took, before love finally got through to us.”

Joy pointed out, “Of course that is not just a formula for sound/light shows. It is the story of our souls. It is the magic we wait for in one another, that makes Love so rewarding.”

“Right. Of course, nothing like the crying we have seen in God

lately”, noted Squeaky.

Joy added, “The crying we experience during these stories is an expression of pure happiness. It is an expression of surprise at the power of Love to open a heart, and also at the willingness of Love to pay the cost necessary. Though we see it every day, its power always surprises us.”

I searched my memories of conversations with Beelzebub before The War. “Does Beelzebub remember that there is something very wonderful about choice?” I wondered. “Does he appreciate the choice God gave him? It is one’s *choice* to love that moves us, even more than love that became habit long after the choice.”

I prayed, “God, why is it so hard to persuade our family to not choose Hell? Help me understand. Help me find better words.”

Thoughtful joined the discussion. “As long as we are analyzing movie formulas, let’s not overlook what happens to the closed heart *before* it opens.

“The tighter a heart closes, the more destructive it becomes to all around, motivating all around to put pressure on him to open. So the plot shows how different angels do that. There are many wise words that took much labor to assemble. There is love, gentleness, and firmness. Some take action to limit the damage, involving various ways to limit the freedom to hurt.

“When others try to ‘quench’ the pressure – to ease the pressure before it can finish opening the closed heart – the plot shows the closed heart either softening in response, or ‘taking advantage’ of the mercy, hardening more, and destroying more. When the latter, those around take note and guard against more ‘quenching’, which they also call ‘enabling’.

“But when, brokenhearted, the heart is sorry, hurt more by the interruption of fellowship than by the interruption of freedom, and indeed suffers the pressure without resistance, admitting that the pressure is fully deserved, the pressure can finally be ‘quenched’, and correction reduced to a relatively comfortable level sealed with hugs and handshakes.”

BT8 - Halfway through breakfast, the fax line came to life. I laid down my newspaper and picked up the printout to read as I finished eating.

**VerseScout:** \_\_\_\_\_

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Unfortunately the Bible does not mention fax machines, so we cannot corroborate whether angels have them.*

However, it would seem simpleminded to assume angels are incapable of the technology which we exalted humans have invented. If they do not have fax machines, it surely is not because their technology is not that advanced, but rather that their technology, or natural abilities, render them antiquated.

But if we may define “technology” as “manipulation of physical resources by wisdom”, then it is safe to assume that angels have “technology”.

**“Report from the Front Line.**

**“From our sample of 12,477,324,558,122 test subjects in whom darkness is measurable, we calculate an 81% correlation between increase in darkness and reduction of “sense of purpose”, and a 67% correlation between decrease in darkness through the cleansing of God’s Love, and a slight increase of a sense of something for which to live, accompanied by a 200% increase in complaints about ‘fire’.”**

**VerseScout:** Genesis 6:3 **...My spirit shall not always strive with man....**

Romans 1:24 Wherefore **God also gave them up to uncleanness** through the lusts of their own hearts, ....26 For this cause **God gave them up unto vile affections:** ...27 ...the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; ... and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. 28 **...God gave them over to a reprobate mind, ...**

Romans 2:4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing **that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?**

1 Corinthians 5:5 [you should] **deliver such an one unto Satan** for the destruction of the flesh, **that the spirit may be saved** in the day of the Lord Jesus.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** God does not always strive with those who reject Him, Genesis 6:3, but rather, God will allow rebels to turn away from Him, Romans 1:24-32, in order to learn for themselves what His absence feels like, in the hope they will eventually repent, Romans 2:4. In fact, turning someone over to Satan is even a strategy God wants us to use to restore that person to Him! 1 Corinthians 5:5.

BT9 – “Excerpt from Minutes of Meeting #379, taken by Comunicus, Recording Secretary.

“Meeting #379 was called to order...

“A Realogram of Stinky and Dirtsy was shown, while the Host enjoyed popcorn prepared by the Littlest Angels Quilting Champions, Post #5,665.

“One highlight was an exchange between Stinky and Dirtsy:

“I want those do-gooders to stop annoying me with

facts. My mind is already made up.”

“Exactly! I am not so insecure in my faith, that mere *evidence* can change what I believe!”

“I don’t agree with God having any right to offend me with truth that I can’t refute. I have a right to my own religion, and God has a right to His. My faith is who I am. God needs to love me just the way I am. ”

“Just so! And if I choose to believe God does not exist, God needs to respect that and stop existing!”

“Brainy observed that from this exchange we see that the *Beloved Darkness* theory has grown into the *Darkness is Me* theory: *love* of darkness is so great that their souls *identify* with darkness! They concentrate so hard on ‘discovering’ who they are, starting from the premise that God’s explanation must be wrong, that their imaginations construct an image of themselves that is completely out of touch with reality. They are so obsessed with what they want that they miss their true source of meaning, which of course is the diversion of their attention from serving themselves to serving others in love.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 16:25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*

“More from the Realogram:

“We can’t let God destroy who we are with all this truth business! Truth has to be stopped!”

“And we used to think God is a God of Love! And lookit, He keeps telling us the Truth!”

“Exactly! God certainly doesn’t love me just the way I am, when He keeps trying to destroy who I am with all this reality!”

“And on top of that, making us suffer like this from the stress of having to censor all this proof!”

“All this suffering in creation proves that either God has lost control, so that He no longer meets the definition of ‘God’, or God is *not* a God of Love, to allow all this suffering!”

“I believe both: everything is God’s fault, and there is no God.”



“The *Paranoid Stress* theory came out of the Realogram discussion: the foolish belief that one’s very soul is consumed by God’s fires of correction, and that suffering is not a blessing, because it causes physical pain.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Peter 1:6-7 “...ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: that the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ”.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Even for the saints, trial of faith, by fire, can be difficult. Yet it is a blessing.*

“If we should regard God’s showering of fire upon the saints as a blessing, how can we not regard God’s same fire upon the wicked as likewise a blessing?

“First, Paranoid Stress causes a state of mind which imagines terrible calamity and pain despite contrary evidence. “Second, it generates a stress-caused breakdown in the efficient functioning of the body, which increasingly causes genuine physical pain.”

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 31:10 For my life is spent with grief, and my years with sighing: my strength faileth because of mine iniquity, and my bones are consumed.*

*Proverbs 17:22 A merry heart doeth good like a medicine: but a broken spirit drieth the bones. (See also Proverbs 3:7-8, Philemon 7)*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Many such passages support the medical common knowledge that mental states affect physical health. But these passages go farther, suggesting physical pain is more directly related to mental pain than to physical disease; as if the first consequence of mental pain is pain as deep as anything physical, and THEN comes physical disease, almost as an afterthought.*

BT10 – A clarification about the nature of fire is forming in my mind as I am finishing cleaning out my mindmail. At the risk of wasting time by stating the obvious, I need to stop and add it to my diary notes before I forget it. Sometimes when brainstorming great problems, we need to double check even their plainest elements for some detail we may have missed.

Although our response to fire – the way it makes us feel – is vaguely like some mere chemical reaction or electrical flow producing the warmth of joy when unresisted, and pain when resisted, the fire itself is

anything but some uniform flow of homogeneous energy like the electricity that feeds my floor lights. It is more like the electrical signals that feed my fax machine and mindmail; it transmits extremely intelligent, sophisticated information. But even that analogy vastly understates the complexity of the fire which is the nature of God.

When I speak, mere air waves are set rolling from my mouth to the ears of my friends, which are intelligent enough for my purposes, transmitting my wisdom to them.

When God speaks, the energy rolling out of His mouth creates worlds, sustains our lives, and satisfies every need of each of the legions of the Host.

Far from some mere chemical process, the fire which is God bathes us in the full range of experiences of life.

For example, God enables us to experience what we have done to others, so that every time we bless another, we are blessed. The Fallen have, of course, experienced the opposite because their interaction with others has been the opposite.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 18:5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. 6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double. (See also Isa 40:2, 61:7, Jer 16:18, 17:18, Zec 9:12. And “according to their works”, Pr 24:12, Mt 16:27, 2Ti 4:14. Also Gal 6:7, Job 4:8, Pro 1:31, Hos 8:7, 10:12, Rom 2:6-10, 2 Cor 9:6, Luke 6:38, Luke 16:25.)*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *In only a few verses does God tell us the proportion between how much the wicked make others suffer on Earth, and how much they will then have to suffer in Hell. That proportion is, at the maximum, “double”.*

It is these experiences which we welcome and they resist. God's Love warms us with joy, while their resistance to the challenges of the adventure we call Life fills them with terror.

# Chapter 3

## Hell at the Movies

BT11 – I found the poster taped to the doorpost of my silver and gold mansion.

“AHA! (Angelic Host Assembly.)

“The OAT Team will present the report you have all been waiting for, explaining the chain reaction of thoughts which selfishness begins in the hearts of the fallen. Learn how that tragic experiment led to jumping upside down and sideways until their heads explode.

“The meeting will begin instantly.”

Finally!

I mingled with the milling crowds flying towards the assembly. I heard expressions of relief and optimism all around.

“At last! Our sad brothers have been so weird. They *must* be sorry, and anxious to return to normal!”

“That’s for sure! Now we will get answers. With answers, we can help our brothers correct their wills and get healed. Our Body will be restored!”

“Finally, I say! They will see how silly they have been, will repent, and then we can all laugh together about them turning their heads into Frisbees!”

“What a relief that will be! I’m so glad this is almost over!”

So went the talk all around me. Having attended most of the OAT team meetings myself, except for the last two, I could only encourage them.

I knew the connection between our prodigal brothers’ foolishness, and their pain. Fascinating, how it works. But entirely logical. And entirely capable of being explained to them, I assumed. And surely any problem is quickly solved, once understood.

The crowd pressed past God’s Workshop, where God was just finishing writing in a book. As He saw us streaming by, He smiled broadly, stopped writing, closed His book, and put it on a shelf so He could join us.

“Are you going to speak too?” someone asked Him with excitement.

“No, this time I’m just going to enjoy the speakers and your company.”

Cool! I stared back at the book He had put away. The cover said “When I was alone.”

Wow! It had not occurred to me that there might have been a time when God was alone. I presume He means, before He created angels. I never thought about what that might have been like, or what God did during that time, but now that the question had been put, I was anxious to know! It will be hard now to wait until God is ready to tell us.

The Host is now fully gathered. The presentation begins.

“Spiritual pain is the result of a stairway of dumb ideas, each painful step of which leads to the next, which is eventually taken unless the choice of direction is reversed.

“The Fallen allege that the Fire of God causes their pain, which we have learned to our astonishment is half true! The other half is that the *worst* pain is felt by what the Fire of God is there to minimize.”

Serious, our Public Relations Specialist, gave his report to the assembly. He hovered where we could all see him. Joy and Brainy hovered nearby, ready to field questions.

Serious’s face is a very nice shade of orange today. Very nice choice. Very bright, too. He held up his paper to read by it.

He unrolled it, until the end of his paper, flapping noisily in the downdraft from his wings, dropped the depth of three angels! We groaned, as he took a deep breath. We groaned again when we saw how tiny the print was! And how deep the breath he took was! We want understanding, but do we want *that much*?

We could only hope that his side of that paper was mostly pictures. Maybe he would look at them and stop talking and we could go home.

As my Mindmail recorded that thought, it fascinated me: wasn’t that the theme of several conversations with the Fallen? Although my complaint was in jest while theirs was bitter, wasn’t it the same complaint? Other than a difference in degree, don’t we all enjoy learning at a comfortable, entertaining level, while there comes a point where we resent the intense concentration required for deep learning?

*VerseScout: Proverbs 4:7 Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding. 8 Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her. 9 She shall give to thine head an ornament of grace: a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee.*

*Ecclesiastes 1:18 For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.*

Even before Serious's first word resonated, he was gesturing wildly to punctuate whatever he was thinking. I must say it turned out to be entertaining. However, I don't know how to write down gestures, and I am *not* going to record every word he said! I don't have as much paper as he does.

So, just a few highlights. I'm sure anyone interested in sitting through the whole show again can find the Realogram of it in the archives. Just ask for Real #404,5501,2324½,23859.

He began, "Gentlemen, we have come together to understand why our fallen brothers are experiencing a new phenomenon known as 'pain' and 'suffering', and exhibiting bizarre behavior which contributes to their burdens, such as banging their heads on the Streets of Gold until their halos emit showers of sparks, which they are determined to believe is turning them into God."

The best jokes are the simple truth. Serious waited for us to compose ourselves.

"You have waited patiently for our OAT team – Observers, Analysts, and Testers – to complete our work, and now you will be r - i - c - h - l - y rewarded." He waved his l - o - n - g paper – even longer than his towering neck – as he emitted his last phrase, and we laughed at his equation of the richness of our reward with the quantity of his words.

"We have reconstructed the stairway of dumb ideas which begins with Beelzebub's novel concept of 'self-ishness', and explains all their irrational words and behavior. Here's the first step, which leads to all the rest."

Serious took us back to the beginning of The Trouble. All the way back to Beelzebub's first horror movie.

"Selfish".

The star looked kind. But he gave me the creeps.

**VerseScout:** Job 38:7 When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** This verse takes place before the creation of man, and is usually interpreted as describing angels. The fact that the Bible calls some angels "stars" (see also Revelation 12:4) lends some support to the theory that angels produced movies.

[Translator's note: Hey, what's going on here? I did NOT program my VSRR program to tell jokes!]

He said an angry word to nobody. He approved of anybody. He had a kind word for everybody.

But there was cruelty in his kisses.

**VerseScout:** Proverbs 27:6 Faithful are the wounds of a friend; but the kisses of an enemy are deceitful.

Luke 22:48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

He never tried to hurt anybody. But he never grieved when others hurt.

He “loved” everybody. He sacrificed himself for nobody.

He said “amen” to every statement about God, from the goofy to the grandiose. His “amen” was framed by a smile of bemused condescension. He suspected none of the statements he “amened” were true, although he did not care enough to investigate whether any of them were.

He said “it doesn’t matter which concept of God is true – all paths lead to God – so I don’t let facts influence what I believe. I go by what feels right. I will love others the same either way.”

We had laughed loudest at that line, back when the movie was released. We had thought we were watching a comedy.

We laughed because one’s concept of God defines one’s responsibilities to others. One’s grasp of reality determines whether one’s good intentions will help or harm.

And the star thinks he can “love” others just as much, whether he “decides” to believe God, or fantasy? Ha ha!

No, the star did not “hate” anybody. Or at least he was not *angry* with anybody, for anything. That is, he did not have a strong *emotion*.

**VerseScout:** Revelation 3:15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

His *emotion* towards others and towards God was happy and friendly. He wanted everybody to be happy and well. But if they were not, he was uninterested in helping. Or knowing.

His *commitment* to others and God was nonexistent. He was dependable to nobody, to do anything for them contrary to his own interest. His apathy towards others was perfect. His only serious commitment was to how he feels.

We winced as, once again, we saw the kindly-speaking lead character tell his student, “Love everybody. Hate nobody. Become detached from this problem-packed existence. Be self-ish. Care about nothing outside yourself. Desire nothing but self. Commit yourself to

nothing beyond yourself, and set yourself free to pursue your own happiness – your own Nirvana! Become ‘Self-Realized’!”

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 18:2 A fool hath no delight in understanding, but that his heart may discover itself.*

Here’s how the student went about pursuing his happiness: he skrinkled up his face, as hope drained, from it, of helping his friends find happy endings to difficult challenges.

Life evaporated from his face, as he “detached” himself from anything outside his own tiny existence. His features dried, cold, as his “love” for others shed its readiness to accept any cost of helping anybody.

His “love” became profound hate – more violent than violent emotion – willing to watch suffering, unmoved, doing nothing, while feeling a love-like *emotion*, a kindly wish for suffering to stop.

No, there was no “hate”-like *emotion*. There was just no inspiration to “get involved” enough to lift a finger to *stop* suffering. Or even to examine his own words and actions for mistakes that might unintentionally *perpetuate* suffering.

**VerseScout:** *James 2:14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? 15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, 16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? 17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.*

We watched profound apathy bleach the spontaneity from every muscle in his face. Tension made his head throb. His back slowly bowed from the weight upon his mind of the hatred (not the emotion, but the decided noninvolvement) which displaced his joy.

**VerseScout:** *Galatians 5:22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, ....*

*Philippians 2:1 If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels [inward affection: compassion, sympathy, tenderness] and mercies, 2 Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind. 3 Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. 4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “consolation”, “comfort”, and “joy” are experienced by those who “esteem others better than themselves” – the very

*opposite of selfishness. In other words, selfishness leads to the opposite of consolation, comfort, and joy.*

Student's suffering body became as sick with pain and disease as Teacher's. The word that came to mind to describe his pathetic appearance was "old", whose meaning I still ponder.

Teacher smiled, a smile twisted by pain and hate. No, not "hate". But *hate*.

He strained to straighten his bent back. His fist before his heart, his thumb pointing inward, he announced with an air of hateful pride, "I'm looking out for #1!" Student did likewise.

Overcome by the exertion of holding their backs straight, they slumped again, tenderly cradled their throbbing heads in their hands, and moaned, "A god of love wouldn't let me hurt."

We roared at that line when we first heard it. We had assumed Beelzebub was joking. No one could literally be that slow, we assumed, to see the connection between their selfishness and their pain: depression, headaches, sickness, failures, despair.

This time, we winced.

The more of the embarrassing movie Serious showed, the lower our heads hung in sympathy. We watched teacher and student trying to interact with others, and finding themselves less useful and less appreciated than formerly. The surprising thing was that they were surprised! After making such a mess out of their *top* priority – Self – how could they be surprised that they had become no more useful to anybody else?

Hadn't it become their mission in life to be useless to anybody but themselves?

Well, not quite. They had certainly chosen to serve others less, but they had kind of hoped they could still feel needed.

(Not because they wanted to serve anybody's needs, but because they wanted something they could deny others.)

It was a bit embarrassing for them to find that their selfishness had cost them much of their function, and hence, much of their usefulness to others. They covered up by reminding each other that they didn't care if they helped so and so anyway.

Serious turned off the Realogram.

"Selfishness reduces function by choice, as Beelzebub has taught us.

"There is another way selfishness reduces function.

"Allow me to introduce you to Whineus, who will illustrate how



selfishness *directly* undermines intelligence.”

Serious sat down, his elbows on his knees, his chin in his hands. He looked sad. Even defeated.

He whined, “What can one angel do? Am I my angel’s keeper? I can’t do the impossible.”

Serious stood up, stepped aside, and looked down at where he had just been sitting, the spot now occupied only by Whineus, whose existence owed itself to the readiness of our memories to reserve his place in now empty space.

“Will you no longer try? We *need* you!” Serious begged, leaning towards Whineus.

“Those we have been trying to help need *all* of us. Does your heart no longer care what happens to brothers whose *only hope* is that you *succeed* in what seems, to you, an impossible mission?”

Serious sat down again as Whineus. “Am I God? Can I do miracles for everybody? That’s *God’s* job. *He* made all these angels. *He* needs to take care of them. That is the way to be sure all needs will be met. Rely on me, and you rely on a wish and a prayer. You need to count on *God*. You need to put your trust in *God*, not in *me*!”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: 25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *A Commentary by Jamieson, Fausset and Brown explains this verse: “The sense is obvious: ‘I knew thou wast one whom it was impossible to serve, one whom nothing would please: exacting what was impracticable, and dissatisfied with what was attainable.’ Thus do men secretly think of God as a hard Master, and virtually throw on Him the blame of their fruitlessness.”*

Serious stood up, stepped sideways, looked back down on Whineus. “You know very well God promises to do great things through you. That’s why they are called ‘miracles’. It is no miracle when *God* does great things. It is when God does them through *us* that they are miraculous. Yes, God takes care of us, but the most satisfying way He cares for us is through inspiring all of us to help each other, in love. Ability to bless others is something you must use, or lose.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: 27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my*

money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. 29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

Serious continued, “If all our brothers hate us, yes, God will still love us. We thrive on that blessed assurance. But we really appreciate our brothers’ love too! *Of course* it’s beyond your capacity. *Of course* it takes a miracle. That’s why you need God. You need to love our brothers enough to *want* to help God help them, because outside love, there is darkness.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

“I am pleading for your help, to share the blessing of God working through us, because I love you. Not because my ultimate trust is in you. It is in God.”

**VerseScout:** *Esther 4:10 Again Esther spake...unto Mordecai; 11-12 [If I go to the king without an appointment, to plead for the Jews, I might be put to death.]13 Then Mordecai commanded to answer Esther, ...14 ...if thou altogether holdest thy peace at this time, then shall there ...deliverance arise to the Jews from another place; but thou and thy father's house shall be destroyed: and who knoweth whether thou art come to the kingdom for such a time as this?*

Whineus: “You’re too radical for me! You’re a fanatic! A God of Love wouldn’t expect that much of *anybody*! That’s unreasonable! You expect me to be a Faithaholic? Gimme a break! I may owe a *tithe* (10%) to others. Not 100%! Not *my whole life*!”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 19:21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me. 22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions. 23 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. 24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.*

Serious: “Well, since you are content to do *just a little* for others, won’t you at least exercise great care to study how you can effectively

invest your little?

“You surely know helping requires not just desire to help, but intelligence. In fact, *a lot* of intelligence and creativity. Without it, help may not be helpful, and may be harmful.”

Whineus: “Look, fanatic, I’ll do my part, OK? Don’t expect miracles. I’m not going to sit around doing research for the rest of my life on how to get the most out of my helping. I’ve got my own life to live, you know. The Host doesn’t depend on my help for its existence, and the Host isn’t going to be hurt if my help isn’t perfect! I’m not *trying* to hurt anyone, so relax.”

Stauros addressed us again, as if Whineus were no longer present to hear what Stauros had to say about him. “Do you see how selfishness suppresses intelligence? Do you see how selfishness is the *choice* to access only a fraction of the intelligence available – which is another way of saying selfishness is the choice to enter a stupor – to become stupid?

“To not care about our usefulness to others, is to not care whether we understand their needs, and what will help. In other words, apathy about others causes atrophy of the brain.

“Apathy, atrophy. Brain, drain.

“We who are determined to serve are careful to judge others accurately. We would be horrified to learn that we have been angry with anyone without a cause.”

*VerseScout: Matthew 5:22 ...whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment:....*

“We are *vigilant* for evidence that we have been wrong. We are *anxious* to examine it thoroughly, so that if there is anything to it we can correct ourselves as quickly as possible.”

*VerseScout: Proverbs 13:18 Poverty and shame shall be to him that refuseth instruction: but he that regardeth reproof shall be honoured.*

“We would be equally horrified to learn that our well-intentioned help has been misguided. We watch for such evidence, ready to change if needed.

“That is because love motivates us. We aren’t satisfied to *look* like we are helping. We want our brothers to be *helped*.

“Not so the Selfish! The Selfish don’t care if their accusations are unfounded! They don’t go around eager and grateful for evidence that their hatred is misdirected and that their ‘help’ would be better directed

differently! One does not expect friendship to result from showing them they hate the wrong people, for the wrong reasons!”

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 1:29 For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: 30 They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. 31 Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. 32 For the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. 33 But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.*

*Proverbs 15:12 A scorner loveth not one that reproveth him: neither will he go unto the wise.*

“God calls people ‘fools’ who push away the wise.

“And so they are, by definition.

“One deliberately chooses to be a fool, when he turns his back to the wise. By definition.

“One deliberately chooses to remain in error – another way of saying his mind is crippled, or he is in a stupor – who turns his back on scrutiny, or correction. By definition.

“The stupid are not ashamed of this fact. They are actually proud of knowing less than those who search for truth more intensely, because that saves them from being ‘fanatics’.

“They are proud that their helpfulness is not whole-hearted. They are too easily satisfied that they have done enough for another. ‘Am I my angel’s keeper?’ they demand. It is selfless enough, costly enough, they tell themselves, to do *anything at all* for another! How dare anyone ask more? They don’t watch to see if their half-hearted help has achieved its intended benefit.

“But notice the ray of hope. Notice how Whineus, as selfish as he is, resists *admitting* his selfishness. God gave every angel a desire to be helpful to others, which selfishness cannot entirely suppress. That’s why no one is happy to admit his uselessness. Not even the Fallen.

“They are annoyed by any suggestion that their help might do more harm than good. Or that benefits for themselves and others await improvement in their understanding of God. Their very rage – their very drive to punish those who would help them with these matters – is a hopeful sign, that there still remains within them a dying spark of longing to be useful, wise, and at peace with God.

“But without growth in their wisdom, their help is symbolic, we may say: it is enough for them that their ‘intentions’ were good, even when their intent is to help the minimum amount that can still be counted as ‘help’.

“To the extent of such an attitude, the effectiveness of their help is unnecessarily limited, because their help is offered with half their brains tied behind their backs.”

Whineus reappeared. He appeared to have been listening after all. “How dare you call me stupid! I’m no more stupid than you are! I just apply my intelligence to different topics. Topics / care about. Like halo-throwing statistics. I’m way ahead of you on halo-throwing statistics!”

“No doubt”, Serious answered. “Which leaves before us this question: can any amount of intelligence about topics that do not benefit anybody else make up for crippling ignorance about how to function effectively with others – how to contribute to society – how to be useful to somebody? To the extent you are of no use to anybody, doesn’t that make you *irrelevant* to society? Is that what you want for yourself?

“To the extent you have no intelligence other than what is of interest only to yourself, what kind of measure is that, since you can choose – as many do – to be perfectly satisfied with your level of intelligence no matter how low it is?”

Whineus: “I’ve got my friends! Probably more than you have! And mine aren’t fanatics! They *appreciate* my expertise in halo-throwing statistics! In fact they are quite impressed!”

Serious: “You say they aren’t fanatics?”

Whineus: “You got *that* right!”

Serious: “Meaning, they don’t challenge you to a higher standard of accuracy in your judgments of others?”

Whineus: “For starters. Because they know I’m right. I’ve got pretty good judgment. For example, I’ve got *you* figured pretty well. You’re a fanatic!”

Serious: “So your judgments of each other never start fights? You never argue? Your relationships are all happy?”

Whineus looked uneasy, as Serious continued, “So that you never wish you understood people better?”

Whineus: “I don’t need to understand anyone any better! They all better start understanding ME!”

Serious turned his back to the imaginary – but so very realistic – Whineus and addressed us. “We all watched the pattern evolve. Those who disengage from the hard work of building solid relationships, founded on Love, don’t escape the hard work. They just find their work cut out for them closer to home.

“Those who will not struggle to build bridges of love between strangers, struggle to salvage scraps of love from their crumbling closest relationships.”

***VerseScout: Proverbs 1:16 For their feet run to evil, and make haste to shed blood. 17 Surely in vain the net is spread in the sight of any bird. 18 And they lay wait for their own blood; they lurk privily for their own lives. 19 So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners thereof.***

Just a quick note to myself: I'm reminded, as I see God in the back row thoroughly enjoying the presentation, that I need to go back in my notes and describe one more thing I saw in God's Workshop as I passed it on my way to this meeting. That ball of tears, hovering over God's Workbench, has grown a lot bigger. If it keeps growing it looks like God will need to expand His Workshop.

***Translator's note: As interesting as the rest of this conference was, it made my VerseScout software smoke and put out WAY more Scripture than I think will interest anybody. My publisher said it is just too long; if it stays in, the last chapter has to go. And of course there would be no point in even publishing the book if the last chapter goes. The last chapter is what makes the book even remotely marketable, since that is the chapter that tells how to lose weight.***

***So we will have to omit most of the remainder of this conference. We will have just one more excerpt:***

## Chapter 4

### Demon Drink!

“The Fallen have many addictions”, Serious began. “Addictions are the rituals and myths invented by the fallen to protect their access to solutions to which they have become accustomed, from the threat of evidence that they have never worked.

“God’s Fire reveals to them the vanity of their trust in the miracles which they imagine their addictions faithfully perform for them.

“The fallen constantly invent new addictions as they tire of old ones.

“Some spin around in one place until they become dizzy and can’t think of anything but trying not to fall.”

Serious was as serious as a quantum physics professor drilling students on the Eleventh Law of Thermodynamics.

“Some jump up and down until their heads hurt and they can’t think of anything but sitting back down.”

The gap between the craziness of Serious’s subject, and the dryness of his detached, scholarly approach to it, progressively widened.

“Those are two of the three basic categories of addictions, but there are many variations. I’m going to have to warm up on the first two before I can analyze the third for you, because the third one is ridiculous.”

Meaning, the first two are perfectly rational, Brother Serious?

#### **The Dizzy Group (“Uppers”, or “Stimulants”)**

“The first group, the dizzy group, include some who fly in fast, tight spirals until centrifugal force turns them into frisbees; who roll their heads around in quick circles until their heads look like tetherballs; and who eat small quantities of Hell Fire.”

Serious’s delivery was as scholarly as if he were dissecting a lovaton under a spiriton microscope and giving a play-by-play to a convention of boring, bored tenured professors. His furrowed brows and monotone voice would have given the impression, to someone too far away to hear his words, that his subject was dry. It was so not-dry, that our greatest attention was to retaining our composure.

Yet when one of us smiled too broadly, he got a stern look from Professor Serious, which only made it harder not to laugh as he toiled farther down his carnival scenarios.

It didn’t help that Serious was wearing a red and pink striped face

today. Where did he get his concept of style? Has no one told him that red goes with green, not pink? Oh well, the combination of these elements provided us much needed entertainment.

Serious intoned, "There are other variations, but this group has, in common, the belief that their activities make them very fast thinkers, able to do super-angelic feats, with all the energy of little 'gods'. This belief makes them feel like their lives have more purpose, since of course accomplishment is one of our purposes for life."

*VerseScout: Matthew 25:20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*

*Ecclesiastes 2:24 There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God.*

"They are faster thinkers, only because they stop restricting their brains to thinking *sensibly*. Obviously thoughts fly much faster if you don't take the trouble to weed out the stupid ones. Yes, they perform three times as much work; but little of it makes any sense. Certainly their 'work' does not 'accomplish' anything likely to help anybody."

As Serious droned on, I pondered the very lesson in his serious, detached, scholarly approach. It occurred to me that addictive behavior *ought* to be laughed at out loud, because to treat it as a serious choice implies that its goofiness merits respect.

I realize it is tempting to be serious around such behavior, thinking that shows respect for the soul choosing it. But to treat a soul connected to the Mind of God seriously, when it makes a pea-brained choice, is to demean that soul as having no greater *capacity* than to act that stupid without really knowing any better. *Of course* they know better!

And when they see us treating what they *realize* is foolish, as serious, when *they* know *we* know as well as *they* know, that it is foolish, our polite dishonesty only loses credibility in their eyes. They correctly perceive that we don't really care about them, or whether they destroy themselves foolishly. Therefore it shows neither compassion nor respect, to talk about their addictions without laughing out loud.

*I wondered if Serious were deliberately provoking us to comprehend this point?*



### The Headache Group (“Downers”, or “Depressants”)

“The second group, the headache group, includes some who hold their breath until they pass out; who bang their heads against one another; and who stare at Hell Fire until their eyes ache. There are other variations, but this group has, in common, the belief that their activities make them such *slow* thinkers that they can forget all their troubles. Well, yes, they do forget some of their troubles, or at least their previous troubles, which soon become crowded out from their attention by new, greater troubles resulting from their slow thinking. Their minds become so disorganized that it becomes trouble enough just for them to hold a hand in front of their face and count it correctly.”

### Chemicals and Emotions.

Joy stood. “I notice you say they *‘have the belief’* that their chemicals make them feel a certain way, as if you may not agree. Doesn’t it make sense that a given chemical change in their bodies, caused either by chemicals they ingest or by their weird actions, would produce a given emotional state in reaction?

Serious actually smiled. “It would make sense if there were a direct relationship between chemicals and emotions. But not only do the same chemicals fail to trigger uniform emotions from one angel to another, but also from one ingestion to the next in the same angel. Emotional reactions to chemicals are not uniform.

“Not for want of trying to make it so! All the faith that we place in God, they place in chemicals and rituals! They concentrate very hard on *expecting* a uniform experience, and they put enormous pressure on one another not only to expect a uniform experience, but to report one even when it is not. When the experience is too disappointing to doctor the report, they dismiss it as a ‘bad trip’.

“By the use of this rhetoric they perpetuate the illusion that at least the chemical change consistently induces a ‘trip’, when the truth is that the only consistent result is a physical and mental disability. Their emotional experience is not consistent, despite their determination to pretend it so.”

“But,” I asked, “how can distinct chemical changes in our bodies *not* produce distinct reactions in our experiences?”

“Oh, there is no doubt,” answered Aysh, “that chemical changes produce recognizable *physical* experiences. Chemicals are *physical*. Emotions are *not* physical. Emotions are choices, influenced by past choices.

“The real myth is that the same *physical* changes in our bodies

produce the same *emotional* reactions. What *other* experience produces the *same* emotional reaction in *every* angel? Not one, because our choices shape our emotions. Why should we expect a mere *chemical* to have greater power to dictate our emotions than our *wills*?"

"But don't these chemicals directly affect brains?" Distazo asked.

"They do, *physically*. But brain health doesn't determine emotional condition. We are all painfully aware that, since The War, two angels can have perfectly healthy brains and yet one is full of joy and the other is miserable. Likewise, two angels can be exhausted to the point of being very sick, yet one full of joy and the other miserable.

"Remember that these chemicals are *foreign* substances in our bodies, interfering with God's perfect design. So the only question that is even logical is whether the same kind of *harm* consistently results from a chemical. The answer is that chemicals induce physical states like those caused by sickness, exhaustion, and delirium, but do not even induce mere *physical* results consistently.

"Take the harm of delirium, for example. Delirium can be caused by extreme exhaustion, high fever, or sniffing Hell Smoke.

"Have you noticed that the physical experience of delirium is not perfectly uniform even under the most controlled conditions?

"Have you also noticed that to the extent the experience *is* consistent, it is equally consistent whether it is triggered by fatigue, fever, or smoke, though these three are quite different chemically?

"Finally, have you noticed that regardless of the physical trigger, and regardless of the degree of uniformity of the physical experience, the emotional reaction of each angel is different?

"In the case of every other sickness, it is common knowledge that some are discouraged by it, while others thank God for it, trusting God to have a purpose for it. The variety of emotional reaction to it, based on spiritual choices, is common knowledge. No one suggests any sickness, by itself, has some strange power to dictate uniform emotional reaction to it! The Fallen would have us believe delirium is an exception. We could find no evidence that it is, or reason to think it should be.

"Much less do we observe any uniform *behavior* from one person to another under the influence of the same substance; or even in the same person, from one experience to another."

Distazo wasn't convinced. "But isn't there at least a greater uniformity of *emotional* reaction, to specific chemicals, than may be accounted for by chance?"

"Yes, there is", answered Serious. "As I have said, they concentrate very hard on *expecting* a uniform experience, and they put

enormous pressure on one another not only to expect a uniform experience, but to report one even when it is not.”

I asked, “What kind of pressure?”

Serious held up an orb projecting replays of our brothers who had made themselves demons.

Jade spun his head around in circles so violently that his neck elongated the span of two angels, and his head looked like a tetherball. While doing so, he stumbled towards others doing the same, until their necks tangled, producing a long, exhilarating “Twistee”. A crew came over to untangle them before they suffocated. Jade stumbled to his feet, satisfied that whatever chemical changes this was supposed to produce in his body had surely taken place by now, and staggered helplessly towards a pile of friends.

“Yalook...hapy.....kid.” Armpit encouraged.

Jade was skeptical. He didn’t feel any happier than before; just dizzier. He was curious enough to want to analyze what he *was* experiencing, independently of what his friends *informed* him that he was experiencing. So far all he had learned twisting does is make the body sick and clumsy, and confuse and slow the mind so that it responds to others’ emotions and words with blurred comprehension and limited self-discipline.

“You told me if I tried dis...ldbe...hap...hapy. Butlfel... feel...sick.”

“Yer...plasterd. Ever...evrythings...gonnafall...inplace.”

Jade answered with a heave, which splattered on the pile. “Thosetwo...mea...meals...were good ones...too” he complained. “Butldon’t feel...anydif...diff runt.”

What Jade meant was that his *emotions* hadn’t changed. Of course his *body* felt different! It felt like whenever he moved any large part of his body and then his brain told the body part to stop moving, it just kept moving for awhile anyway. Inertia seemed about 10 times its normal strength.

By contrast, he also noticed that his fingers reacted normally. In other words, his “fine motor skills” were still intact.

Testing these new things, he wrote profusely on a slate, marveling at how he could still write well, his fingers working normally, but when he moved his arm to a new paragraph it took practice to get it to stop at the right place.

He was not of course concerned with *what* he was writing. He was just writing to test these phenomena. Consequently his writing was gibberish, so his friends, watching him busily writing all this nonsense, and hearing him say “I don’t feel any different”, were beside themselves

with apoplexy at the obvious denial Jade was in.

Armpit winked knowingly, as he wrung Jade's stomach fluids out of his robe. "Ah...aha, our bud here is dru... drunkastheycome." He laughed and laughed and laughed, because it took him the labor of three laughs to get out just one. "He'lldofine. Hic."

Jade sat down in his gift to the group. "I have this theo...theory...that tw...tw...twisting doesn't af...af...affect..how youfeel."

His friends almost sobered, at the challenge of alerting their reality-denying friend to the news that he was drunk! They didn't understand that Jade meant his *emotions* were unchanged. Jade was fully aware that he was "drunk"; he denied only that he felt "better". He was skeptical only of the standard claims of happiness, fun, oblivion, etc. credited to twistees.

"Yerdrunk!" Stinky angrily announced, his face in Jade's, his wagging finger even closer.

Jade laughed. Of course he was *drunk*. He just didn't feel *better*. Or worse either, as far as that goes. Except for the foul fluids, which were becoming annoying. But Stinky didn't understand. So Jade laughed.

Jade thought of the heroic labor it would take to remember enough words to explain what he meant, and then force them out of his crippled mouth, and of the unlikelihood they would be understood even if pronounced. He laughed at that too.

Since he was drunk, his laughter was, as it were, in slow motion. It was physically clumsy, and dragged on and on. Since his mind was incapable of shifting its focus quickly, and since Stinky and Armpit made it their mission to force Jade to repent, with such comical fervor, Jade laughed quite a while, which made him look even more like an idiot.

"Lemesee", he said, "yousai...said I'd forget. But when I think, I canstill...remember."

Stinky explained, "Think? Whenyouthink? Thewho...whole point is to stopthi...thinking. Betterta...take anothe twist."

"He'lldofine. Hic." interceded Armpit. "Lookitim. He got a buzz. Lifedo...don't git no betterandis. Havano...nother twist", he offered.

Jade felt the pressure to believe what evidence denied. Their words soared into his throbbing brain like great bolts of light, and then remained, ricocheting off its walls. His mind only slowly focused on any one of them to sort out its meaning, and did so with clumsiness and little real interest, there being far greater issues to tackle, such as deciding which way was up.

Therefore when words on a particular theme were repeated, the easiest course was to flow with them, believe them, agree with them, and hope they will stop. It was taking a lot of his waning strength to continue

thinking for himself.

He dimly perceived that some sort of “Fellowship of Believers” was the thing keeping this ritual alive. When he could focus on the question, he could not say that he felt either happier or sadder as a result of the Twistee, which is what he meant when he said he didn’t “feel any different”.

Then what was the attraction of twistees to all these people? Was it just one of many alternative pegs upon which to hang a set of imaginary benefits?

Nevertheless Jade felt the pressure to admit he was “high”, which was supposed to be a “better” feeling than the emotions available while sober.

Finally Jade decided another Twistee couldn’t hurt. He would try it, and see what he might learn from it.

Jade took another Twistee. In the middle of it, he released another heave, blessing probably a thousand of his “buds”. He laid down afterwards. “Yerigh.....cantthink now.....” Armpit smiled proudly. Jade passed out.

Armpit said, “Ourbu...bud has found the pea...the pea... the peacehesafter.”

Serious shut off the orb. “But of course sleep is no guarantee of peace. Jade merely passed from consciousness into nightmares.

“In this example, a particularly skeptical demon heroically resists peer pressure.

“Notice how introspective Jade is. He is willing to submit to the experiment, but he doesn’t want to accept the word of others for the results.

“He makes an effort to think, in order to analyze the results of his experiment. He doesn’t seem to understand that a ‘good drunk’ assumes his brain will cooperate with the chemicals and ‘stop the thinking’ – a euphemism for ignoring the unwanted emotions which are still there, crying out to be remembered.

“‘Have another Twistee’ similarly becomes a euphemism for ‘try harder to ignore unwanted thoughts.’

“Most who choose this experience do not approach it with any introspection whatsoever, since their *express goal* is to silence the introspective self-analysis of conscience which is making them feel guilty!

“Most haven’t the remotest desire to experiment! Most just want to stop unwanted thoughts, and they equally want to please their friends.

“Therefore, most do not at all think about the ‘success’ of their experience, but accept it without any interest in evidence. They accept it

not only uncritically, but they regard doubt as an enemy, the same way they approach their religion in general. Ordinarily the drunk is the one who is trying to convince all around him that his habit makes him happy – not the one who *resists being convinced* that his habit made him happy.

“To listen to evidence is to break the habit, or at the very least, to suspend it.”

I stood to speak. “Interesting how this compares to religion. Ironic, that *they* accuse *us* of believing in God uncritically! But it is they who treat evidence as The Enemy. That’s the kind of Doubt that God talks about: the kind that stubbornly marches onward *in the face of* overwhelming evidence.”

Serious continued. “Our former brothers have persuaded themselves that chemical changes account for the diversion from life which they claim their activities provide them. Our studies have proved their emotions are more than accounted for by their intense concentration on what they imagine.”

Joy restated his earlier question as if he either hadn’t been listening or hadn’t comprehended. “But is their uniformity of expectation strong enough to account for their uniformity of emotional experience?”

Serious answered, “You mean, their *alleged* uniformity of emotional experience? Have you noticed that the positive emotional experiences which they promise are immediately and consistently available to us, without the disastrous side effects, simply by disciplining our emotions as God directs?”

“For example, we cure our own depression by making a conscious effort to remember our blessings.

“We cure despair by remembering the occasions in which God mightily worked through us, and His promises to always do so.

“We cure boredom by listing the things we don’t like, and then determining to believe God’s promise to enable us to correct all evil that we attack, and suddenly we have more work we are passionate about doing than we can imagine ever completing!

“And every other unwanted emotion, God has given us the means to cure. To the extent we implement God’s methods, we *uniformly* experience victory.

“Furthermore, these results are predictable and consistent even when chemical conditions vary widely, such as under the physical stress of exhaustion or other temporary physical interference. So our own experience proves our emotional condition is the direct and predictable result of our *spiritual choices*.

“That is true for them also. They choose to concentrate very hard

on expecting a specific emotional reaction to a particular chemical. That intense concentration is *more* than enough to account for the slight consistency of reaction they experience. Considering the uniformity and intensity of their expectation, we should be asking why their emotional reaction is not *more* consistent than it is. But of course the explanation is that they are seeking it without God. In fact, they are seeking it through an imaginary substitute for God, which requires them to seek with half their brains tied behind their backs.”

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 23:21 For the drunkard and the glutton [Heb: loose morals, worthless, prodigal] shall come to poverty: and drowsiness shall clothe a man with rags.*

*Proverbs 31:4 It is not for kings, O Lemuel, it is not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink: 5 Lest they drink, and forget the law, and pervert the judgment of any of the afflicted. 6 Give strong drink unto him that is ready to perish, [that is, give sedatives to people who are dying] and wine unto those that be of heavy hearts. 7 Let him drink, and forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more.*

“Further evidence that chemicals do not dictate emotions are those incidents where drunken angels ‘snap out of it’ instantly when frightened, or when an emergency requires facing some urgent responsibility.

“Still further evidence that chemicals don’t dictate emotions is the similarity of withdrawal symptoms regardless of the chemical involved. Have you noticed that? Have you noticed that the lists of withdrawal symptoms from different chemicals is similar? How can that be, if chemicals, not choices, drive emotions? Shouldn’t entirely different chemicals, then, cause entirely different withdrawal symptoms?

“But I haven’t even gotten to the most fascinating evidence. Have you noticed how the addicted imagine their addictions offer such an endless variety of magical qualities?

“They claim some miraculous benefit from their addictions, which should be clue enough, considering the void of evidence, but then they go right out and claim the very *opposite* result, without ever noticing any contradiction!

“It helps them have ‘fun’, and helps them grieve!

“It helps them interact with reality, and helps them shut out reality!

“It helps them go to sleep, and stay awake!

“It gives them courage to face their problems, and helps them forget their problems!

“It helps them stay alert, and relax!

“It makes them perceptive, and helps block everything out!

“It helps them mourn, and celebrate!

“Why, it even enables them to talk to God! Although they don’t mean the God we know, but rather the ‘god’ they imagine.”

**VerseScout:** *2 Corinthians 4:3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: 4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.*

“Our God, unlike theirs, is real. Our God-centered thought, unlike theirs, really *can* help us meet opposite responsibilities.”

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 3:1 To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: 2 A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted; 3 A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up; 4 A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance; 5 A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing; 6 A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away; 7 A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak; 8 A time to love, and a time to hate; a time of war, and a time of peace.*

“But how can any thought-suppressing chemical produce opposite results? And even if it could, what would trigger the switch between producing one result or its opposite? Do addicts not imagine it is their wills which decide whether the chemical will produce the wanted result, or its opposite? Does this not undermine the assumption that it is the chemicals which have the power to control results? Do addicts not, by assuming their wills control whether a chemical will produce an effect or its opposite, admit that their beloved chemical has no power of its own?”

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 20:1 Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise.*

“Our OAT team thought the opposite magical qualities which they attributed to the same addiction would soon alert them to the fact that all those qualities are purely imaginary, since a single activity or substance is not capable of producing opposite results, but we have been disappointed. They have not caught on. Everything they want or need, they imagine receiving through their addictions, as if they actually believe their addictions are God.”



**VerseScout:** *Psalms 135:15 The idols of the heathen are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. 16 They have mouths, but they speak not; eyes have they, but they see not; 17 They have ears, but they hear not; neither is there any breath in their mouths. 18 They that make them are like unto them: so is every one that trusteth in them.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God graphically describes the power of irrational imagination to claim miraculous benefits from a God-substitute, contrary to the most obvious, irrefutable evidence. If men are able to do that to the extreme of confusing a carved tree stump for “God”, we should not be surprised to learn men are able to have the same faith in the effect of ingested chemicals, for which a case can be made that at least sounds far more plausible. (Continued in Appendix D, Idols and Addictions)*

“What they actually receive is nothing. All their activities accomplish is to place their minds in a state similar to various stages of extreme exhaustion, fear, or sickness. (“Sickness” is the name for how we feel while our dark spots are being burned away.)

“The whole appeal of either ‘stimulants’ or ‘depressants’ rests on the amazing theory that a healthy body, and a clearly thinking mind, as God has created them, can somehow be improved upon! And of all the ways to improve upon it, the best way is to make the body sick, and the mind foggy!

“What do they have against a clear mind, we still ask ourselves? Why, with a clear mind and angelic intelligence, it is possible to do creative, beautiful things to help others, to manifest our love, which makes our lives full of purpose! Oh yeah, I forgot. They think love is for losers. They want to be winners.”

Wow! Serious is getting sarcastic! He’s putting a little Fire in his findings!

“So they make themselves sick and stupid, so they will be of no use to anybody. Then they can be real ‘proud’ of themselves. They can have all kinds of ‘self esteem’, like that.

“Some angels are real hard to figure.”

The host responded with thunderous applause. Half for his articulate explanation of phenomena which had confused and troubled us, and half for our relief in finally hearing, from Serious’s own mouth, an attitude of disrespect appropriate to the subject.

**VerseScout:** *Isaiah 5:20 Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*

And another half, for coming to the end of his long paper, tossing it down, and stepping away from the podium!

# Chapter 5

## God's Fireside Chat

We had thought that the clearest reasoning, and the tenderest love, could overcome our lost brothers' barriers.

We had told ourselves, "they resist because we are not pure enough. They accuse us of 'judging' them, so there must be some arrogance in us, which we need to purify, and then they will receive us.

"They accuse us of not being 'scientific' but of proceeding by 'blind faith', so there must be some gap in our reasoning which we must more carefully close, and then they will be persuaded by our logic and their belief in God will be restored."

Not so. In fact, we documented that their agitation and cursing increased in direct proportion to the irrefutability of our proof. It also increased in direct proportion to the purity of our love towards them.

When Brother Clumsy approached them, for example, they mocked him for his poor grasp of detail and for words which they were able to twist into "evidence" of unkindness. They were untroubled by him. They had "fun" at his expense, and even welcomed his approach for their sport. They even memorized phrases from his sermons and quoted him often to justify their hate.

God used his clumsiness! God used it to reach hearts with sprinkles of truth which were too hard for a full serving!

However, the most careful among us, the most faultless in our expression of love and reason, were resisted the way they resisted God's consuming flames. They only made their barriers stronger. They did not quote us. They would not hear us.

In other words, it wasn't any trace of "hypocrisy" or "judgment" in us that turned them away; these qualities did not turn them away at all, but actually drew them.

It was the degree to which our hearts and words were pure and logical, that turned them away, because their rebellion was not against hate, but against love; not against ignorance, but against reason; not against superstition, but against science.

When we first perceived this phenomenon, we wondered if we should deliberately make ourselves at fault, that we might more easily approach them.

Several angels are committed to this strategy. They are so committed that they accuse us of being too hard-line, inflexible, "fanatic",

or unwilling to “compromise”; we, they say, are undermining the “credibility” which they are establishing among the Lost.

We call angels committed to this strategy “Moderates”.

As I noted, God can use them. But obviously God doesn’t model that strategy, so Moderates don’t seem to have a lock on the only approach that works.

We also observe that the demons’ acceptance of us, to the extent that our imperfection provides them material for excuses, does not translate into acceptance of Truth or Love, much less of God. And to the extent they will not accept Truth, Love, or God, we are little motivated to secure their acceptance of *us*.

We pray the situation is not this hopeless in every case. We are hopeful that at least a few among them may still respond to pure love and reason. It is for their sakes that we continue to try.

BT12 – We arranged a meeting with God. God is finally ready. Or, rather, God finally calculated that we are ready. We decided that we would meet instantly.

What will God say? Was our love for the suffering angels enough? Why had God required us to establish as much as we had by our own research rather than just telling us?

God is passing out Report Cards. Our theory about fire and suffering is marked “correct, as far as you have gone.”

The fire is blazing, crackling, warm, toasty. We stare into it, mesmerized. Its shapes are constantly shifting, so that its beauty never gets boring.

“This fire which your dear, precious, lost brothers find so painful of late, is mostly just reality”, God said.

“The pressures about which they complain are mostly just the pressures of life – the challenges, the opportunities, and the consequences of ignoring its demands. They say it burns them. But it is life itself whose challenges they resent.”

God continued, “Thank you for appreciating the Life I have given you! Thank you for returning my Love!”

I couldn’t help asking, “How can it be that *You* are thanking *us*?”

“Thanksgiving is the key to happiness.” God winked, “Don’t you think I have a right to be happy?”

“Was that hard, even for You – learning to be thankful even for us?!” Sarcamson asked.

God laughed. “See what I mean? Even the Devil would find delight in an answer like that, if I could shake him out of his stupor.

“Of course, I learned that lesson, about being thankful, long before I created you.”

His Words reminded me of the book I saw on God’s book shelf. They stirred in me a curiosity about what it must have been like before God created angels, back When God Was Alone. Will God tell us of that period?

“I love and bless all creatures continually. Most of what I do for each soul, no soul knows. I cause and orchestrate all experiences for each soul, that you may enjoy a holy balance between nourishment, challenge, and opportunity by working alongside Me.

“Your lost brothers turn their backs on me. They will not work, sing, play, or even talk with me. But I still work in them, and wait with yearning for the slightest hint of turning around. Should that happen, I will be there for them.

“But you! You are thankful for My work in you. You welcome my fellowship. We talk, play, sing, and work together, consciously. It is a great joy for me, as it is for you.”

I said, “I just can’t imagine that this same fire which warms me so comfortably, produces in them millions of degrees of heat! Is the difference only that we offer no resistance?”

God almost agreed. “You have resistance”, God reminded me. “In fact, almost as much as they do! But *greater* than your resistance is your willingness to allow Me to burn away all your resistance.”

God’s eyes glistened as another tear formed. Could it be that The Fallen trouble God in the same way they trouble us? But God is omnipotent! This has never made any sense. How is it possible that anything can hurt Him enough to make Him cry?

The eerie thing about it was that instead of looking at our fallen brothers as He spoke, He looked at us! Not just at us collectively, but at each of us, with a look of yearning, if not pleading.

**VerseScout:** *Luke 13:34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Jesus did not express the torment of rejection by the pagan nations surrounding Israel, but by the nation closest to readiness to return His love.*

“Expect resistance. Determine to pay its cost without complaint, without demand, without surprise. Don’t resist their resistance.

“Don’t love it. Don’t tolerate it. Don’t respect it. Don’t pretend to.

But love *your brothers*. Because only to the extent you love your brothers, despite their dark cruelty, can you survive the dark cruelty *of your own hearts*.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 18:23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. [One talent is about 98 pounds of either silver or gold; at a good daily wage of the time, it would take 500,000 years to pay off that debt.] 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: 33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *To forgive is to bear the cost of helping, imposed by the stubbornness of the one you help.*

I would rank that among my least favorite messages from God. It was so unwelcome, that suddenly I felt more empathy with the Fallen than I had ever thought possible.

The knowledge of little tiny spots of darkness in me too small to see is OK. I am comfortable with the concept of traces of sin in me so microscopic that it doesn't seriously matter.

But when God compares the darkness in “them” with the darkness in me, without any qualification to make clear how much less there is in me, or that there is any difference at all, and to see God weeping more over me than over them, I don't know if I'm OK with that.

But after I smelled some acrid smoke blowing out of my ears, it hit me: God was trying to get me to empathize with the Fallen, by reminding me that I have darkness in me too. He didn't really mean I have very

much.

But then it hit me again: I am thoroughly resisting God's warning to me. God isn't exaggerating.

This is scary. I am able now to empathize, not just through some theoretical similarity between my darkness and theirs. Now I know exactly how they feel. I felt exactly the same way, only four microns ago.

I need to be more careful. I didn't know I was capable of deliberate rebellion against God.

***VerseScout:** Matthew 26:41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.*

*Mark 13:37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.*

*1 Peter 5:8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:*

God smiled.

I wondered if God finds the work of saving us from our rebellion tedious? Are the twists and turns that thoughts, feelings, and desires can take as they jam themselves in the wrong slots interesting to God? Are the xillions of ways to repair them, multiplied by the xillions of us, complicated enough to keep God from getting bored?

God smiled as we studied our cards. Then He looked around at us for a minute and spoke.

"You have already learned that I can correct the sins in your lives with a gentle, controlled fire, when an unrestrained fire would be too intense, causing you pain.

"You know the difference is in your intentions. I know darkness in you is not deliberate. Therefore I can remove it leisurely, at a pace which is just intense enough for you to make discovery of the truth exciting, by quenching My Love/Fire before it hurts you.

"You know My correction of them is unrestrained in the sense that it flows up to 100% of their capacity to absorb it without utterly destroying their very selves, but because you have not restrained your capacity, far more of my fire power passes through you than through them.

"I love sharing all that power with you. That's why I made the streets out of gold."

***VerseScout:** Revelation 21:21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.*

Of course! Why had I never thought of it before?!

“Gold conducts energy perfectly, without resistance, and without distortion. So that by merely walking on My paths, you are purified.”

God looked at the lost.

“That creates another difference”, God explained.

“They become spiritually exhausted. They rest not in kicking the points I am trying to get across to them, and I keep my points sharp so they have a chance to penetrate. Their injuries serve a holy purpose. Perhaps they will become injured enough to take a break from resisting Me.”

***VerseScout:** Acts 26:14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. [Gr: poison thorns, or ox goads – the sharp sticks used by farmers to keep their oxen moving. In those shoeless, sandal-clad days, kicks aimed at sharp things were very painful. A similar metaphor today could be “kicking the roses barefoot.”]*

Deep sorrow showed itself on God's face. It was brief, but so deep that it seemed like greater sorrow than that of all the Fallen in Hell. God turned to us with a deep sense of urgency.

“You realize, don't you, that their suffering does not benefit Me? You understand, don't you, that their pain does not bring Me some sort of compensation for the suffering or loss they have caused Me?”

We laughed with God at His joke, although as we did, His Face betrayed no levity. We understood God's allusion to the myths popular among the Fallen, that they could pacify God's wrath by suffering more. Or better yet, by causing others to suffer.

What could repay God, who already owns everything? And who can cause God suffering or loss, creating a debt to be repaid? But what point was God leading up to?

***VerseScout:** Job 35:6 If thou sinnest, what doest thou against him? ...7 If thou be righteous, what givest thou him?...*

“You understand that their rebellion does cause me grief, but only because I love them and grieve when they suffer – that in no other sense do they have the capacity to cause me any manner of harm or unhappiness? You understand how easy it would be, if it were not for My Love, to correct the loss of function in Our Body by simply creating replacement angels for them, and giving them the cessation of existence they ask for as My Fire/Love recedes from them? Or simpler yet, if it were



not for My Love, I could just stop caring about Our Body. There is no other reason I ‘need’ them, besides my Love for them.”

It was obvious, once stated. And certainly humbling.

Beelzebub had been listening. Now he whispered furiously to his gullible followers, who quickly began jeering.

They jeered, that God made a mistake in creating us without first figuring out how to profit from us. Oh? God has needs which can be met by some kind of “profit” from outside Himself?

They mocked, that Beelzebub’s hordes cause God grief because of God’s stupid love. God hurt, *by angels*? Beelzebub can’t even touch *us* without God’s permission, let alone *Him*! I had half a notion to schedule my long-procrastinated interview with Beelzebub right then!

**VerseScout:** *Job 1:11 But put forth thine hand now, [against Job] and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. 12 And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Even Satan knows the power of prayer! Even Satan knows he can’t touch anyone without first petitioning God! God limits our power to hurt each other, to what He can turn into a blessing for each of us.*

They jeered that they were becoming God and would soon take His place, since in Hell, they were the more quickly burning off their Bad Karma, after which they supposed they would “attain” to Nirvana, which they defined as the cessation of individual existence, or what drunks call “oblivion”. They had tricked God, they were convinced! They had tricked God into putting them in Karma-burning Hell where they would the more quickly be ready to give God some serious competition!

The more they jeered against God, Love, and Reason, the more they suffered. God laughed sadly and shook His head. I saw a tear form in His eye, and fall into the growing globe in His Workshop.

I marveled at the howling of Hell. If we had all eternity in Hell to repay Him, it is impossible to imagine what we could contribute, to God’s treasury, of any value to Him! We have power neither to hurt nor to help God.

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 50:10 For every beast of the forest is mine, and the cattle upon a thousand hills. ...12 If I were hungry, I would not tell thee: for the world is mine, and the fulness thereof. ... 14 Offer unto God thanksgiving; and pay thy vows unto the most High: 15 And call upon me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** *With what can we repay God that is not already His? Nothing. The only “repayment” God asks is for us to let Him give us more!*

*Does God benefit from praise? From us glorifying Him? Is that what God needs to sustain His self-esteem? That, too, is for our benefit, not His. It is like the honor children need to give their parents. Not to benefit parents, according to the 4<sup>th</sup> Commandment, but for the children: that they may live long. Parental commands are generally designed to keep children out of danger so they can survive to adulthood.*

## Chapter 6

# God won't DRAG you to Heaven

"You have asked about the Barriers. Yes, they are connected with the wills of your prodigal brothers. You know they don't prevent communication. Your sad brothers never stop pushing Me away, so I can never spare them from the natural consequences. And I have made a barrier that prevents you from shielding them from those consequences.

"Because were there no consequences, the Darkness they worship would become a black hole that would utterly swallow them.

"Not that you are excused from trying to help them. Do all you can to soften their hearts to truth. Encourage them to treat reality, which I fill, as their friend, not their mortal enemy. That is the mission of fire. Don't try to spare them from fire, or from Truth, or from Love, or from Me, all of which fire is. They need more of it, not less. Persuade them to receive it with joy within themselves.

"You understand, therefore, that the reason I allow conditions in which they suffer horrible torments has to be for some other reason than that their torture serves some benefit to anyone but themselves?"

We had not thought of analyzing God's *purpose* for correcting. Now we were curious.

"Hell's angels accuse me of torturing them out of all proportion to how much they have hurt Me. Which is silly since they haven't hurt Me. Well, except by blocking my desire for good for them. But My Love for them is not turned to hate because they don't love me back!"

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

"It is vaguely true that I torture them, but only by not miraculously interrupting the natural consequences of the lies and cruel intentions they

choose.

“I allow all of you to experience the natural consequences of your choices so that you may spiritually grow. They complain because I created consequences. But do you understand that if there were no consequences, choice could not exist? Do you understand that love could not exist? Because love is the choice to improve the consequences for someone else even at the cost of unpleasant consequences for yourself.”

**VerseScout:** *John 15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The measure of whether love is real is not how nice the words or emotions are, but readiness to bless another at cost to oneself.*

“Not that I created consequences just so people can love. I created consequences so you can create whatever you want. If there were no consequences – if nothing happened – no matter what you did or said, you couldn’t change anything, which means you couldn’t create anything. I created consequences because I wanted the most perfect existence for you, because I love you.”

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:31 And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good....*

*Ecclesiastes 3:11 He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.*

*Mark 7:37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear; and the dumb to speak.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *It is God’s character to do all things well, so the angels’ existence before the Earth was also very good.*

“Before I created you, I studied the nature of consciousness itself. It has characteristics which you and I share, and which cannot be altered. Its characteristics include consequences of choices that cannot be altered. The *natural* consequences I have created – that is, the qualities of the Fire in which you live, move, and have your existence – are designed to soften the impact of the consequences embedded in consciousness itself.”

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 12:7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?*

*Proverbs 23:13 Withhold not correction from the child: for if thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. 14 Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Adults face many natural consequences of their actions in society. If they do not work, and no one does their work, they starve. If they violate the laws of their government, their government will punish them.*

*Parents shelter children by creating intermediary consequences to soften the impact of the consequences from which parents are unable to deliver their children.*

*A “rod”, in Hebrew, means either a large stick used to kill enemies in battle, or a walking stick, or a pencil-size stick used to write in wax. Obviously a child beaten with the first two will die, so the third is meant. A beating with a pencil [unsharpened, obviously] can sting, but not kill.*

*Parent-created intermediary correction gives children time for millions of experiences and choices before facing reality directly.*

“The time will come that I will explain my experiences.”

“Time”? What is “time”? I started to ask, but God’s gaze shifted to the Fallen.

“They say they haven’t hurt anybody physically, which is of course true, but only because I have not made angels able to physically hurt each other. Were they able to be physically cruel, they would apply all their creativity to it!

“Do you understand how irrational it would be for Me to impose cruel punishment upon souls just for the sake of repaying Myself for some sort of loss which can never exist? Or to make Me happy through the torment of those who tried but could not hurt Me? Or to satisfy some strange concept of ‘justice’ in which I am supposedly ‘Holy’ by some definition of ‘Holiness’ that renders me unable to look upon sin or have it in My Presence?

“Don’t you see me, always, not only having sin in My Presence, not only looking upon sin to analyze and heal it, not only creating conditions in which it may be chosen, but investing infinite energy doing so? Do you understand that it is *sinner*s who cannot abide *My* Presence, who cannot comprehend *Me*, or stand to see *Me* – not the other way around?”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.*

*Luke 5:30 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? 31 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick. 32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God follows us into the thick of our sin to bring us back Home!*

*“Holiness” is never defined in the Bible as inability to survive the presence of sin. That was the Pharisee’s definition of “Holiness”.*

*God is not “holy and just” in some sense that He melts like the Wicked Witch of the West if a little sin splatters in His presence. Nor does the Gospel message really say that Jesus died to appease a God so “holy” that our mistakes fill God with too much “wrath” for Him to stand being around you, so Jesus, who apparently must be much less “holy” by this definition, paid our penalty to satisfy God.*

**“Do you understand that I do not punish them in order to protect Myself from them because I can’t survive being near them?”**

This was getting uncomfortable. Such an accusation seemed blasphemous. Grief showed on God’s face as He responded to it. Who would say such a thing? I followed God’s gaze just in time to see several angels lower their heads just out of sight, so I could not see who they were.

**“Do you understand that punishment has only this one rational purpose: the *correction* of self-destructive rebellion? Do you understand that I have never articulated any other purpose for punishment, and that I *have* no other purpose?”**

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 23:13 Withhold not correction from the child: for if thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. 14 Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *When the purpose of God’s punishment is specified, it is always rehabilitation and restoration, Deuteronomy 28, Proverbs 19:18, 13:24, 22:15 23:13-14, 29:15, 17. God compares His purpose for punishment with that of loving parents, in Hebrews 12, concluding the chapter by calling Himself “consuming fire”.*

**“Do you understand that I take great delight in you, but not because of anything you have done for me, given me, or made for me, but only because I love you and love to watch you grow? Do you understand that I do not love you more than your screaming brothers?”**

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 29:17 Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Most of the time, children are as incapable of restitution to their parents as parents are to God. Therefore, punishment of human children virtually never has anything to do with “paying a debt” or repaying parents for services provided.*

*“In fact, do you understand that **only to the extent of My Love for them, can I have any motivation to punish them?**”*

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 12:7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God says His Love lives in His Punishment. He says it frontwards and backwards: not only does His punishment prove His love, but lack of punishment would prove lack of love.*

Sparky cleared his throat to ask a question. He looked really puzzled. “Uh, God, since You punish our lost brothers so much more than us, does that mean you love them so much more?”

God laughed. A few angels laughed, but others, including myself, found the point too plausible to easily dismiss. God laughed even more at our hesitation.

“I love you equally!” He assured us. “My Love/Fire punishes you equally. They suffer so much more, because they produce so much more resistance, so that My Love flows through them so much less. You provide me so much less to burn, which enables My Love/Fire to wash you clean, and to flow through you, lighting you up like lights.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*

“I subject all of you to these conditions in proportion to something, but do you understand what My punishment is proportionate to, if not to how much anyone hurts Me?”

A hand raised.

“Yes, Sarcamson?” God gave Sarcamson a warning look, which he didn’t heed.

“What *is* Your punishment proportionate to?”

We laughed at Sarcamson raising his hand, not to answer God’s

question but only to repeat it. Did Sarcamson do that on purpose? It is always hard to tell with him.

"I'm glad you asked." God responded. "Especially you, Sarcamson, because you help me illustrate what I mean about correcting a rebellious attitude." The host laughed.

"My punishment is in proportion to what it will take to heal rebellion. It is not for Me! Were I motivated by comfort for Me, I would kill the rebellious soul and make another one, as I already told you! Or do without! That would be *easier*! But I am motivated by Love.

"My goal is an attitude change, so that the soul will stop deliberately repeating mistakes, and in fact will become vigilant to avoid mistakes. That is why punishment must proceed in sufficient intensity to break the soul's '*spirit of rebellion*'. But not for Me."

Sparky asked, "What is going through their minds – what are they experiencing – when all we see is Your Fire Power swirling around them, scorching them as it tries to flow through them?"

God answered, "Part of the operation of the Fire is to bring upon them every single evil which they conspire to bring upon others."

**VerseScout:** *Luke 6:38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.*

"This makes it easier for them to empathize with their victims and reach the point where they cannot bear to wish such cruelty upon anyone – no longer for fear of retribution but out of compassion.

"These nuggets of compassion can potentially become chinks in their chains, eventually causing their chains to fall off, setting them free.

"The process of bringing upon them the evil which they conspire to bring upon others is of course painful itself, but nothing compared with the pain of a cracked and bleeding heart *capable* of bringing such evil upon others!

"But to the extent I see you already punishing yourself with sorrow over your mistakes, already alert to not making them again, I *quench* punishment. In fact, when I perceive you are actually sorrowful beyond what is necessary to achieve correction, I not only quench My punishment, but move the opposite direction: I encourage and comfort you, assuring you of My Love."

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 12:12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang*



down, and the feeble knees; 13 And make straight paths [Gr: walk erect] for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way [Gr: dislocated]; but let it rather be healed.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** After explaining to us that He punishes us because He loves us, God encourages us.

“I encourage those who are actually *too* repentant – so sorry that they become discouraged. Because too much sorrow can cripple a soul.”

**VerseScout:** Ecclesiastes 7:16 Be not righteous over much; neither make thyself over wise: why shouldest thou destroy thyself?

Romans 14:22 Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

2 Corinthians 2:7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. 8 Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm your love toward him.

“The difference is your intent. You do not intend to err. They do.

“You are sorry when you realize you made a mistake. It was an accident which you never want to repeat. They are proud, and especially proud when they think they ‘got away with it’.”

**VerseScout:** 1 Corinthians 4:5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels [Gr: βουλή boule, “volition, purpose”] of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

**VerseScout Relevant Report:** God judges our intentions, just as parents discipline and reward on the basis of a child’s “attitude”. Indeed, American criminal law requires, for a conviction, “criminal intent”. It is not necessary to prove that the accused meant to break the law, but if the accused can prove he did not intend the action with which he is charged, he will be found innocent.

Hope sprang within me as it occurred to me to ask, “But if the very purpose of fire is to correct, then You must expect that fire will fulfill its purpose! Meaning that our unhappy brothers will finally be corrected! Our fellowship restored!”

“Amen’s” were sprinkled throughout the excited applause. But God’s smile was not the smile of confirmation I expected.

Well, perhaps a smile of approval, but something in God’s eyes, something glistening, kept me from taking it as validation of my logic. I took it rather as approval of my intent.

I looked for my former dear friend Beelzebub. I saw him, and gazed at him with longing and anxiety.

God answered softly, slowly, sadly, "I offer purification, indeed. I offer love, light, truth, good, joy, freedom, victory over 'impossible' obstacles, purpose, and Myself, always.

"But you have seen your brothers reject all of these things, and continue rejecting them even at the cost of terrible pain.

"They have not forgotten the bliss which had been theirs! Yet they still reject it!

***VerseScout:** Hebrews 6:4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. (See also 10:26-31)*

"How is this possible, even for a moment? Yet it has happened, for many moments. We must ask, if they reject love, light, truth, good, joy, freedom, victory, purpose, and Me, even for a moment, what will happen between now and eternity to stop them from rejecting everything wonderful for ever?"

The possibility shocked and horrified me. I couldn't be satisfied. I had to press my question. "But they can't choose to suffer forever! They must inevitably succumb! Surely?"

God's answer was to turn away to gaze upon the fallen with deep longing and glistening eyes. "I will not crush anyone's will."

There was a long pause. "I don't want 'swordpoint conversions'. That's Beelzebub's specialty." God gazed long at Beelzebub.

"I will wait for love. No matter how long it takes."

"Will I ever again enjoy the fellowship of *any* of my beloved brothers?" I pleaded. I didn't want possibilities. I didn't want profound understanding. I wanted a clear, simple answer. And I wanted it to be "yes".

God turned again and answered quietly. "You can still communicate with them. Please make the most of it as if the answer to your question partly depends on it. Because it does."

The memory hit me like a Thunder Bomb that I was still putting off my talk with Beelzebub. Was God telling me that The Rebellion might be over by now, or at least its destruction reduced, had I gone to him earlier? Repentance and guilt flooded over me.

But God did not leave me wallowing in shame over the past. God took the opportunity of my shame to equip me for the future.

“Our mission is not simple”, God continued. “And I say ‘our’ mission because you really can help.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: 27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *It is common to think of God as so omnipotent that there is nothing we humans can contribute to Him of any value to Him, so it seems presumptuous to imagine there is anything we can do that God values.*

*But this parable shows God’s rejection of such thinking. Such thinking is exposed as an excuse for avoiding what God very much wants us to do.*

“You see, I have made the power of Choice as strong as my Love.”

“Why?” I asked. “Why did you do that?”

God smiled. “What distinguishes you from me is your distinct will. Your choice. I cannot extinguish your will without extinguishing you. I have made your wills strong enough to resist Me.”

“For how long?” I asked. I was not concerned that I, myself, might ever resist God! But I understood God’s point that he was talking only hypothetically about me but in earnest about the Lost.

“For forever, if you choose.”

It was eerie how God kept saying second person “you”, meaning me, rather than the more comfortable “they”, meaning The Lost.

“Unfortunately,” God continued, “some will never allow themselves to be purified, ever.” God looked sadly at Beelzebub. Beelzebub, startled, looked up, met God’s eyes, and then backed away, hissing. Once again the uncomfortable thought returned, that a lot could hinge on my having a good talk with Beelzebub.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 20:10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.*

God smiled at Beelzebub, and continued smiling as He returned to us. Although I understood His smile was an expression of His love for Beelzebub, and of His readiness to answer our questions, His smile during our meditations on the terrible torment of our fallen brothers was eerie.

My failing optimism was reduced to this last fleeting query: “Will *any* accept reconciliation?”

There was a long, awkward silence. This was no ordinary rhetorical question, because the correct answer was not at all clear. “You know, God”, I prodded.

“Do I? And you would like me to tell you? Whether or not I *can* answer that question, I *won't*. I am not even going to tell you whether I know. Comfort can only make you complacent, reducing in your imagination the urgency of the mission before us.

“Our mission is urgent! Even if their resistance were to end as I finish this paragraph, it would be urgent! They are suffering! We don't want them to suffer, even for a moment! On the other hand, if they are able to resist, even for a moment, what makes it any more likely that they will *ever* stop resisting?

“Yes, helping them choose love is costly to us. On the other hand, its very costliness deepens our love, because without cost, there is no love. The greatest Love is the choice to pay the cost of others' hate.”

***VerseScout:** John 15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

I asked God, “One of my unfortunate brothers told me that Your ability to be happy while You are torturing them proves how little Love You have for them. How can I answer him?”

God smiled even wider. “Tell my precious prodigal that for as long as he chooses to shut his eyes, he remains blind, and there is little I can do to heal his blindness without removing his power of choice.

“He can blame Me for his blindness, or he can open his eyes. The choice is his. If his pain seems to him something for which someone ought to be blamed, let blame go to the one who wills it so and resists all offers to heal it! Not the One who created the power to choose between pain and joy!

“And if pain is his choice, why isn't he thanking me for it, instead of blaming me?”

***VerseScout:** Deuteronomy 30:19 I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore **choose** life, that both thou and thy seed may live:*

*Joshua 24:15 And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, **choose** you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.*

*Proverbs 1:29 For that they hated knowledge, and did not **choose** the fear of the LORD:*

*Proverbs 3:31 Envy thou not the oppressor, and **choose** none of his ways.*

*Philippians 1:21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. 22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall **choose** I wot not. 23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: 24 Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.*

“Choice is Holy. It is what makes you ‘you’. I cannot remove any soul’s power to choose without making that soul cease to exist and turning it into another soul.

“I could make his brain see with his eyes closed, or I could force his eyes perpetually open, forcing him to see what he chooses not to. Instead I give him control over his eyelids so that he may choose.

“It is the same with his torment. I do not torture anybody! I offer Love and Life. He *chooses* to struggle against a hug. He *chooses* to scream at words of Life which correct the lies he prefers. He *chooses* to squirm against healing of the chemicals he has ingested. He *chooses* to create hate, and to wander along the shores of Death. Never mind the *consequences* of such choices: *how can anyone have joy while so choosing?!*

“Such choices are the *direct* cause of spiritual suffering and torture! It is impossible to suffer spiritually while choosing Love and Life, and it is impossible *not* to suffer spiritually while choosing Hate and Death!

“Meanwhile, how can I not be happy that my former friend has at least gotten for himself exactly what he has chosen? My preparations, that have made his terrible choice possible, without harm to you, have been immense, even for Me! I cannot help but be joyful that even with his terrible choices, all my backup systems are functioning exactly as I had planned, and he is getting exactly what he wants!”

Even when God points out what we have already seen, it is always so refreshing to have the jumble in our minds arranged into a sensible picture.

The Host was getting noisy. I perceived, though, that empathy for poor choosers was morphing into venting against poor choices.

“Choice is God’s Gift”, I heard behind me. “To choose failure is Hell’s wage!”

And, “Choice is Holy. Some choices are Hellish.”

I looked back to see a group of angels preparing wing stickers.

“Hate God = hug Hell.”

A thought occurred to me. I texted on my A-pod, “Choose trouble. You can always blame God.”

I looked up at God quizzically, thinking about His last point. Why would any soul choose Hell, and then blame God for creating it? I mean, doesn't the fact you *choose* something mean you deem it to be desirable? What then explains any soul's motivation to *blame* another for giving him what he *wants*?

At no point do these rebellious hearts see that where they are, they are by their choice?

I made eye contact with God and opened my mouth to ask. But before I could, His voice spoke within me as He smiled, “I will explain. But not now. You need to see more before you can understand my explanation.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 6:10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The dross of your gold will eat your flesh, James 5; indicating the Earthly gold you covet is a metaphor of the eternal gold which is your soul, and your love of Earthly gold is a buildup of impurity within your soul, which will eat your flesh as hot as any fire.*

Something in God's eyes suggested He was speaking from experience about rebellion. But there was never a previous rebellion! Was there? Angels never rebelled before. Does God mean God had such an experience before God created angels, When God Was Alone? How would such a thing be logically possible? Would God tell us about that period?

“But isn't there something You can do?” I asked. “Why do You allow their wills to restrain Your consuming Love? As if anything can restrain You! Their wills cannot restrain You unless You allow them to!

“Why don't you just wash over all their resistance, force them to acknowledge the Truth, and swaddle them in love despite their thrashings, until they wear out, and relax, and then remember how wonderful love feels, and be grateful for it again? Then you can bring them back Home!”

I understood that what I was asking, I had already asked. But I tried to dress up my question better, because I really didn't like God's previous answer. Especially the part that put part of the responsibility for what troubled me on my own willingness to talk to people like Beelzebub who really hate me now.

God repeated the same answer, with a bit more detail: “I have made your wills the glory of all my creation. They are so much the

essence of what constitutes 'you', or your 'souls', that to merely *crush* your wills would be to snuff you out of existence.

"I love your fallen brothers as I love you. I don't want to snuff them out of existence. To crush all their resistance until they remember how wonderful love feels, but at the expense of wiping their memories, against their will, of all the evil they have imagined and chosen, and then to bring them home, would be to bring home recreated souls after killing the original souls."

A question tugged at me which I dared not utter. But God turned to me and smiled, waiting – so, sweating heavily, I got it out. "I apologize for even thinking such a thing, because this idea is so incredible, so unlikely, so impossible, because it is so inconsistent with the omnipotence we all know is Yours! But you are describing Wills in a manner I have never considered before. By what you are telling us now, do you mean that these wills you have created are *out of your control*?"

God didn't answer. God looked like He was waiting for me to finish. But I had no more to say. But seeing only patience on His face, concerns bubbled up to my mind that I had no intention of stating. Until finally, they forced their way out of my mouth, triggering gasps all around me:

"If you can't control their wills, does that mean you are not Sovereign? Isn't the very idea that You are not Sovereign, blasphemy? Doesn't that demean Your Glory?"

God even smiled, He was so unperturbed by my question! He seemed pleased to have the question expressed in the starkest terms possible. As He has said, "A bold question invites a strong answer."

"I created wills *beyond* my control, but I do not allow them to get *out* of control. Robots are easy. Even *you* can create *robots*. Even *you* can manage robots so they do not get in each other's way. But the ability to create wills which can in turn create, and choose, and are not controlled, and yet which do not get out of control, and cannot do real harm to other wills, is the signature of Omnipotence.

"Of course, to create the power to choose is to create risk. I understood this when I created wills. But as I have already told you, without will, there can be no Love, no sacrifice of 'self' for the Body of which all wills are members, and therefore no ecstatic Joy.

"Robots cannot be programmed to experience these delights. They can be programmed to simulate them, but not to experience them. Only wills are capable of Love and Joy."

I gazed at Beelzebub. I remembered what he had been, and marveled how far he had fallen, and at how proud he yet professed to be

of his pathetic fall! What could a meeting with him achieve?

I asked, "Would it be better if Beelzebub had not been created?"

God answered, "Then he would never have experienced the delights of Me which he once knew! He served so faithfully, for so long! Was that not worth being created for? I cannot regret creating him! Life is such a precious thing, that even his pathetic life now is better than no life at all! And of course I am able to turn even his evil into good for others. Nevertheless, because of his own 'amazing' choices, his experience of existence is so miserable, that he often *wishes* he had never been created."

*VerseScout: Matthew 26:24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.*

God made an announcement.

"I am about to do something to make Love and Truth burn even hotter. I am going to formally repudiate all pretense of friendship with them or their cruel, irrational thinking. I am going to put a stop to any possibility that they might imagine I 'tolerate' their unholy 'religion'! I am going to make sure each one of them fully comprehends my disgust with their hypocritical sense of 'justice.'

"Yet even after I do this, don't expect big changes."

We couldn't let the question go. It burned still in our hearts. "Do you mean most will still resist You?"

God was as determined to *not* give us the answer for which we longed, that would have lightened the desperation we felt about talking to souls who were extremely determined to avoid us.

*"Meditate on what is truly incomprehensible about the fate the lost have chosen. Not how long they will resist the Joy of My Presence, choosing instead the torments of their imaginations; meditate on what could cause such resistance, even for a moment!"*

*"What could possibly harden a heart enough to feel 'offended' by My Offer of Eternal Life?"*

*"What could possibly close a heart to evidence that I am True, and that his 'religion' is a lie? A myth? And cruel?"*

*"What could possibly injure a heart so much that it becomes enraged when a 'God of Love' is quoted, and calls My words 'hate'?"*

*"What could possibly deaden a heart to not care that its religion of choice justifies cruelty to the innocent by saying they don't matter, and protection of cruelty by calling it 'legal'?"*



“How can they care so much whether they are *told* they are right, and so little about *becoming* right?

“How can they care more about what they *have a right to do*, than about *doing right*?!

“They want Me to ‘tolerate’ what they *‘feel’* is right, and ignore the proof that they are *wrong*!

“Their test of what is true is whether a claim ‘feels true’, not whether it can be proved.

“They insist it is not them, but *Me*, who is ‘offensive’, because I tell them the truth, and not their lies that are offensive, which they cannot stand to have refuted! They tell me I have no right to be so ‘offensive’! If I were ‘*loving*’, I would feed them lies! Truth is rude!

“They whine, when I challenge them with evidence, ‘that is your religion, but I have a right to my religion too.’ They thus make official their choice of a false religion, documented false by the evidence they ignore, over true religion in touch with reality.

“*They tell me, ‘Don’t you understand that when you say you are God and I am not, that offends me?’*

How can anyone be so discerning over trivial differences like wrong doctrines, the wrong wing color, or who live on the wrong side of a line, yet so undiscerning around hearts black with evil?

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 23:24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.*

“*How can anyone tolerate cruelty in the name of ‘The Rule of Law’ or ‘Tolerance’ or the made-up ‘Religion’ of the group to which they have delegated their conscience?*

“How can anyone blindly trust his group to tell him who to protect and who to persecute, in return for the group’s ‘amazing’ promise that *I* will bless him for obeying the group instead of Me?!

“*Explain how that can be, for even a moment! Before you can comprehend that, it is meaningless to try to comprehend how it can be, for all eternity.*”

“So now I am going to ‘offend’ them. I am going to proclaim how *they* have offended *Me*, along with Truth, Reason, Intelligence, everyone and everything decent! I am going to separate them from My alleged ‘tolerance’ and leave them in their Outer Darkness! I am going to answer their prayers – I am going to give them what they demand!”

**With that, God passed out T-shirts.**

We were excited! They had pretty neat slogans.

We pored over the T-shirts and picked out our favorites. A few stuck to my memory cells:

“You have a right to shoot yourself in the foot, and I have a right to point to your foot and scream.”

“You ‘feel’ you are right? You trust your feelings too much.”

“If you think your religious ideas can be ‘true for you’, whether or not they are *True*, I have a bridge in Brimstone I would like to sell you!”

“You think wrong can’t be wrong ‘cause it feels so right? Just wait till the consequences roll in, and see how ‘right’ they feel.”

“Here’s a really different way to decide what to believe: evidence!”

“You demand your right to not be offended by people telling you facts. I demand my right to state facts.”

“Your defense of your ‘religion’ is that you have a ‘right’ to believe it, in the face of reality? People who treat reality as an enemy wind up in the Funny House.”

**VerseScout:** *Mark 6:11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.*

*Isaiah 1:18 Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.*

*Acts 17:11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God doesn’t ask for blind faith, as every false religion does. God offers evidence, and appeals to reason. But when people refuse to hear evidence, or to think, there comes a point where God walks away, and advises us to.*

We put on our new T-shirts and went for a walk among our sad former family.

I just wish, if they must curse, that they would at least use their *own* name.

They point up at us and curse, spitting out disrespect, hatred, and – here’s the pathetic part – threats! Yes, threats! Threats which they obviously have no capacity to carry out!

They promise to do the most horrible things to us for torturing them with our – our what? Our continued existence? I guess. Nothing we do for them is right, we learn. Even after going to the trouble of putting on new T-shirts for them.

Their blasphemies flow on waves of hatred, daring us to respond in kind! The closer we come among them, the more I feel their pressure.

Reason suggests, “Do they not realize, that were I to but flick my great toe against them in just response to their blasphemies against my Love, that they would tumble in pain from new, fresh injuries? How dare they, in their vulnerable condition, blaspheme those much stronger, not to mention more innocent, than they?”

But love answers, “Violence only injures, while giving them the satisfaction that we, too, hate!”

So we just walk among them, let them read our shirts, hear their pathetic threats and accusations, and remember with awe the terror their words once produced in us.

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 2:1 Why do the heathen rage [to be tumultous], and the people imagine a vain thing [obsessed with worthless things]? 2 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, 3 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Is it possible for souls to spew such threatenings despite having no capacity to carry out their threats, against souls who do not hurt them in any way?*

*(Continued in Appendix F: The Heathen Rage)*

We still feel the waves of hate. But we love. We grieve for them. We cry for them. We stretch out our hands to them, which they try to bite and claw, (yes, even their fingernails are so unkempt that they have grown into claws), but they are so weak. So withered. So incapable.

Not incapable, by any means, of inflicting horrible pain, suffering, and torture! Just incapable of inflicting pain, suffering, or torture on anyone but themselves. So tragic.

“Let them experience the vanity of lying to others”, God decreed, “until they are saturated with it.”

I wrote to Sorrowful, a brother with whom I was especially close before he fell. He won’t talk to me now. I wonder if he will read my letter? (And if Sorrowful won’t talk to me, how much less Beelzebub?)

I wrote to him, “We have every encouragement to pray. We are poor, and sinful, and dying, and none can comfort us but God. At his throne we may find all that we want. We know not which is most wonderful, that God stoops to hear our prayers, or that [souls] are so unwilling to use so simple and easy a way of obtaining what they so much need.”

*[Ed: whether or not this paragraph was ever read by Sorrowful, it amazingly found its way into Barnes' Commentary, in its note on Matthew 18:35! Perhaps Barnes was inspired by Comunicus himself!]*

# Chapter 7

## Judgment

Jewstice spoke for many of us. “I would so much like to read the minds of my fallen former brothers as I am talking with them! I wonder if, then, I could be more helpful? But if not, I would just like to be able to face them without finding myself staring at such a senseless mystery!”

God responded, “Be patient. I will reveal every thought and deed of every soul, for the instruction of every soul. But not now. You must experience many more things before you will be able to understand what I reveal. For example, how will you understand what you read in another’s mind, before you can understand your own mind?”

“For now, remember that I understand every thought of every heart, but even My perfect understanding doesn’t always unlock the doors of hearts.

“Your ignorance is actually beneficial to them. I cannot plead with them to tell me what they are thinking, so that I may understand, because they know I already know and understand their thoughts better than they do. But you can.

“And when you ask them to explain their thinking, that helps them, *even when they do not answer you and pretend you have no right to ask because it ‘offends’ them*, because it causes them to think about what they are thinking – or about the fact that they are not thinking.

“If they realize nothing else, they realize you really don’t understand their reasoning, which puzzles them because they think they are sensible. So it causes them to do a quick check of their own brains to see if they are still plugged in. It may not take them long, standing there staring at the pulled plug, to invent an excuse for blaming *you* for your inability to make sense of their irrationality, but just those few moments of staring at the pulled plug accomplish what I cannot accomplish without you.

“This benefits them, because, you see, most of their problem is not *what* they are thinking, but that they are *not* thinking. Instead of reasoning from evidence, they are *imagining*.”

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 8:21 And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his*

*youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. (Also Ge 6:5 De 29:19 31:21 1Ch 29:18 Jer 3:17 7:24 9:14 11:8 13:10 16:12 18:12 23:17 Lu 1:51)*

I asked, “Do you mean You will actually show us all You know about each soul, so that we may better understand how You judge us? Have you recorded everything on Realograms?”

“I will do more than that”, God answered! “I will show everyone everything on *Reveal*-ograms, and *then I will authorize you to judge with me!*”

Astonishment, and trepidation at so great a responsibility, rumbled through the Angelic Host.

“I am not going to unilaterally impose My will on each and every soul for all eternity. You will review the evidence with Me, and we will not ‘close a case’ until each and every one of you is satisfied that My provision for each soul is the most beneficial possible under the circumstances.

“It is My Will that each soul understand the justice, appropriateness, and love of each provision for each soul, whether it be reward or punishment. This public review of all the evidence will not be conducted so that I may decide what should be done! I will do it for *you*.”

***VerseScout:*** *Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.*

*1 Corinthians 6:2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? 3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** *Judgment By Consensus would be consistent with the principle of Mat 18:15-17, which says that a judgment of excommunication should not be a unilateral decision of clergy, nor even the majority vote of a congregation, but should be the consensus of all the members. (Continued in Appendix G, Judgment By Consensus)*

“Yes, I know what judgment is just, fair, and merciful in each case. But at The Judgment, I will entertain objections. If anyone pleads for a more merciful sentence for someone than I suggest, I will consider it. We will all consider it, and discuss it until we all agree.”

**VerseScout:** *Exodus 32:11 And Moses besought the LORD his God, and said, LORD, why doth thy wrath wax hot against thy people, ...14 And the LORD repented of the evil which he thought to do unto his people.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *On Earth, God wants us to intercede for each other before Him. Why should we assume this precious characteristic of God will be forgotten on the official Judgment Day?*

*(Continued in Appendix H, Intercession on Judgment Day)*

“But be sure of this: you will understand! Your tears will be wiped away! You will see that all things are perfect, after all!

“I, who have created all things, have also created a Happy Ending!”

Such pandemonium ensued such as I have not seen since Beelzebub, before his rebellion, sang his first hit! Not that we could imagine how such horror could turn out well, but we believed God.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 21:4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*

*John 16:23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing [no questions]. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *How can our tears be wiped away in Heaven, as we are eternally reminded of the fact that more people are eternally suffering the agonies of Hell, including our own loved ones, than are with us in Heaven?*

*(“Many” in Hell: Galatians 4:27, Matthew 7:13, 22, 22:14, 24:5, 11, Luke 13:24, 2 Corinthians 2:17, Philippians 3:18-19, Titus 1:10, 16, Revelation 12:9. “Few” in Heaven: Matthew 7:14, 22:14.)*

*Consider that shed tears for the lost are an entrance requirement of Heaven, Ezekiel 9:4-6. Abraham could hear the screams of the lost from Heaven, Luke 16:24-25. The thief on the cross is in Paradise partly because he was troubled by the other thief’s blasphemy.*

Dear Diary: I was the last to leave. Some promises are so wonderful that they raise many questions. I walked home instead of flying, just to ponder them.

Our tears will be wiped away! God’s fire filled me at the very thought! I don’t doubt it will happen! In fact, something within me demands that it be true!

Of course, I can’t imagine how it will be possible. So now I will record my questions. But with no dread that this promise is wrong, but only anticipation to learn how it will become possible.

I can hear the screams of the lost from my mansion. I can see them in my memory. Will the barrier increase to block the sound? Will it wipe clean my memory?

That can't be it because God has clearly indicated he *wants* us to care, and indeed to help reach them. Will God change?

God even said we will share judgment with Him. We will participate in the fate of the Lost as well as of ourselves. Will God give us such sensational experiences only to then wipe our memories clean? Will God make us forget all the Lost for whom I sacrificed my concentration, writing, resources, and prayers, so I won't remember how terribly everything worked out?

Drunks pursue their amazing habits to forget all their troubles. Has God perfected that strategy?

God gives us whatever we ask, that our joy may be full.

Will this glorious condition be replaced with "pray for the lost, and when your prayers aren't answered, God will make you forget what you prayed for, that your joy may be full"?

But what shall we ask, regarding the Lost? Shall we ask God to *drag them back to God?* To wipe their wills clean, which, as God explained, would snuff them out of existence?

God has wiped clean that solution from my wish list.

But how can I be happy while my former friends are miserable?

*Will it become possible for us to become as happy that our sad brothers have exactly what they have chosen, as they are with their choices?*

I felt a dark spot being burned away which I had not even noticed. What darkness has grown so large in me that I can feel its burning?

Of course! I had gotten so involved in nailing down every detail of what is going to happen later, that I had taken my mind off the tragic resistance to God before me, *right here and now*, which I have some opportunity to help overcome.

*I am going to talk to Beelzebub.*

Soon.

I wrote God's Words in extra large glowing letters:

**"Meditate on what is truly incomprehensible about the fate the lost have chosen. Not *how long* they will resist the Joy of My Presence; meditate**



**on what could cause such resistance, *even for a moment!***

**“Before you can comprehend how that can be for even a moment, it is meaningless to try to comprehend how that can be, for all eternity.”**

# Chapter 8

## The Book of Life!

All of us had cried with God. We cried now not only for our lost loved ones, but for the Heart of God which, we now understood, had been broken for so long.

“Beelzebub, Beelzebub!” God had moaned, looking towards our former leader and encompassing his present followers in his thoughts. “How often I wanted to gather you under my wings, like a Seraphim gathers her Cherubim, but you would not!”

I have just *got* to try to meet with Beelzebub.

***VerseScout:** Matthew 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! 38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. 39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.*

We had all cried.

I was surprised at its effect on our joy. Our ecstasy was not the same. But it did not quite leave us. Rather, it deepened. It moved from emotion to something greater: a fullness.

Not that the suffering of our loved ones was what we needed to make our lives really full! Rather, the breaking of our hearts on their behalf stretched our hearts, by cramming them with greater love; and it was that which added fullness to our lives.

Or perhaps it was partly that, and partly because when tears tore off the veneer of superficial happiness we had enjoyed, exposing the bare love beneath it, we had a clearer glimpse of what it was that had really filled our lives.

God gave us a new word to refer generally to the entire mental and emotional process we had observed in our brothers: “evil”.

After our hearts had broken into tiny pieces and there were no more pieces big enough to break, God smiled upon us all with affection and announced, “Now we must take the next step in a plan which, through further thorns and trials, will finally lead to a Heaven in which every soul will be eternally safe from rejecting my Love!”

We all stared at God, of course. But that doesn’t cover our

reaction. We thought God might have more to say about His plan, but He just got busy, leaving us to wonder.

Wonder we did.

A Heaven safe from more rebellion? We hadn't even thought of the *possibility* of more rebellion! The rebellion we had already seen was unlikely enough! That it might happen AGAIN?

Yet the very moment in which so horrible a possibility invaded our relative calm brought with it God's Promise that He had not only anticipated the danger, but brought it under control before harm could occur! And what a promise! That never again will any soul leave Heaven for Hell!

Or, wait a minute: he specified "every soul [in] heaven". What is "heaven"?

But what "next step" might we anticipate? More education? Is there something more God can tell us that will better inoculate us against such a choice? Actually I couldn't comprehend ANY of the remaining faithful Host needing any further education! But God knows.

When I looked again, I saw that God was writing on some pages He was getting ready to bind into a new Book. Maybe the Book contained the information we needed to inoculate us against rebellion.

I came close. The hard cover, laying separately on the edge of His desk, said "Book of Life". In the pages I could see He was writing names. Except that I had never heard of ANY of the names I saw Him writing! I thought I knew all the Host! Yet God was writing down the names of souls I had not met!

I looked at the fly leaf. It explained that these are the countless names of the countless souls He would create on the Earth! Earth? What does that word mean? New souls? Baby brothers! We have never before had the thrill of watching a soul being created!

The fly leaf explains how every soul created will be entered into the book, meaning God will *offer* each soul Life. But no soul will be *forced* to accept it. It will be theoretically possible for any soul, by his choice, to have his name erased. "Theoretically possible", we told ourselves; but as we nervously eyed our fallen brethren, we wondered: would any of God's newly created souls actually *choose* not to live?!

**VerseScout:** *Exodus 32:31 And Moses returned unto the LORD, and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin, and have made them gods of gold. 32 Yet now, if thou wilt forgive their sin – and if not, blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written. 33 And the LORD said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book.*

*Revelation 3:5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white*

raiment; and **I will not blot out his name out of the book of life**, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

Revelation 13:8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not [any longer] written **in the book of life** of the Lamb slain **from the foundation of the world**.

Revelation 17:8 The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not **written in the book of life from the foundation of the world** [up through the moment the beast ascended from the pit], when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Modern translations are evenly divided on whether Revelation 13:8 means there are people whose names were never written in the Book of Life.

But Exodus 32:31 and Revelation 3:5 say names are entered in the Book of Life which can later be blotted out. This must mean that the names of everyone were originally entered in the Book.

*(Continued in Appendix I, the Book of Life)*

God has laid down His Book, but now He looks even busier. Why, in fact, I have *never* seen God concentrating so hard on anything! Now it looks like He's getting ready to say something. But whatever it is, it must be one of the hardest things He has ever had to say! What tension! What power is moving! What brightness is flashing!

What is that sparkling on His arms and legs? Why, I've seen that on my body and bodies of angels who work very, very hard, but never on God before! Why, those are beads of sweat! What could possibly be hard enough for God, to make Him exert Himself so? If God keeps working this hard for very long, He may actually need to rest afterward!

**VerseScout:** Luke 22:44 And being in an agony [just before Jesus was crucified] he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

Genesis 2:2 And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. 3 And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

Exodus 31:17 It is a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed. (Compare with Exodus 23:12, 2 Samuel 16:14.)

Isaiah 40:28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** When Jesus died for us was not the first time He exerted Himself for us. When He made the universe for us, that had

*to take infinite concentration and effort. He sweated as He prepared Himself to die for us; He very likely sweated as He prepared all creation for us.*

*It is common to assume Genesis 2:2 does not mean God actually rested in the sense of refreshing His tired body – it is commonly thought that such a conclusion would demean God, because full respect for God would assume nothing could come close enough to His capacity to tire Him in the least. Isaiah 40:28 is taken to confirm that reasoning. So 2:2 must mean God merely ceased his creating.*

*But the Bible says God “ceased” his creating at the beginning of the seventh day, and then adds that he “rested” the entire seventh day. The use of two distinct words tells us “rested” means something distinct from “ceased”.*

*Exodus 31:17 adds that God was “refreshed” in the same way that people are “refreshed”. Some translations say “rested”, “relaxed”.*

*Anyone inclined to think this demeans our respect for God’s omnipotence, only needs to take another look at the virtually infinite accomplishments of those six days! DNA alone should restore anyone’s respect for God’s majesty!*

*However, no one doubts that when Jesus suffered on the cross, that was very taxing, even for God. We also have the Parable of the Talents in Matthew 25, in which a requirement of Heaven is that we work to accomplish twice as much as we thought we could. Can God desire that quality in us, and not have it in Himself?*

*Isaiah’s declaration that God does not “gasp” for breath, the literal Hebrew meaning of “weary”, justifies rejection of a scenario in which God had to check Himself into a hospital for extreme exhaustion.*

*But the popular assumption that God was not tired even a little simply is not in the Bible. The assumption certainly seems reasonable, but it falsely suggests that Jesus on the Cross was the first time God suffered for us. To the contrary, the very existence God gave us, and the glories of the universe God gave us to dominate, was costly. Our debt includes that cost, also.*

Now He looks like He is opening His Mouth to Speak, while simultaneously He is picking up the components of the Book of Life and is beginning to bind them. As He takes a breath, all power and glory seems to be sucked into His lungs, and now He exhales! His voice roars with all the Fire of the Almighty! As it sweeps all creation, a throbbing and glowing possesses every particle of our bodies! I see it in the other angels, too, both here and in Hell.

Are we going to die? Are we going to be reborn? What is happening? I saw Beelzebub, terrified. Why have I put off meeting with him? Is it too late?

Our eyes met. In his eyes were a plea for reassurance. In mine was apology for not offering it sooner. What could I do? It was too noisy for words.

I waved at Beelzebub. I waved and smiled a smile of longing for fellowship, like in the old days. He half smiled in return. Gone, for the first time in so long a time, was his scheming, self-confident, in-control, calculating look. I had found him in a vulnerable moment. He was terrified! He was sure his time was up! Would there be another time like this again? But this is a bad time to talk. Way too noisy.

“Time”? What is this new word in my vocabulary? What does it mean?

All the Host looks like it is waving; like it is all part of a great flat surface marked with moving ripples. Nothing to do but watch, and ride this one out!

God’s Voice continues to roar! Blinding light flashes from His Mouth! We are forced to bury our eyes in our arms! For a long time – that word again – the roaring and light flows around us. But finally a new force pulls us “down”! What in the world is “down”? What is “world”?

We are aware that the terrible light has dimmed, so we open our eyes towards the source of this unidentified force. And there, hanging in nothing, is the hugest thing I had ever imagined! And yet it was such a tiny thing! How could a thing be so huge, and simultaneously so tiny? What new rules govern this new creation of God?

There is something familiar about that thing.

I must have passed out of consciousness. Here I am again. Awake. Fully alert. The roaring is gone, the blinding light dimmed.

The rolling waves have stopped, of the Host, but now the Host seems frozen in one of those waves, a majestic grand complex slope, rounded – no, words fail. But at the center of its focus was the huge sphere I saw before I passed out.

There was something fundamentally different about this sphere. Yet familiar. Well, yes, it was different *in appearance* from any sphere God had previously shown us. But its difference was more than mere appearance. It had something to do with that first impression I had, that it seemed huge, yet at the same time small. “Huge” and “small” came into my vocabulary with its creation. What is this new way of thinking, of attributing “size” – another new word – to created things?

Could it be – ? Nah.

That sphere. And the one growing in God’s Workshop – ? I had to know. I flew quickly back to God’s Workshop. *The ball of tears was gone.*

*Framing the sphere was the Book of Life, as if the sphere were the picture on the cover of the Book.*

# Part 2: CREATION

## Chapter 9

### The Beginning of Time

0 AT (After Time) The Beginning! Before, there was only God, and we swam in God. There was no “place” distinct from any other “place”. Now God has made a “place” distinct from God’s presence in general. He has named it “Earth”.

Some new force from this huge, yet small, place draws us “down”. We call it “gravity”. It seems related to the wave upon which the Host now travels.

God distinguished a second “place”: “Heaven”, where God’s glory is most visible, and where we have our homes. Not that there was no Heaven before; but now it is a “place” distinct from this other “place”.

This feat required the creation of a new substance called “matter”. It is composed of particles which are not as versatile as Lovatons. But through their rearrangement and movement, they can form hundreds of distinct “elements”. Or they can become “energy”. (Although not pure spiritual energy like what intelligence and love are made of; just physical energy.)

Along with Space, God has begun Time. Time, along with gravity, warps the space around the Earth. When we have more leisure, it will be great fun to just slide down its slopes, and then fly back up to slide down them again.

But God is keeping us very busy! We are working now in this new “Time”, which requires of us that we complete our tasks “on time”, “before we run out of time”, and “quickly”.

What strange, new, wonderful concepts! I wondered if this “Time” were part of God’s plan to fill Heaven with souls who would never choose to leave?

In respect to this invention, (Time), which offers a wonderful application in the orderly arrangement of diary entries, I have gone back through previous diary entries and marked them “BT”, for “Before Time”, to distinguish them from what has come.

When there was no space but God, who is infinite “mass” and infinite energy, that which later became “time” stood “still”. There was no

“time” other than Eternity. But we now understand that The War, when our lost brothers retreated from God, was when time began to move, *relative to them*.

God made matter, space, energy, and gravity out of His Breath. God breathed this whole universe into existence.

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:2-11 Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity. [Literally, in Hebrew: “Breath of Breaths, all is Breath.”]*

*Genesis 2:7 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Hebrew word הֶבֶל (Hebel, translated “vanity” in the KJV), v. 2, literally means “breath”. Strong’s defines it: “Emptiness or vanity; figuratively something transitory and unsatisfactory.” This is a huge mistake! This verse is not a whine of dashed hope, but a shout of joy! To say “the universe is made of breath” is to imply its source: The Breather! The universe compared to God is like breath compared to a Breather. This is no cry of despair for those whose trust is in God!*

*Hebel means virtually the same as the Greek word πνευμα (pneuma) which KJV translates “spirit” in the New Testament.*

*We have no theological or scientific reason to doubt that God quite literally breathed the universe into existence, just as Genesis says God “breathed into [Adam’s] nostrils the breath of life.”*

In that way He guaranteed perfect balance between variety and stability. Stability, because all that is was exhaled from Him, giving uniformity to its composition. Variety, because with each successive breath the elements come out rearranged enough for us to see continual movement and change.

Too little variety would have bored us. Too much would have hopelessly confused us. God gives us the perfect balance, resulting in endless beauty and adventure.

God’s cycles of breathing became the model for all matter and all systems created with it. As breaths are exhaled, then inhaled, endlessly, even so electrons orbit around nuclei, sound spreads in waves, and waters circulate around the Earth.

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:4 One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh: but the earth abideth for ever. 5 The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose. 6 The wind goeth toward the south, and turneth about unto the north; it whirlleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. 7 All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the*



*rivers come, thither they return again.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Translators turn these verses, beginning with verse 2, into Nihilism out of step with the whole rest of the Bible. GW and ISV say “all” is “Absolutely pointless!” ERV and NIV: “Everything is so meaningless.” BBE: “All is to no purpose.” CEV: “Nothing makes sense! Everything is nonsense.” “Life is useless, all useless” is the translation of the version named, ironically, the Good News Bible.

Perhaps the confusion is over the word “all” in verse 2. Even if **הכל** had some Nihilistic meaning, like “vanity”, “All is vanity” does not mean God is vanity, or breath: in ordinary speech, God is the understood exception to the phrase “all is \_\_\_\_.” For example, “all is lost” does not mean God is lost. When the Second Law of Thermodynamics states that all systems degenerate from the complex to the simple, the understood exception is God. “All”, like “everything”, is ordinarily understood to mean “all **things**”, by which we understand “all **CREATED** things”, which we know does not include the Creator.

Knowing that **הכל** really means “breath” clarifies the hope embedded in these verses. As amazing, incredible, and beautiful as we find our universe to be, enabling us to do such wonderful, interesting things, our ultimate hope is in Someone as much more substantial than the entire universe as a breather is than his breath!

What glory! What beauty!

God’s Breaths proceed, one after another, forever, with almost no variation in their elements but much beauty and variety in their configurations from one to the next. In the same way, the waters comprising this beautiful planet vary little in their elements, but display so much variety and beauty in their ever-changing configurations, as gravity compresses them, that we cannot help but just stare at them continually, praising God in wonder!

**VerseScout:** Ecclesiastes 1:3 What profit hath a man of all his labour which he taketh under the sun? ...8 All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing. 9 The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. 10 Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. 11 There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** The pessimist looks at the cycles of nature and sees meaninglessness – an antique record stuck in a worn out groove. A normal healthy human looks at sunrises and sunsets and sees incredible, endless beauty; always the same elements, but arranged with infinite gorgeous variety.

Verse 3 is not some rhetorical question to which the presumed answer is

*“life is meaningless”, but rather it frames the question which the entire book answers. It is like a book title or subtitle. It introduces the topic of the book. Verses 4-11 describe the cycles of nature, which are like the oscillation of breath.*

*(See Appendix J for “What Matter is Made Of” (Ecclesiastes)”, a study of key words in Ecclesiastes, and a positive interpretation of its themes.)*

God made matter by exhaling His Breath from His Holy Spirit. But God did not, then, abandon His Breath to let it survive on its own. He provided that the matter formed from His Breath would be sustained by His Holy Spirit, which is the Breath of Life of matter, and the hope and desire of all consciousness.

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:14 I have seen all the works that are done under the sun; and, behold, all is vanity [breath] and vexation [Heb: רָצוּחַ r@uwth: longing for, striving after, grazing upon] of spirit [Heb: רוּחַ ruwach: Breath of His Mouth in Ps 33:6].*

*Psalm 33:6 By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.*

*Romans 8:20 For the creature [creation] was made subject to vanity [without profit], not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope,*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The phrase “vexation of spirit” means longing for the Word of God, or feeding upon the Spirit of God.*

**“Vexation”** רָצוּחַ means longing for, striving after, grazing upon, “an aspiration or desire one wants badly enough to actively pursue” according to the Dictionary of Biblical Languages. The masculine form of the word means to graze upon. 1 Kings 5:3.

**“Spirit”** רוּחַ means God’s omnipresence in Psalm 139:7, the Word spoken by God that created the earth in Psalm 33:6, the Word by which Jesus will slay the wicked in Isaiah 11:4, the Breath of Life in Genesis 6:17. (For more detail, see Appendix J.)

**Day one – Evening** In the center of vast empty space, through which we can see clearly and easily, from one end to the other, God has created a tiny/huge ball of solid water. It is rotating in relation to the space. The Spirit of God is moving across the rotating watery Earth, making the final adjustments on His next move.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. 2 And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.*

*2 Peter 3:5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing [Gr. “brought into*

existence”] *out of the water* and in [Gr. “through (the channel of the act)”] *the water*:

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Could the Earth have been formed out of a ball of water? That is what 2 Peter 3:5 clearly says in the Greek, according to the Albert Barnes Commentary of the New Testament in 1868 even though Barnes found the idea incredible, living as he did before very much understanding of how fusion could turn water into all other elements. Dr. Russell Humphreys confirms the possibility using General Relativity calculations. (Continued in Appendix K, The Universe was Made out of Water)*

The space near and inside the Earth was seriously warped. It was amazing to observe the effect of this warping on the speed of physical processes, like electrons rotating around their nuclei.

I did a simple experiment. I stood in the very center of the Earth, and had Rostufus stand at the very edge of the space. I counted the orbits of hydrogen electrons around their nuclei out loud to Rostufus, while he counted them out loud to me. He did all the work! Rostufus counted a few trillion orbits before the electron I was counting made it around its nucleus once!

(We chose the electron orbits of Hydrogen rather than Oxygen, because one of those little things whizzing around such a tiny space at 1,300 miles an hour is dizzying enough to count, without having to keep track of eight!) [Translator note: I could not understand the units in Comunicus’ diary, so I substituted the speed of electrons today.]

We repeated the experiment at many points between, and confirmed that time travels slower, the closer one is to the center. In other words, the closer one is to infinite mass, the slower time crawls. Trillions of times slower, at The Beginning!

**VerseScout:** *Daniel 2:21 And he changeth the times and the seasons: ... he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding:*

*2 Samuel 22:10 “...he bowed the heavens...”*

*Job 9:8 “...spreadeth out the heavens...”*

*Job 26:7 “He stretcheth out the North [Heb: “the hidden”] over the empty place [“desolation”, a good word choice for space] and hangeth the earth upon nothing”*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Bible says at least 16 times that God “stretched out” the Heavens, meaning the universe was previously less “stretched out” than it is now.*

*How much has God stretched the universe? Considering that on day three there were no stars and day four there they were, the stretching must have been pretty dramatic – enough to significantly affect time.*

*The meaning of “times” in Daniel 2:21 is broad enough to possibly refer to this.*

*The evolutionists’ beloved Big Bang Theory agrees that the universe stretched out from a single point suddenly, although evolutionists assume the Earth was not at the center of it, so they assume its formation happened ages after the Big Bang instead of at its beginning.*

*Dr. Russell Humphreys, with his background both in General Relativity and the Bible, shows the impact on time from the alternating Black Hole and White Hole conditions of the universe on the First Day, as he explains how distant starlight got to us from stars which today are 20 billion light years away.*

*On one point, the Bible and Big Bang scientists agree: those stars didn’t start 20 billion light years away from each other! (Continued in Appendix L, Starlight on a Fast Track.)*

Of course, Rostufus and I are one with God, who is more infinite than mere mass can ever get, so we were outside the five dimensions of time and space anyway. Otherwise we couldn’t have done the experiment.

**VerseScout:** *Isaiah 34:4 And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, and as a falling fig from the fig tree. (Compare with Isaiah 40:22, God unrolled the universe like unrolling a tent to set it up for living in.)*

*Revelation 6:14 And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.*

*Matthew 24:21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report: Five dimensions?** *The three dimensions of space, as we know it, are commonly called height, width, and length. But the physical heavens can be rolled up like a roll of paper. This means there must be some fourth spatial dimension, not counting time, wherein the three-dimensional space we know about is thin. Although we as yet have no perception, observation, or experience of such a dimension, general relativity calculations deal with it comfortably. (p. 67, 95, “Starlight and Time”, by Dr. Russell Humphreys, Ph.D. pub. Master Books, 1994.)*

*Science encourages Bible believers to take these passages literally, since science, while unable to add to our understanding of this additional dimension, is adamant that it exists. Albert Barnes, writing in 1868, though normally faithful to every “jot and tittle” of the Bible, wrote of the rolling up of the Heavens, “it never can literally occur.” He takes the turmoil as symbolic of mere political upheaval.*

*But what if God literally means what He says? What if literally “ALL the host of heaven” (all the stars) “shall be dissolved” and “shall fall down”? Does that describe the collapse of the universe into a massive Black Hole? (The*

*traditional interpretation is that a few mere “falling stars” or comets are described!)*

*Whether that is the correct interpretation of God’s plans or not, we should be cautious about saying of what God has written “it never can literally occur.” What God did once, in two days, He probably remembers how to do again! Not that the scenario described in this book is now Gospel, but everyone must agree that the Bible, interpreted literally, says on day three there were no stars but on day four there they were. And Revelation says on one day there will be stars, and the next day they will be gone, which is pretty clearly a reversal of what God did at Creation.*

*If the literal interpretation is the correct one, it would certainly explain why Jesus calls those future days worse even than the days of Noah’s Flood!*

We found electron orbit counting a practical way to compare time’s varying rates under varying gravitational conditions. Since gravity is exactly proportional to the speed of time, this standard allows us to compare the rates of time and gravity at several locations. We used Earth Surface Time (EST) as a standard.

I should say, we *tried* to use EST as a standard. Almost immediately we found it was slowing down, as Earth’s diameter began shrinking, its waters compressed by its enormous gravity. Although we had to continually recalculate EST, it remained a useful standard.

(Fourth Day Note: After the Earth was made so much smaller, by stripping it of the rest of the universe, I have come back to earlier diary entries to record comparisons. The gravity on the Earth’s surface on the first day was 300,000,000,000,000,000 times stronger than the Earth’s surface gravity on the fourth day. I have decided these smaller numbers will make this Diary easier to read than the charts we recorded, on the First Day, of hydrogen electron orbit counts.)

The more the Earth collapsed, the more the pressures increased. The molecules of water in the center, which were under the most pressure, were the first to change. The simple arrangement of two hydrogen atoms and one oxygen atom, in each water molecule, broke apart and became ionized.

The next thing to change was the tearing apart of nuclei into neutrons and protons. We saw that the way things were moving, the next result of greater pressures would be the tearing apart of basic particles, creating a dense plasma of gluons and quarks, the particles of atoms nearly touching each other, in contrast with the vast space that separated them when the water was at its normal temperature and condition.

(Fourth Day Note: when not compressed unnaturally by gravity, atoms have so little matter in them that if an atom were as big as a tree,

its matter would only be about the size of an acorn, including its nucleus in its center, and its whizzing electrons. And the empty space between atoms is even greater.

*(VerseScout Plagiarism Alert: When you read scientific words and concepts woven into this story which the author has never heard of and still has no idea what they are, they were probably borrowed from "Starlight and Time", by Dr. Russell Humphreys, Ph.D. pub. Master Books, 1994. Dr. Humphreys assumes no responsibility for the result.)*

## Morning

As this process began, God smiled and told us He was going to create something wonderful! Then he looked back down at the receding waters, and commanded, "Let There Be Light!" God's Word produced a change in the atomic structure of the water which, encouraged by the spiraling pressures, caused many of the atoms to explode with great force, sending out rays of a new kind of heat and light!

Unlike the light from God's Face, this new light is made from certain water particles, and it interacts with certain other water particles. But its energy is not infinite, like the light from God's Face, so whenever a photon interacts with a particle, its journey ends – or it bounces away in another direction. Therefore, the more dense the material which light strikes, the more quickly all the light is stopped. In other words, on the other side of dense material, this new light cannot reach, leaving dark shadow. How unlike the light from God's Face, which instantly reaches every atom, and causes it to shine – not just to reflect light, but to itself become a source of energy rays!

***VerseScout:*** Revelation 1:13 ...the Son of man,...14 ...his eyes were as a flame of fire; ....16 ...and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

Revelation 21:23 And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. ....25 ...there shall be no night there.

Genesis 1:3 And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. 5 And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** The sun was not created until the fourth day, yet light was created the first. If the source of the first day's light was not the sun, what other possible source of light could there have been?

*Theory One:* After the sun goes out, light will be provided by The Lamb.

*Why not, also, before the sun was created? This same Lamb created the sun, John 1:1-5, Hebrews 1:2, Psalms 136:5, Proverbs 3:19, so He certainly understood how to shine.*

*Problem: the light of the Lamb, after the sun dies, will never go out, as contrasted with the light of the First Three Days, which was broken by dark nights. If the light of the Lamb is the source of light, what could account for darkness? Does God's Face turn on and off? Maybe He gets tired and rests, and half closes His eyes, and that makes the light go out?*

*Theory Two: Although the Light from God's Face surely shone for the angels before God created the Heavens and the Earth – surely angels were not blind – perhaps that light is not normally visible to physical eyes made of matter. Therefore Genesis was concerned with the new light source which humans would need. Although the sun wasn't created until the fourth day, light of similar quality would have existed from the first day, intermittently, if indeed the universe began as a giant ball of water. All matter emits energy. We do not call most of it "light", because it is not in the part of the spectrum which is visible to human eyes, or it is not bright enough for our eyes. But perhaps with angels' eyes we could see it.*

*Theory Three: What Comunicus wrote actually happened.*

This new light is slow! I can almost walk that fast! I wonder if it is fast enough to ever reach from one side of the Earth to the other? It is going to have to hustle, to make it while there still is the other side, the way the Earth is collapsing, faster than light! As the Earth collapses, its rotation increases proportionately.

(Fourth Day Note: In the Beginning, the diameter of the Earth was two Light Years. About 12,000,000,000,000 miles. It would have taken six years for light to circle the globe once. By contrast, the Earth, after the rest of the universe was stripped away from it, shrank to a scant 8,000 miles in diameter, around which light could circle almost 8 times in one second if light could shine in a circle.)

Light began first in the very center, and steadily spread outwards, as pressures further out reached the pressures which had triggered this process. One byproduct of this process was over a hundred new elements besides water!

By the time the Earth had completed about a quarter of a complete revolution since its initial creation, the light reached the surface! What a glorious display! It blazed a long time! Of course, time itself took a long time!

(Fourth Day Note: as measured by EST – Earth Standard Time, it took the Earth the same time to complete one revolution, on the First Day, as it did after the Fourth Day. Except that after the Fourth Day its speed of rotation was constant, but on the First Day it began slowly and gained speed as it compressed.)

The gravity of Earth was so strong, that the light could not travel very far away from it before gravity pulled the photons back to crash again into the Earth. We had to be within that distance to see it at all. But when we swam on the surface, we could see the light coming up through the water beneath us, in every color, as well as the photons raining down on us from up above. What a show! It gave the illusion of a sky which was one giant fireball, hovering over an ocean which actually was atop another giant fireball! Because Earth was dark from a distance, and because of the way its gravity warped space, we dubbed it a "Black Hole".

**The Light Horizon.** At one point we took a walk to measure how far the farthest photons were traveling before arcing back. (Fourth Day Note: the calculation came out to 450 million light years.)

As we strolled right up to the line from outside, and stepped over it a ways, continuing our conversation with angels at the edge of space, a surprising phenomenon became apparent.

Our friends at the edge told us that as we approached the line, it looked like we had completely stopped, and that time around us had completely stopped, too! As we got to the line, they said we looked to them as if we had simply turned red and disappeared!

We, conversely, told them they looked as if time for them was racing towards infinite speeds, the closer we got to the line! But then after we crossed the line and looked back, it looked to us as if time, for them, was going backwards at infinite speeds! As we walked farther inside the line, their time appeared to slow down to almost the same speed as our own, but still in reverse!

It was so much fun, that most of the Host, when we were on break, took their turns racing, walking, or jumping across the line, while friends watched from the edge of space and the center of the Earth.

What good times! Such laughter and frolicking, against so beautiful a backdrop! An experience to remember!

God watched us enjoying the Light, and the other wonders that attended it. He turned to the Light, enjoyed it for a "long time", and said "It is good!"

At least Hell's angels allow God the credit for light. But they say it is evil, and God did it only to punish them! They say they loved the darkness, and God took from them the one thing they loved!

Actually they could hardly see it. God had moved Hell to the Outer Darkness. I'm not sure how they even knew about light. Apparently a few photons stuck to us while we were playing around, and fell off while we were checking up on them.

Light is really quite a remarkable invention. And complicated. The



First Day was spent not just shining, but carefully helping infuse all matter with the Light it needed to hold together. We found it miraculous, in any case, that matter was able to hold together! But while we were merely studying it and running errands, God was the one doing it.

**VerseScout:** *John 1:4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men. ....9 That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.*

*Colossians 1:17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.*

As I reflected on these things, I just stopped and stared, for a “long time”, at God working. Sure, we already knew God was infinitely powerful and creative. But the more I comprehended of the majesty of this day’s events, the more respect I had for infinity, and the more awe I had at the ease and grace with which God stretched it!

God can do all that, and yet He still has time for me? God is that awesome, and yet He still loves me?

Meanwhile, the collapse was concentrating gravity so much, that light from the interior could no longer reach the surface. The Earth was dark again. Day Two had begun.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:2 ...darkness was upon the face of the deep.... 5 And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. ...8 And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The first day began in darkness; then light was created, so that the first day consisted of evening and morning, or night and day.*

*The second day likewise began in darkness, and light appeared midway through it, so that the second day likewise consisted of first night, and then day.*

# Chapter 10

## Days 2-4: The Universe

**Day two – Evening** We sensed that what we were watching was not just some pretty ball of water. We anticipated that each tiny section of that water had a purpose beyond just being water. We saw what much of it had turned into already, and we braced for more surprises.

After we had been enjoying the light show quite a while, God smiled at us, and said to the Earth, and to the Heavens around the Earth, “Let there be an expansion in the middle of the waters, dividing the waters below the expansion from the waters above the expansion.”

***VerseScout:** Genesis 1:6 And God said, Let there be a firmament (Heb: properly, an expanse, i.e. the firmament or (apparently) visible arch of the sky) in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.*

As God concluded His commandment, He lifted His finger off space, which then immediately expanded faster than I could throw a halo!

Literally!

The frontiers of space – of Heaven – exploded!

The effect on the Earth was that its contraction instantly reversed. Instead of matter being sucked in more tightly by gravity, matter was being blown back out by water pressure. All the “Black Hole” conditions of the first day reversed. Now we call it a “White Hole”.

The water was expelled in three distinct layers.

First, the water at the surface, which had undergone no atomic transformation but remained water, spread out in an even layer surrounding the expanding mass. (The Outer Darkness remained beyond it.) We began calling it the Waters Above.

Second, the water around the middle of the Earth, which had become a fiery mass through the fusion of simple elements such as hydrogen and helium, expanded outwards into the new “expanse” between the waters above and the waters below.

It did not all stay together in a single mass. Rather, it began breaking apart into xillions of individual fiery masses, at considerable distances from one another. We began calling it the Lower Heaven.

Third, the water at the center of the Earth, which had undergone

the most transformation, into hundreds of new elements, (including some water which had not been transformed), stayed at the center. It immediately cooled as pressures subsided. We began calling it the Waters Below.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:7 And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. 8 And **God called the firmament Heaven.** And the evening and the morning were the second day.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Notice that the firmament, with water both below and above it, is called “Heaven”. But on the First Day, the space above all the Waters was called Heaven.*

*The only way it would be possible for the same “Heaven” to have been above all the waters on the first day but below some of the waters on the second day would be if the waters which became the “waters above” rose up through Heaven so that the same space which was above the waters on day one, was between the Waters Above and the Waters Below on day two.*

*This would be a reasonable assumption if that “space” were the Earth's atmosphere. Then the “waters below” would be oceans, and the “waters above” would be clouds.*

*But Genesis 1:14 says the sun, moon and stars are “in” the firmament. (The Hebrew agrees with the KJV.) Certainly the sun, moon and stars are not “in” the Earth's atmosphere!*

*Can we read “in” as “looked like they were ‘in’ to cave men”? Or as “were actually above, but were visible through”?*

*Not if we take the Word of God literally. However, if we theorize that the entire universe began as a ball of water, whose interior was stretched, leaving the water in the center and the outside separated by the expanded Heaven, then we theorize that the sun and stars are literally “in” the firmament.*

*This cosmology (theory of how the cosmos began) of Comunicus, really quite different than the cosmologies taught by newspaper scientists, finds agreement in “Starlight and Time”, a book by General Relativity scientist D. Russell Humphreys, Ph.D. (1994, Master Books, Inc., PO Box 726, Green Forest, Arkansas, 72638.) The book offers enough math to interest the most advanced mathematician, enough Scripture to interest the most serious Bible scholar, and enough plain language to interest the most average reader.*

*Among the points of agreement between Humphreys and Comunicus are the size of the sphere of water necessary, the distortion of time during black hole or white hole conditions, and the distance, and time-warping properties, of what scientists call the “Event Horizon”, and which Comunicus calls the “Light Horizon”. Of the Event Horizon's time-warping properties, Humphreys writes, “It appears to be another ‘trade secret’ of general relativity, unpublicized by the adepts, that black hole theory supports this astonishing possibility.” (page 110.)*

**The Light Horizon in Reverse.** The waters were expelled with such

force that even the powerful light of the clusters of water in fusion could only shine a short distance towards the center, before the photons arced back towards the outside.

Light behaved as if gravity had gone into reverse, and now light could shine in only one direction – out! The Light Horizon, the line beyond which light could not at first reach, 450 million light years from the Earth, was in reverse, allowing light from the center to flood outwards but not allowing light from the outer reaches in. So the Waters Below, in the center, which now we began calling Earth, remained dark.

***VerseScout:** Genesis 1:7 And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. 8 And **God called the firmament Heaven....***

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** Notice that Comunicus applies the name “Earth” to a smaller mass after the second day than at the beginning. He writes that originally, “Earth” meant a ball of water two light years in diameter out of which came the entire known universe; but after the second day it meant a tiny portion of that mass that was only one 22<sup>nd</sup> of a light second in diameter.*

*The Bible certainly did not prepare mankind for those dramatic proportions, before mankind had learned how massive stars, suns, and constellations are compared to our “tiny” planet. And the Bible does not say (nor does it deny) that the suns, stars, and planets were made out of any of these “waters”. But it does clearly say the “waters” were together before the second day, and that the Earth was stripped of the “waters above”, which left the Earth smaller that it was originally.*

The Light Horizon began “slowly” moving towards the Earth as the Waters Above rushed out to meet it.

The farther the Waters Above soared away from the center of the Earth, the faster time, and light, traveled in their vicinity. The relationship between the speed of light and the speed of time remained constant: 186,000 miles per second. But a trillion seconds passed at the edge while only one passed in the center, at first, although that ratio began equalizing.

The Light Horizon remained the favorite playground of The Host while on break. Now, as I walk towards it, from inside, friends out at the edge can see me as clearly as when I am across it. But I can’t see them until I reach it. When I am across it, I can still see floods of light racing towards me from the Earth, and I can see that light reflected off my friends farther out.

As soon as I can see them, I see that time where they are is racing, millions of years to my minutes, but at least it is going the correct direction (forwards). As I approach them, their time appears to me to slow

down, until it matches mine when I reach them.

But my friends tell me that from their perspective, while I was starting from inside the Light Horizon, time around me seemed to be going backwards, but slowed down as I neared the Horizon, until it completely stopped as I crossed it. Then my time seemed to them to reverse, resuming the correct direction, and to speed up until it finally reached normal speeds as I reached them!

Back in the center, after several hours of darkness, the plasma cooled as pressures decreased, until atoms formed again.

## Day two – Morning

As clusters of fiery waters thinned out and separated, the expanse became transparent. At the same time, gravity lessened, allowing light to shine farther back towards the separating center. No light beyond the Light Horizon could get to the center, but light from fiery masses very near the very center could reach the center.

It was glorious, to watch how dramatically, how quickly, parts of the center cooled, once the enormous pressure and gravity was reduced! It was glorious also, to see what interesting elements had been formed from the pressurized waters, which were now cooling and taking on interesting shapes.

Of all the displays, how beautiful were the colors! The black and ultra-violet of the expanding Waters Above, the reds, oranges, and yellows of the fiery clusters between the waters, and the greens, blues, and browns reflected from the hardening minerals and cooling waters in the center!

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:6-8 And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.*

*Genesis 1:20 And God said, Let the waters bring forth...fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *An earlier VSRR has already presented some Biblical evidence that the “firmament” means interstellar space (the outer space between the stars). But the traditional view is that the “firmament” is earth's atmosphere: the waters below are the oceans, and the waters above are the clouds. Carl Baugh thinks it was a cloud canopy like on Venus that completely covers the sky and blocks out the stars.*

*Genesis 1:20 has traditionally been understood to identify the “firmament” as only Earth's atmosphere, since birds fly in it. But on closer inspection of the Hebrew, birds fly in “the face of” the firmament, not the body of the firmament, in which suns and stars hang. The word “open”, in the KJV, comes from the Hebrew פָּנֶיךָ “face of the”. Several other verses describe the*

“brightness” of the firmament, and how it “shows” God’s glory. On a clear day, air doesn’t “show” humans anything. (Continued in Appendix M, The Firmament.)

## Day Three – Evening

After several hours, several of the fiery masses nearest the center, their gravity reduced to a fraction of their former pressure, cooled to the point where they stopped giving light. Some of the departing masses farther away were still blazing, but the White Hole conditions were still too powerful for their light to reach all the way back to the center. Hence the Evening of the Third Day began, and darkness enveloped the surface of the Waters Below.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:2 ...darkness was upon the face of the deep.... 5 And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. ...8 And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The first day began in darkness; then light was created, so that the first day consisted of evening and morning, or night and day.*

*The second day likewise began in darkness, and light appeared midway through it, so that the second day likewise consisted of first night, and then day.*

By now we are using the word “Earth” to mean the hard cool sphere at the center which God was concentrating on most.

Although much of the water had changed into other elements, a considerable quantity remained unchanged.

God pulled up the ground at the bottom of the water on the Earth until it stood, in places, a mile *above* the waters. An immense “continent” now covers about half the planet, while water covers the rest. Great oceans of water also flow beneath the dry ground.

Then God commanded a new form of life to emerge – a form of life composed of those new versatile particles. Grass, trees, flowers, and all manner of “plants” came into full bloom!

Perhaps a greater miracle than the initial appearance of mature plants out of nowhere is the existence, within them, of *seeds* which appear to contain, within a very small number of particles, intelligent design beyond the comprehension of an angel! Within a tiny seed the size of a leaf stem is enough “intelligence” not only to grow into a great plant capable of holding many angels, but to teach that great plant how to interact with its environment with almost as much adaptability as our own bodies!

Very humbling, I dare say!

But many of the seeds have a problem. While some seeds are capable of transporting themselves miles away from their mother plants, by wind, or sometimes by mere explosions from plants produced by changes in humidity, other seeds appear to not be provided with any means of transportation, doomed to fall by their mother and grow in a choked clump, never to spread throughout the Continent.

The most beautiful of the plants, the flowers, appear to be doomed never to reproduce themselves! We can see the pollen God put in them, and how naturally it is designed to interact with the stamen to reproduce itself. But God has not provided any means for the pollen to ever reach the stamen!

Another problem, or so it appeared, was that God had created these plants with a need for a steady, intense physical light, but no steady light was able to reach the Earth because of the White Hole conditions; and even if it could, it was not intense enough. Without such light, these plants seemed doomed to slowly wither and die.

We inquired of God about this matter. He only smiled and said, "I'm not finished yet!"

## **Day Three – Morning**

About that time, more light from fiery clusters a little farther from the center, which had not yet cooled, began to reach the Earth as the White Hole forces began to exhaust themselves.

(The farther matter was expelled, the less intense gravity was, at the center.)

The Waters Above, rushing outwards from the center, had just passed the Light Horizon, and the Horizon began racing towards the center as fast as matter raced away.

We saw this and looked at God inquisitively. He just grinned.

We appreciated the physical light which now reached the Earth. The plants were beautiful in it, although the light was not intense enough to meet the plants' needs.

What light there was, looked from the Earth like "light clouds". They were in wide, random shapes like the clouds of water vapor which had begun hanging over the Earth, except they were clouds of light which, from our perspective, were the size of many Earths.

Soon the waters from between the Waters Below and the Waters Above would be passing the Light Horizon, and time would be rushing backwards, outside the Horizon, at the rate of billions of years for a day

on the Earth, for as long as the Earth remained within the White Hole.

God began moving cooled, dense masses in the vicinity of the Earth. Their placement between the Earth and departing, light-giving masses, cast the Earth in the darkness of shadows again, ending the Third Day. The Evening of the Fourth Day began.

**Day Four – Evening** God began separating the dark masses around the Earth into other planets, and into one much larger mass in the center of all of them. Had its mass been in the form of a gas, like hydrogen, its pressure would have been too great for its gravity to pull it together into a tight ball. But because it was water, once it was set in place, it began compacting under its own gravity to gradually resume the process of light and heat-producing fusion.

As it was just beginning, the Light Horizon reached the surface of the earth, dashed to the center, and disappeared. Several angels, trying to squeeze in one last Horizon Crossing, following it from opposite directions, crashed into each other as it ended. Our laughter was interrupted when someone pointed up with astonishment.

Pinpricks of light from 14 gazillion stars showered the young planet Earth! What glory! What variety! What color!

We saw great clusters of stars – the galaxies. The milky transparent gasses – the nebulas. Every imaginable shape and size!

Until this point, the Light Horizon had made it impossible for their light to reach the Earth. It had also defined the “time warp” that separated the Earth from the outermost stars.

We watched the light traveling from the stars farthest out, and those nearest, and marveled at God’s intelligent design. We saw that the light just now arriving on the Earth had begun its journey “20 billion years ago”! And that the events we can see now, by the instantaneous light of God’s Face, will not arrive on the Earth for another “20 billion years”!

All in a day’s work, for God!

We had been watching the Earth so much, that we hadn’t been paying attention to the wonders God had been accomplishing during those “20 billion years” of galaxy formation. Pretty sophisticated! Real class!

I had to get used to the fact that side by side with light first arriving from 20 billion years ago, was light just first arriving from a star only 4 light years away. But of course it was because of the Light Horizon. As the Horizon passed the farthest star, the light of the farthest star followed the Horizon right to the Earth.

Light couldn’t have gone that fast, had gravity, along the light’s path, been constant. But when the Horizon was half way between the two



stars, for example, the gravity upon the farthest star was so much weaker that “10 billion years” had already passed, so the light had plenty of time to travel that distance.

I still struggle with the concept of time racing backwards. But logic requires me to admit something like this must happen, if I accept the fact that differing gravity causes the speed of time to vary, and the fact that it is possible for angels under differing gravity to communicate.

Example: From the Earth, I call Threemsha, who is working on a star where electrons orbit three times as often as on Earth. He says “hello” in what, for both of us, is the present. I am on the phone for an hour, while he is on the phone for three hours.

Then we say “good-bye” in what, for both of us, is the present.

Somehow one of his hours has to go backwards in relation to my time, in order for us to both be in the “present” after his three hours and my one hour.

His are real hours. During the conversation, he talked three times as fast, and thought three times as fast.

It was the same with the “20 billion years” of Stellar growth to one Earth day. If time didn’t really travel backwards, then in some other way, our equations must take into account that electrons at the edge of the universe orbit 7 trillion times while electrons on the Earth orbit once, and light at the edge travels 7 trillion times as far as light on the Earth, during the same period of EST (Earth Surface Time).

However, these time inequities generated by the black and then white hole conditions appear to be at an end. Now time at the center is almost as fast as time at the outer edge, and light is moving a lot slower. However, the stars are still stretching out, racing away from the center at the speed of light – which, though not fast compared with my halo throwing, can potentially add up after a few thousand years.

My mind was stretched to its limits just trying to grasp all these miracles, let alone aspire to create even one single tiny electron! As my head swam with all this information, I could not help gazing at God, tears clouding my view, and asking, “How can One so great, love one so insignificant?”

“More intelligence went into the construction of a single water molecule, than all the angels of Heaven will ever possess! And yet you allow me to make my home with You?”

“Thank you, my God! I worship you! You are worthy to receive more honor and praise than I have the intelligence to offer!”

*VerseScout: Revelation 5:11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of*

*many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; 12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing. 13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever. 14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.*

## **Day Four – Morning**

Soon the largest body of water nearest Earth had compressed into fiery fusion and was sending its plant-sustaining rays to Earth just as the Earth's rotation allowed those rays to shine upon the land. From this point on, the Earth's rotation would determine the boundaries of Evening and Morning. We called that fiery body "Sun".

It takes 8 minutes for light to reach the Earth from the Sun, and over a second to reach the Earth from the moon! That's as slow as a paralyzed tree! Why, if we showed up for work that late, we would be fired!

However, it's the fastest thing in the physical universe.

The sun bathes the earth with a warm, strong light that seems to be just what the plants were designed to feed upon. All the plants have perked up, and are thriving. That answers part of yesterday's question.

At night, the moon, rotating around the earth, reflected a fraction of the sun's light back to the dark side of the earth, providing a cool, restful, lovely light.

# Chapter 11

## Evolutionists from Hell

As God stretched out the boundaries of the universe in all directions from the earth at the speed of light, Hell was pushed with them, remaining beyond the borders, in the Outer Darkness. Of course, our communication with them was still instantaneous.

They told us, "What do you mean, God 'created' plants only yesterday? Why, they have taken a billion years to evolve!"

Sarcamson shot back, "Do you measure one year as one orbit of the Earth around the Sun, or do you measure it by the number of orbits that I roll my eyes while you talk?"

We corrected him. Or at least we tried. "Sarcamson, you have to be more considerate. Can't you see they're living in a time warp? They're so far away from God, that a day of watching God at work probably *does* seem like eternity to them."

Sarcamson apologized to them. But the shallowness of his repentance was suggested by his eye rolling when they explained how God had not created the sphere of water out of which came the universe, but that it had sprung by itself out of a single point.

That's right: they say God didn't do any of this at all, but it all appeared on its own! To our incredulous requests of them to develop their scenario, they said the universe had been compacted within a tiny infinitesimally small point since God was a boy, held in its compacted state by tremendous forces of gravity! But finally it exploded, as a result of "forces we do not yet understand", into the universe we see today! God had nothing to do with it, they say! All God did was take the credit! If God even exists!

Sarcamson asked them exactly where this point was located, so that we might watch it to see what surprises might pop out next.

"We don't understand that, either", they explained.

"Why doesn't that surprise me?" he inquired.

To our astonishment that they could persuade themselves the entire universe could squeeze into a point, they said, "Well, it's even easier to understand how the *entire universe* could be squeezed into a point, than something smaller, since there is so much more gravity in it to do the squeezing!"

Oh, well.

They have imaginative explanations for the formation of celestial

bodies out of all this “globby soup”. They claim, for example, that stars formed from vast clouds of hydrogen when the gravitational pull of the hydrogen overcame its gas pressure, and the clouds collapsed into high density bodies. It doesn’t bother them that there is no way the gravity of a cloud of hydrogen could overcome its gas pressure. For some reason they won’t accept the original existence of huge bodies of water which compact easily.

Not to mention the fact that we watched God make those stars out of water, and they did too. Miracles occurred right before their eyes – so they closed their eyes and dreamed! But that’s what hell seems to be all about.

My friend Gandalf stopped by. He had been hanging around Hell. I asked him the latest on the age of plants.

“300 million years, 2 hours, and 3 minutes.”

“How did they come up with so precise a figure?” I asked.

He said, “Well, when they told me the plants were 300 million years old, that was 2 hours and 3 minutes ago.”

Well, as I said, the farther one recedes from God, the faster time travels, but this is ridiculous! I mean, it is one thing to be infinitely restless, completely without peace, so that seconds seem like ages. It’s another thing to miscount the orbits of the Earth around the Sun as having been billions, when it has not been one! They challenge not merely God. They challenge the established rules of addition and subtraction!

And that’s another thing. They are telling each other that the creation of the universe, which became visible from Earth on the fourth day, supposedly took place over the past 15 billion years! That is, during the past 25 billion orbits of the earth around its sun!

We’re talking now the end of the fourth day, when the earth has not quite completed 1/365th of its orbit around its new Sun, and they actually allege 12 billion orbits have already been completed!

If you’re wondering why the number of billions changes every time it comes up, ask them! They’re not our figures! If they can come up with an explanation why they can’t repeat the same wild figure twice in a row, let me know what it is.

It is amazing to listen to their favorite “experts” pontificate on the age of the universe. One will offer his “documented proof” that it is 17 billion years old. All will agree. A minute later another will prove it is 7 billion years old. They will all agree that the earlier figure has been changed, and thus made even more accurate. The next will say it is 30 billion years old, and the rest will be so grateful to now have the truth.

But let someone step forward with some of the irrefutable evidence

that it has been four days, and they will say that disagreeing with them is not “scientific”, but “is being religious”, and religion is “irrelevant” during scientific discussions. Evidence is “unscientific” if it disagrees with them. Good “science” requires censoring evidence that disagrees.

\*

\*

\*

We have been watching with admiration the creativity of God in making so many cycles in the Universe that match the character of His Breath. (Or, as it is also called, His Spirit.)

We see electrons orbiting around nuclei, chlorophyll circulating within the bodies of plants, air and water circulating around the Earth, moons orbiting planets, planets orbiting suns, stars orbiting galaxies, and galaxies orbiting around the Earth. Yet for all the stability God has created in the universe, by making it out of the most stable material possible outside Himself – His Breath, the universe is so far from monotonous! Sunrises and sunsets, for example, could come one after another a million times in a row and never become boring, because every one looks different and beautiful! Why? Because God’s breaths themselves are never perfectly identical, although they are always essentially of the same components.

Why, just see nature’s perpetual dance! Sunrise, sunset! Winds whirling around continually, then returning whence they came! Rivers running into the sea perpetually, yet the sea never gets full, but God carries their waters back to whence rivers begin!

God has made all things full of...what would be a good word to describe it? Labor. That’s it. “Labor” is a good word. “Labor” seems to be, somehow, the essence of creation.

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:4 One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh: but the earth abideth for ever. 5 The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose. 6 The wind goeth toward the south, and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. 7 All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again. 8 All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.*

**Day five** — Out of the particles God has created, He has now created living creatures even more intelligent than plants! He created fish, great and small, able to navigate the waters; and all manner of flying animals able to navigate the air!

Most miraculous of all, God created them with the ability to reproduce themselves!

But God didn't just create a few of them and wait for them to reproduce until they filled the earth. God filled the earth with them instantly! God did not create a single blade of grass and wait years for it to multiply and cover the meadow, but He painted entire hillsides with its soothing green!

It would not even have been possible to create just one or two of each plant and animal, because they were so dependent upon others for their survival. For example, whales need the company of other whales: and not just one other whale, but entire pods of them, in order to be complete. How marvelous, and considerate of the needs of the smallest creature, is God's creation!

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:20 And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air; and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Implied in this verse is that all the animals already had mates, and that none of the animals were a suitable mate for Adam.*

What love, that not one of these, not the smallest of them, was created without its needs being provided!

But God did not *completely* fill the earth with plants, birds and fish. God left plenty of room for all of them to grow and multiply.

We watched the rest of our question of a couple of days ago being answered before our eyes. We watched birds eat berries which contained seeds, and we watched them leave their "droppings", which still contained the live seeds, miles away from where the berries grew!

And God created flying insects, such as bees, to spread pollen on stamens in the course of producing a wonderful golden substance called "honey".

When God solves a problem, the result is always, truly, sweet!

\*

\*

\*

And now our fallen brothers are at it again! They say God didn't create the plants, birds, and fish, but they "just evolved".

When we asked what "evolve" means, they defined this word as "the chance creation of living things by dead elements randomly banging together for billions of years"!

“You mean,” we queried, “if you bang two rocks together long enough, they will turn into a fish?”

“Yes, yes!” They were so excited that we understood. “Or if lightning strikes water long enough! Doesn't it make perfect sense? If you have lightning striking water for two or three billion years, why, can't you see it's just INEVITABLE that out of all those lightning strikes, one would hit just right to turn some of the water into a fish?”

“OK, let me double check something”, I once asked them. “If you were flying around and found an abandoned wing cover, would you assume an angel had flown by there, or would you assume some rocks had been banging together and evolved into a wing cover?”

“Obviously, that would prove an angel had flown by there. But what's your point?”

We found ourselves unable to even continue our conversation without some bold new strategy.

Remember that word we had to coin to describe the particular variety of “amazing” which Beelzebub had shown?

Well, that same variety of “amazing” was what we faced in this conversation.

But desperate curiosity drove us to want to continue the conversation as long as possible, to answer why such incredibly intelligent beings could believe such stupidity.

How could we do that? Not by yelling “that's stupid” and flying away.

After a few angelic conferences, we came up with a strategy. We would use temporary deception. We would pretend to understand them, and agree with them long enough to keep the conversation going, while we probed their thinking, to see if we could find some flaw in it which we could expose to them, that they might be restored to the truth.

This was a controversial strategy, because it required deception, even if temporarily. There was the risk that the deception might become permanent, through our inability to explain our logic to them; after all, we had already failed to explain things even more basic.

But our purpose was to deliver them from their own deception, and to restore them to The Truth. To deliberately leave them in deception seemed less honest than trying to free them from deception. So we decided to take the risk.

We made up a new word for our strategy: “sarcasm”.

Here is a typical example of our sarcasm:

“Wow, I see what you mean about all that rock banging. And how animals evolved from plants, by, how did you say it? By banging rocks

into plants? Or was it banging plants into each other?"

"Well, actually, they weren't big rocks. Just little tiny ones, so little you can't see them. You know, the atoms. They are just little rocks banging around all the time, and yet they make up the most complex living structures. So you can see how rock piles, banging into each other at the molecular level, might evolve by chance into a hill here, a mountain there, and if they bang around for enough billions of years, surely one of those bangs might produce the Sears Tower."

"The what?"

"Oh, never mind. But the point is that all this banging around is already occurring at the molecular level, so it's perfectly rational, and even to be expected, that a protozoa might one day evolve into a field of clover."

"You've made it clearer than you can know. And now I see how yet another protozoa, the brother of the first, might bang around into a bumblebee."

"Yes! Now I think you understand! Just exactly!"

"Not on the first bang, of course, but over billions of bangs."

"Yes! Yes! Here, let me offer you a discount on a membership card to our fellowship!"

"How long is it good for? A year?"

"No, no! It is good for all eternity!"

"I'll think about it. But meanwhile we are not saying, of course, that in any particular year, of the three billion, we might expect a protozoa to bang into a bumblebee."

"Of course not. Only that, in any one of those billions, it will surely happen."

"So we could never expect just the right bang at any given time. Like, we could not say 'that protozoa has been banging around for four billion years already, which is the required number, which means that tomorrow will be the day it turns into a bumblebee.'"

"Oh, of course not. It might be tomorrow, or in another million years. And remember, the protozoa never evolves directly into a bumblebee. It goes through stages: first a dust mite, then into a flea, then a tick, then an ant, then a fly, and finally a bumblebee. And there might be a million more steps, each one taking thousands of years."

"Oh, right. I forgot. I certainly never meant to insult your intelligence by suggesting you are so gullible as to believe a protozoa might turn into a bumblebee with a single bang."

"Thank you. No, I am certainly not that gullible. I am fully aware the bumblebee has had to evolve for many years, just from a very similar



insect, such as a wasp.”

“And meanwhile, the clover, and other pollinated flowers upon which the bumblebee feeds, have likewise been evolving for many years from similar flowers.

“We can all agree it would be absurd to imagine that a species could evolve into an entirely different species in a single week!”

“Yes, yes!”

“Hmmm.”

“What? What's wrong?”

“Oh no! I see a problem that I can't figure out!”

“Surely not! What is it?”

“Look at these flowers that cannot live for even one season without the bumblebee, and without which the bumblebee could not live for even one week. Why, these flowers, and bumblebees, had to evolve the same week! But how could they, if the steps of evolution between their present forms, and their previous forms, were gradual?

“In other words, if their previous forms were dramatic, like if you can imagine the bumblebee was a grasshopper only last week, and the clover was a strawberry only last week, then you have the capacity to imagine how they have succeeded in evolving in time, before they both died. But if Evolution requires gradual changes over much longer periods of time, the two cannot logically exist! It almost seems easier to imagine that God created bumblebees and flowers a couple of days apart.”

“I see what you mean. Well, I guess we simply need to acknowledge the operation of Macro Evolution. It turns out that a species can evolve into an entirely different species in a single week, after all.”

“You mean call it the Theory of Revolution?”

“Good choice! Hey guys, listen to this! ‘The Theory of Revolution’! Isn't that a great name?”

See what I mean? Sarcasm doesn't work with these guys.

**Day six** -- God created all kinds of animals on land! From tiny insects to giant dinosaurs!

Then we watched as small animals caught the last of the seeds we wondered about in their fur and carried them, again for miles, before releasing them!

We marveled at the capacity of plants to serve as food for animals; especially, of the dependence of so many animals on just one type of plant for nourishment, and at God's incomprehensible scheduling in providing just those plants to just those animals just when they are needed!

\*

\*

\*

But nothing astonished us more than the latest reports from Hell. Some of our “religious” fallen brothers are at least acknowledging God as creator of all creation, but saying each one of these “days” is really about a billion years! That is, not a billion years at the edge of the universe during a literal day on Earth, but a billion Earth years!

I know time is dragging for them, but....!

In other words, they’re saying the plants were created, and then a billion years later the sun was created! They have more faith than I do! I only have faith that God can do miracles. But they even have faith that *plants* can do miracles!

We said we would love to learn from them how plants lived for a billion years without the sun, but they were too busy to answer.

We offered to listen to their explanation of how pollen and seeds managed to transport themselves for billions of years without animals and insects, between “Day Three” and “Day Five”, but the only answer they gave us was smoke signals, which, unfortunately, we couldn’t decipher.

Nevertheless the smoke signals, independently of whatever meaning they may have carried, were interesting to watch. Cute little wisps of smoke they were, drifting out of their ears.

# Chapter 12

## Man!

After all the wonderful plants and animals were created, God gathered us all around, with a big grin on His face, and said He was saving the best for last.

God said that the very fact the best was being saved for last would be an analogy, for any rebel who questions why God does not give everything they ask exactly when they ask for it.

Good things need preparation, He explained. The better they are, the more preparation they need. But good things are always worth waiting for. Good things, taken before their way is prepared, would only be bad things. And was this next thing going to be good!

Then God scooped up some dust, rearranged its elements into what appeared to be a most beautiful animal, and then breathed into it a Soul which reflected the very Face of God!

Dust contains an amazing mix of all the elements that exist, complex beyond the power of any angel to recreate. And not just dead elements, but plant and animal life. All God needed for the physical body, He found in the dust.

We suddenly understood that those six days of creation glory were all planned around the preparation of this pile of dust.

Not that God needed dust or He could not have found what He needed, but God wanted His new creature to feel at home, walking the ground of Earth, surrounded by the stellar glories which had, by God's Hand, been used to manufacture this amazing dust out of primordial water.

The creature's soul, however, was made from the elements of Heaven, so that the soul might always know its home is there.

It was the inside of the Soul which astonished us, more than the body which was amazing enough. We saw that all the physical things God had fashioned out of His Breath faced the possibility of extinction, through accident or design, and re-formation into new creations. But the Soul seems indestructible, eternal, reflecting the very essence of God Himself!

I don't mean the soul actually *is* indestructible. I mean rather that it is marked by God for eternal protection from destruction. The really remarkable thing about the soul is what it is about it, that inspired God to mark it for eternal protection.

It has something to do with its power to choose.

God calls the soul and its body “man”, and “Adam”, which means “red in the face”, because of his thin hairless skin that allows the color of his blood to show through.

God created the man out of red earth, and that hue is in the man’s skin. We could see from the manner of construction that Adam’s descendants had the potential for lighter and for darker skin. As red earth is a medium color for earth, Adam’s chromosomes were arranged for the maximum potential for variety of color in his descendants.

How different than all the other animals: the fish with their tough, colorful scales, the mammals with their soft bright hair, the birds with their lovely, delicate feathers, the reptiles with their thick, hard skin!

Man’s physical appearance showcased the grandest miracle of all creation: blood! God had said “it is good” after *all* He had made, but God really liked blood.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:4 God saw the light, that it was good.... 10...Earth and...seas...was good...12 [plants]...was good... 18 [sun, moon and stars]...was good.... 21 [fish] was good.... 25 [land animals] was good.... 31 [everything, including man]...and, behold, it was very good.*

He told us “look at this. This is special. This is special. *Life* is in the blood. See how universal it is! All living flesh has some form of it, without which it cannot live!”

**VerseScout:** *Leviticus 17:11 For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. 12 Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, No soul of you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger that sojourneth among you eat blood. 13 And whatsoever man there be of the children of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, which hunteth and catcheth any beast or fowl that may be eaten; he shall even pour out the blood thereof, and cover it with dust. 14 For it is the life of all flesh; the blood of it is for the life thereof: therefore I said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eateth it shall be cut off.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The preceding Scripture speaks of physical life; the following Scripture speaks of eternal life. Our physical bodies must not consume physical blood without great hazard to our health; but our Souls cannot live without the sustenance of God’s Life poured out for us.*

*It had to be hard for the Jews, raised by the command of God to never drink blood, to hear the Son of God telling them they had to drink His blood! Not just accept the salvation His blood provides, but drink it!*

*But this is actually the same message we find in Ecclesiastes 1:14, that all is “vanity and vexation of spirit”, KJV, meaning in Hebrew that the universe is made of the Breath of God, which is sustained by “grazing upon” the Spirit of God.*

**VerseScout:** *John 6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. 48 **I am that bread of life.** 49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50 This is the **bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.** 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and **the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.** 52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? 53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.** 54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For **my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.** 56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. 58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.*

“Blood is different, of course, from one animal to another. Only vertebrates have hemoglobin. But even the life of plants flows through a substance which serves them the way blood serves animals and man.

“Now watch very carefully, as history unfolds, what I do with blood. I have made it a living analogy of how I nourish all souls. Through blood I explain the cost of Love. Through blood I will explain the cost even I must pay, for My love.”

A cost? Of love? A cost even God must pay? If God must pay it, how much more the rest of us? That was a really troubling thing to hear.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 10:25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master; and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?*

*John 15:20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.*

“It is the key to a Heaven from which no soul will ever again depart!”

What a glorious purpose! A guarantee that men would never leave Heaven, as angels did! But men are on Earth. Does this mean men will never rebel on Earth, either?

There had been so much intelligence packed into every cell of all

the plants and the animals, that I had forgotten they lacked Souls. But when I saw the Man, and saw him talk with God, I realized he was special.

God announced that through Man he would fill heaven with His Children. We were ecstatic with joy, for God's sake as well as our own, at this news. But not so ecstatic as we were when he next said "I have made you to be Ministering Spirits, and now I send you forth to serve Man, who shall be my Heir, and who shall inherit Salvation. I will be sure to praise you before men. I will tell men of the wonderful service you give them."

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 1:13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? 14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*

*Psalms 103:19 The LORD hath prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all. 20 Bless the LORD, ye his angels [messengers, whether human or Heavenly], that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word. 21 Bless ye the LORD, all ye his hosts; ye ministers of his, that do his pleasure. 22 Bless the LORD, all his works in all places of his dominion: bless the LORD, O my soul.*

It was not long before we saw what Adam could do, which no animal could do. He was able to imagine possibilities.

Adam longed for fellowship with a creature of his own kind, as he saw the animals had. While each animal had many of its own kind with which to frolic – flocks of birds, schools of fish, herds of grazing animals, a congress of baboons, etc. – Adam had not one single creature of his own kind!

Why, Adam wondered?

**VerseScout:** *Gen 2:20 And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The verse does not explicitly tell us who noticed Adam had no mate – maybe it was only God and the lack never occurred to Adam. Except that "there was not found" implies that the one who noticed had been looking. Neither God nor angels needed to look; they already knew.*

*So it must have been Adam. And the strong desire for mates among humans today suggests Adam had it too, and was deeply disappointed that there was none.*

*It even suggests that during that long work of naming animals, with their*

*mates, (remember that male and female animals have distinct names, so all animals must have had mates as they appeared before him) all Adam could think about was “where’s mine?”*

The very fact that Adam had the capacity to wonder was a clue to us that God had something special in mind for Adam – the ability to love! We understood how the capacity to wonder was a requisite for the ability to love. The capacity to wonder was, in turn, an element of another Gift we now perceived manifesting before our eyes, a Gift God had not given to any other earthly creature. A Gift confined until now to angels.

Indeed, we quickly understood this Gift was to become our link to all Creation. Until now, all God had created was beautiful, entertaining, and awesome. But now, upon the giving of this Gift to Adam, there was, for the first time, a Creature, a Created Being, with whom we could have Fellowship!

This Gift was the ability of Adam to visualize something that did not already exist, and then to desire it, and then to ask God for it. We coined a new word for this Gift: Prayer.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 8:28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. 29 And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? 30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. 31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. 32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *This shows that demons had the power to visualize possibilities not already realized, and to pray for them; it even shows Jesus was willing to answer the prayer of demons! How much more must the angels of God have this capacity, and Jesus the desire to satisfy them!*

We saw how much more beneficial this was to Adam, to have less than he needed but then to have the capacity to Pray for it, than had God made him with all he needed in the first place, with nothing more to imagine or pray for, the way God had made the animals.

We saw that through Prayer, Adam was actually Creating in the same manner as God, and with the same power – God’s, though without *direct* control over it. This process of creating, we saw to be a source of satisfaction in itself, a key even to meaning in life.

**VerseScout:** John 16:24 *Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *“That your joy may be full” is a good description of people who have found so much “meaning” in their lives that they are fully satisfied.*

We saw also how this process of asking of God, and receiving, depended on God’s willingness to sacrifice the effort and energy to rearrange the rest of the Universe to accommodate this request. Such sacrifice constituted evidence of God’s Love, which inspired reciprocal love in Adam.

No animal could visualize an alternative to reality, and *decide* the alternative would have been better, or *wonder* why God had not made it so. That capacity not only to visualize an alternative to reality, but to prefer it, is the beginning of the ability to tell right (what is preferred) from wrong, or good from evil. And without all these capacities, there can be no capacity to love, we realized as we cataloged Adam’s potentials.

An animal can only *return* “love”, which is not real love. An animal has to capacity to love, or do good for, its enemies.

**VerseScout:** John 15:13 *Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

*Matthew 5:43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so?*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Animals sometimes lay down their lives for their young, for each other, and for humans. But there is no clear evidence that conscious individual choice enters into it; in fact the very predictability of “animal altruism” by certain animals in certain situations points to their “programming” as the cause. Loving their enemies is a level of love never observed among animals.*

*Humans are able to love even their enemies, and even to lay down their lives for their enemies. The fact that humans do not do so consistently or predictably proves the act is by individual choice.*

*The degree of affection of which animals are capable, though awesome compared with the most futuristic human-created “Artificial Intelligence”, is described by Jesus as the limit of affection shown by the worst of men – the “publicans”.*



*Jesus said the greatest love is to die for one's friends, but then his act was far greater: He died for all His enemies!*

God responded to Adam's unspoken prayer for companionship by fully satisfying him! We expected God would create an instant civilization of men, as He had of animals. But no, God has planned something better, we soon realized.

In the first place, Adam did not pray for an entire civilization. He desired just one female, with whom he could not only have fellowship but children. Even before God responded we figured out that Adam desired this so much, that one female would so satisfy his desire for love, that he would not care about an entire civilization buzzing around him.

In the second place, this desire of Adam was an opportunity God had used to strengthen Human Love. The animals may have enjoyed instant fellowship, but they could not say they were all related to each other. Only a few animals of any given kind would in the future be able to claim common ancestry, and even those few lacked the intelligence to grasp the concept.

But if things proceeded as they were beginning, we realized all future humans would be able to say they came from the same common ancestor! That they were all "brothers and sisters"! We saw this as a great incentive to Love, because it is always easiest to understand that which is most like oneself. We saw how that would make it easier for humans to love each other.

God was giving humans a tool for developing love which He had not even given angels!

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The fact that angels do not marry strongly suggests they do not have babies, which in turn suggests that they were all created at the same time, and are not related in the physical sense that humans are.*

But God was doing something even more to unite all humans in one common ancestry. Not only would all future humankind proceed from the union of the same male and female, but even the female would proceed from the male!

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:18 And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. 19 And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the*

air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. 20 And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him. 21 And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; 22 And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. 23 And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. 24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

*Galatians 4:4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,*

*1 Corinthians 11:11 Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. 12 For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.*

We discussed all these possibilities as God sedated Adam and cut flesh from his side to make a woman. God told us, “notice the bond that will now exist between man and woman. Adam shed his own blood so that his bride might exist. This will make the man love the woman, seeing how much of himself is in her; this will make the woman love the man, seeing how her existence is owed to him. Love leads the lover to sacrifice, and the recipient of the sacrifice is led to love.”

**VerseScout:** *John 15:11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full. 12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

*Luke 7:47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little. 48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. ....50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.*

God continued, “See how Adam’s sacrifice, from out of his side, makes the existence of his bride possible? I, too, seek a bride: a congregation of souls who will live in Heaven with me, for all eternity, and never repent of love. I love these two souls, and I will love their children, so much that I, too, am willing to cut open My own side, if that is what is necessary to make the existence of my bride possible! I am even willing, should it be required, to face the surgery without the anesthetic.”

We wondered at such strange words! God, cut open? God, in pain? How could such a thing be? Such a thing obviously could be, since

God told us it could.

We tried to imagine what sort of “bride” God visualized.

**VerseScout:** *John 19:34 But one of the soldiers **with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.** 35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.*

*Revelation 21:9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew **thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.** 10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,*

*Isaiah 62:5 For as a young man marrieth a virgin, so shall thy sons marry thee: **and as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee.***

*Isaiah 49:18 Lift up thine eyes round about, and behold: all these gather themselves together, and come to thee. As I live, saith the LORD, thou shalt surely clothe thee with them all, as with an ornament, and bind them on thee, as a **bride doeth.***

*Isaiah 61:10 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; **for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.***

We had noticed how carefully God had removed Adam's rib, leaving intact the periosteum – the membrane surrounding the bone, and peeling out the rib. Soon we understood why, as we saw the rib begin to grow back. We learned that the periosteum contains cells that can manufacture new bone, and rib bones are the easiest to grow back because the attached intercostal muscles provide a rich blood supply.

God said, “In the same way that Adam's rib was taken from him, and yet is being replaced by a new rib, a part of me will be removed and yet will be quickly restored.”

We couldn't even react to this statement. It was so far beyond us. I just wrote it down, and turned down the corner of the page so I can find it again, if more explanation comes later.

God taught all the animals how to procreate, as well as quite a number of amazing things, such as how to navigate annually to distant parts of the Continent, despite brains and sense organs far from adequately equipped for the task. God made them dependent on Him to guide each of them throughout their lives. God did not give animals the capacity to question or disobey. Rather, their obedience was so “automatic” that each animal in each species, from the greatest to the

least, behaved uniformly.

That is, of course there were varieties of personalities, to make them interesting. But there was nothing like the range from very good to very evil which exists among angels because of the choices they have made.

Only Man, of all on Earth, was given the capacity to Obey. To man alone, God said, “be fruitful and multiply” with conscious words expressing the desire for but not the certainty of man’s *conscious, willful* obedience.

There are other differences. We saw God’s design for human reproduction. All other animals will nurture their young for a very brief time: from no time at all to a few minutes, to a few months. Man, alone, will be required to nurture their young for ten years or more before they will be self sufficient!

What love God is requiring man to perfect, as a condition of his own survival! God has special plans for man!

God made animals with little capacity to teach their children, beyond a few months at most. Nor do animals have much capacity for learning with age. An animal one year old and the same kind of animal 10 years old will not only have about the same *level* of skill, but will have about the *same skills*. Not so man! God created man with capacity to learn, and to teach, and to choose areas of learning, for his entire life!

Not only is this a blessing in itself, but it will be a powerful incentive to an even greater blessing: monogamous, lifetime relationships between husband and wife. “Marriages”, we call them. Commitments for life, which are *conscious choices* in a manner beyond the capacity of animals, and beyond the experience of angels.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.*

The reason the capacity to learn and teach for life will encourage lifetime marriages is that children will *require* parental instruction for many years, and will *greatly benefit* from parental instruction for many more years; while parents will greatly benefit from the joy of their children when they are young, and the wisdom of their children when they are mature. Man has so much capacity to continue teaching and learning, that even grandchildren will suffer without stable relationships with their grandparents.

The greatest blessing of all, to which all this will lead, is the preparation for Heaven!

Animals, by contrast, mate with whomever is available, which may vary from year to year, or even day to day. What little capacity they have to teach their young is exhausted quickly.

In fact, God made man so dependent on monogamy that if man were ever to even *try* to be as polygamous as animals, their very bodies would disintegrate with corruption and disease. Man was made dependent on monogamy for his very health!

No animal could honestly have said, as Adam said, “Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.” (God liked that, and said He would be sure to put it in His book.)

Before Adam said that, he acknowledged the special way God made Adam’s mate, or rather, *wife*, the woman: by taking flesh from Adam’s side rather than dust from the ground. He said, “This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called *Wo*-man, because she was taken *from* man.”

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:22 And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. 23 And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. 24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.*

As wonderful as it was that God had given Adam the power to visualize, which Adam had used to co-create his wife with God, we marveled at the irony of his ability to want anything he did not already have, when he had only *begun* to taste the delights of what he already had!

Thousands of fruits yet to taste! Beauty in unnoticed clouds, sunrises, flowers, animals – more beauty than could ever fit in a thousand years of study, thrills, joy, and thanks to God!

Not only is it impossible for Adam to see more than a fraction of all the beauty around him – for example, while he is looking at flowers he cannot also look at clouds – but with his powers of imagination he is able to see little or nothing at all of what he has while he is creating what he has not! In that sense he is far less aware of his surroundings than animals, although he of course *interacts* with his environment far more (to the extent of *changing* his environment).

Yet God still faithfully created beauty just to wait for Adam’s glance, so that wherever a man might happen to look, there it is!

But why did God take such care to create beauty even where Adam

could not look? Beauty under water, or in a microscopic world too small for him to see, or on distant planets, or star formations too faint for his weak eyes (compared with ours), or in the infrared spectrum, or the ultraviolet spectrum, or the spectrum in which the Light from God's Face shines, or even in such more familiar worlds as the world of smells known to Adam's dog?

Yet one more world of beauty worthy of note here: the world of dreams. What magnificent colors, shapes, images, sounds, stories, and adventures await Adam's first night of sleep, almost none of which will he remember even if he tries hard!

When I asked God about these things, He answered, "That beauty which man cannot or chooses not to see, will not you see it?"

"Yes, but", I asked, "am I wrong in perceiving that all this that You have just created, was not for us, since we already had a wonderful universe, but for man? If so, then is it not ironic that only the thinnest slice of all this beauty You have created for him can possibly be appreciated by him?"

"When I was alone, before I created angels," God pointed out, "not even the *thinnest* slice of the beauty I created was appreciated by *anyone*! And even now you have the capacity to see only the thinnest slice."

I felt sorry for God, that there was a time when there was no one to praise Him. Then just as quickly, I felt ashamed of myself for elevating sentient life so highly in my estimation, that I imagined its acknowledgment of God could be of such value to God that its absence would disappoint Him!

But God was gracious beyond imagination.

"Although I do not need your praise to know joy, it is my greatest treasure when you and your brothers give it."

I wept at God's humility in assuring me that His greatness did not lessen His appreciation of my poor gifts!

He continued, "But when *no one* appreciates what I have done and created, I still appreciate it. I find great personal satisfaction in making all things excellent. I pack quality and intelligence into everything I do, because it pleases Me.

"I have made Adam in Our Image. He, too, will take great pleasure in doing all things well, even when there is no other man to understand or appreciate it, although he will take even greater pleasure in giving to others.

"One day Adam will build a house. And in a time when he has many descendants, he will reserve to his own eyes a room so personal that he will invite no one in. He will even drive out insects, so that even

they will be denied a glimpse of its beauty. (*Translator's note: apparently this description is of a "Man Cave".*) Even Wo-man will avoid it, because the concept women have of beauty includes being clean. Yet Adam will delight in making it beautiful, for his eyes alone."

**VerseScout:** *Mark 7:37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear; and the dumb to speak.*

*Revelation 4:11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.*

*Ecclesiastes 2:24 There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God.*

I marveled. Not only was it beyond human capacity to see all the beauty God had created for man, but it stretched human capacity to remain ever conscious of appreciating it – or in other words, of acknowledging its source – or in other words, of thanking God for it. But since thanksgiving is the doorway to happiness for man, there is every reason for confidence that man will always stretch his capacity to give it.

**Day seven** – God is resting from His labor. He ceased working.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:2 And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. 3 And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.*

I would understand if the reason God is resting is because He is tired. It wore me out just watching Him work! But the only reason I am sure of is that He is done. Creation is finished.

That is, at least this stage of it. God has already said there will be more to be done, later, regarding this "blood".

**VerseScout:** *John 19:30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.*

I have no idea whether all the First Week's work actually tired God, but I can tell you this: the degree of intelligence God packed into the creation of the universe, the Earth, and all its life, is as far beyond my comprehension as is God Himself! Not to mention the future planning that went into designing everything from hatching an egg to however God is

going to turn Adam and Wo-man into His Children! That is, into souls eternally committed, as if in marriage, to God's Love in Heaven, so that never again will souls choose to abandon Heaven! Not to mention this "blood" thing, about which I have no clue.

Still, the idea that anything could tire God is difficult to swallow. He certainly doesn't look or act tired. But I know He rested, because He said so. And normally it is difficult to rest if you are not at least a little bit tired.

**VerseScout:** *Psalm 121:1 A Song of degrees. I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. 2 My help cometh from the LORD, which made heaven and earth. 3 He will not suffer thy foot to be moved: he that keepeth thee will not slumber. 4 Behold, he that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** "Slumber" and "sleep" translate the Hebrew words **אָסַח** *num* and **עָשָׂה** *yashen*. *Num* (slumber) is defined as "to slumber from drowsiness, figuratively it can mean inactivity or laziness." *Yashen* (sleep) means to be slack ("lacking due diligence; slack in duty or service") or languid ("drooping, feeble, weak, indisposed to exertion, 'the body is languid after excessive action, which exhausts its powers'"). By implication, the word can mean to sleep, to die, or to grow old, stale, or inveterate (established, set in its ways, inflexible).

*In other words, God neither gets careless from the temporary stupor of exhaustion-caused sleep, or from the permanent physical debility of old age.*

*For some reason not one English translation draws a distinct difference between the two words.*

God certainly didn't go to sleep, of course, the way we do. He did not retire from consciousness. He did not cease watching over us all. God only *rested*.

This is very important to us, that God never ceases watching over us, and it will surely be very reassuring to the man too.



# Part 3: The Two Trees

## Chapter 13

### The Tree of Grace

#### **Day Six, a few minutes before Sundown**

Eden functions just like Heaven, except that it is made of these new elements composed of Breath. It functions the same in that all that lives in it are interdependent, to a degree only God could have conceived. Just like the Body of Heaven.

Sure, if harm were to come to some species, most other life would be able to continue, just as our Body still lives and functions even with our brothers incapacitated. But it would be crippled, just as the loss of a limb, or organ, in a particular physical body, would reduce its full potential; and like our Body has been crippled, by comparison with its potential.

That's just like God, to create a system whose very structure encourages, if not requires for its very existence, Love.

And that is how two wonderful trees interact with one another to sustain the humans of the future – although they are not designed to be used by humans quite yet.

One Tree offers Eternal Life, and the other Order, to the spiritual “body” into which humans are designed to grow. Their respective functions are like the heart and brain of a physical body. As the heart propels life-giving blood to every cell, while the brain coordinates the entire body so it may move with one purpose: even so one Tree offers life, and the other Tree offers to unite Adam and Wo-man and all their descendants into a single – well, I’m still not sure exactly what God means by this word, but a single “Bride”.

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:22 And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:*

The Tree of Grace offers wisdom to humans. The same wisdom by which God made the worlds.

***VerseScout:** Proverbs 3:13 Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, ... 16*

*Length of days is in her right hand;...18 She is a tree of life to them that lay hold upon her: ... 19 The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Verse 16 even attributes “length of days” to this “Wisdom”, just as Genesis 3:22 says the Tree of Life in Eden had the capacity to make men “live for ever”.

Wisdom of course is not some mere capacity of a human brain. It is a connection with God. It is an aspect of God. It is God reaching down to hand man not “just” Infinite Life, but Infinity.

That is, that Wisdom by which God made the worlds, is God. God Himself. Wisdom is not merely information to be learned, but a Person to be Found and Known.

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 1:1 God, ...2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, ...by whom also he made the worlds;*

*John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. 4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men. ...14 And the Word was made flesh....*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Proverbs 3:13-19 records the offer of a Person named Wisdom who offers every good thing, and Who founded the Earth – the description which Hebrews 1:1-5 and John 1:1-4 gives to Jesus.

Although God gave Adam and Wo-men life from the first Breath of Life He breathed into them, the Tree of Grace is more than mere physical existence. Without God, our fallen brothers can still exist, and “live” in that sense, but they are like a branch broken from a tree which still exists but which no longer grows or interacts with the tree.

**VerseScout:** *John 15:1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. ...4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: ...*

*Romans 11:17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; 18 Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Jesus is even called a Tree! He is called the Vine, of which we are the branches, John 15:1-8; and also the olive tree, into whose root we branches are grafted in, Romans 11:17-18. Perhaps the Tree of Life of Genesis and Revelation are the same Tree, Jesus, into which we

*are invited to be grafted in as branches.*

Of all creation, the Tree of Grace was the most costly to God! For this Tree has, for its fruit, the very living Flesh of God, containing the very Blood of God!

**VerseScout:** *John 6:50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. 53 ...Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. (See also verses 40-58.)*

*Revelation 2:7 ...To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. 22:2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. ...14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city,*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Jesus' flesh is given for our Eternal Life-giving food, John 6:40-58, just like the fruit of a tree, John 15:1-4, and Jesus is the source of our Life, John 1:1-4.*

*The Greek word for "drink" in John 6:53, according to Thayer, is "figuratively, to receive into the soul what serves to refresh, strengthen, nourish it unto life eternal." We must "receive...grace" (Romans 5:17, 2 Corinthians 6:1) offered by His Blood for "forgiveness of sins" (Ephesians 1:7). Without Jesus' spiritual "blood" nourishing our souls, our souls are as dead as physical bodies without physical blood.*

*We can't imagine how alike, physically, the Tree of Life, and the Shed Blood of Jesus Christ, may be. But these Scriptures show that they both offer the same life-giving, sin-covering properties. If they offer the same Gift, and we know one of them cost God dearly, how could the other not be costly? They behave as two analogies of the same reality. Genesis 3:22 describes a physical "Tree of Life" offering the same Eternal Life which Jesus offers.*

To be more specific, the flesh and blood were the flesh and blood of the Word of God, the Physical Manifestation of God.

**VerseScout:** *John 1:14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

*John 14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *There is only one way the Tree of Life can be a way to Eternal Life while at the same time Jesus is the only way: and that is for Jesus, and the Tree of Life, to be one.*

*Further circumstantial support for this presumption is the similarity between Jesus' 12 apostles and the Tree's 12 fruits, and the fact Jesus spent much time in a particular Garden. Adam sinned and was taken out of the Garden. Jesus was taken out of the Garden for our sins.*

*In Revelation 2:7, only those who prove themselves will be allowed access to the Tree of Life, the converse of when Adam and Eve were denied access after they failed to prove themselves.*

*Proverbs 3 likewise compares access to Wisdom with the acquisition of treasures, which requires people to "prove themselves" through work and commitment.*

*"The fruit of the righteous", "desires fulfilled", and "a wholesome tongue" are called "a tree of life" later in Proverbs 11:30, 13:12, and 15:4. In these verses, the phrase seems to describe a little taste available, of The Tree, in a fallen world.*

Neither of the Two Trees is ready to be eaten. God revealed the location of the other Tree to Adam and Wo-man but told them not to eat its fruit now.

God is very serious about desiring that Adam and Wo-man trust and obey Him, because God wants wonderful things for them – all the power in the universe, which God created just for them. Without trusting and obeying God, any power at all would be harnessed only to destroy.

Such is the offer of the Two Trees.

It is not only trust and obedience that must be firm before handing over the keys to such power: it is discipline. Discipline must be a habit like walking and breathing. Without discipline, the best intentions, at the steering wheel of such power, must destroy.

**VerseScout:** *Mark 11:23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.*

*Hebrews 10:26-27 For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.*

*Luke 12:47 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Mark 11:23 is a glimpse of the enormous power God offers us. Hebrews 10:26-27 is a warning of the judgment that follows misuse of it. Luke 12:47-48 explains the mercy of not giving too much information, or power, to people apt to misuse it.

*The Tree of Life was available to Adam before he sinned, though he could only find it by walking with God. After he turned from God, the Tree became unavailable for the rest of Adam's physical life. Revelation 2:7 says it will again be available after our physical life, if we walk with God during our physical life.*

*The limits God placed, on the availability of the Tree of Life to man, illustrate the limits of God's patience with man, or of the limits of God's mercy for our sins, or of the limits on Jesus' shed blood to wash away sins. They are an outline whose details are filled in with Scriptures about Blood, Hardness of Heart, the Unforgivable Sin, etc. God's many wonderful promises are thus locked away behind the door named Bible Reading.*

There can be no lovelier route to the Trees. It begins amidst the Flowers of Love with the creation of Eve. When we saw her, we stopped worrying about any human soul ever even thinking about choosing to leave Heaven! Wo-man's beauty, her grace, her kindness, her intelligence were enough to dazzle Adam for as long as time could possibly last!

There is no possible way Adam could ever stop thanking God for such a blessing! No way Adam could stop trusting God, who had given such a blessing, to always want the best for Adam! No way, therefore, that Adam could ever stop obeying God's advice about how to keep such a blessing!

Next the route leads through the Fields of Faith with God's request that Adam trust His warning about the other tree. What a simple command! With Wo-man to keep him fully satisfied, what could possibly tempt him to disobey?!

The Valley of Decision is where man may reach up to accept what God brings down. When God designed robots, He called them animals. God made man a reflection of Himself, with the power to choose and create. What more could man possibly want than what God offers?

Over the Valley of Decision towers the other Tree.

Then finally, on the other side, there it is, the Tree of Grace, by the Rivers of Living Water.

## **The Seven Conditions of Grace**

Monitor #12 sprang to life. Stinky was talking with Dirtsy about how to get to the Tree of Grace.

"Hey, Dirt. I've got an idea. See that Tree? Let's sneak over there and grab a bite."

“Whyzat, Stink? What will that do?”

“I been reading the label. Says all about Grace. I looked it up. You get Grace, and God will leave you alone! No more punishment! No more of that Fire!”

“Must be a catch.”

“Nope. No more rules. Don’t have to do nothin. Don’t have to think about God again. Couple of bites, and our troubles are over!”

We were puzzled, watching the monitor. Angelo asked, “Why do they think Grace means God will leave them alone? Don’t they realize the whole point of Grace is to draw *closer* to God?”

“And the closer we are to God, the more God works on us to make us all that we can be?”

“And that God *is* Fire?”

“How is any of that what Stinky or Dirtsy *want*?”

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 12:28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear: 29 For our God is a consuming fire.*

“Who was in charge of the label? Did they leave off the conditions?”

“No. The label is clear. Stinky just remembers the parts he likes. The parts he doesn’t like, he doesn’t believe.”

Just to double check, I looked at the label. Sure enough, it was all there.

“The Tree of Grace. The fruit of this tree gives Eternal Life, Eternal Happiness, and Eternal Escape from the penalties of all sins, including many of the natural consequences of sins, with the following conditions.

“1. User must extend the same mercy to others. The mercy one receives will be in proportion to the mercy one extends.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 6:14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (See also Matthew 18, especially verses 23-35.)*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Matthew 18:23-35 tells of a man who was forgiven a great deal, but that Grace was withdrawn – he became “unforgiven” - because he would not “pass it on” by forgiving someone else even for something very small.*

*These verses raise the question, especially for Protestants who trust that*

a one-time simple “Decision for Christ” is all the preparation one needs for Heaven: “How can anyone get into Heaven if Grace has any conditions at all? Especially a condition this huge, by which perhaps no one could become cleansed enough for the purity of God’s Presence in Heaven?”

Some of the ways God rescues us despite these conditions are addressed in the next chapter. But first let’s consider more of God’s conditions.

“2. User must repent of – turn away from – error. Grace will not erase the consequences of sins which users intend to continue.”

**VerseScout:** Acts 3:19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Not all repentance is the same. Repentance is relative. It is not equally permanent, nor does it equally pervade every corner of our lives. Neither is it equal from one person to another, nor, within each person, from one time to the next.

The whole point of God’s punishment is to correct; see Hebrews 12. No other purpose for punishment is specified in the Bible. Therefore it is only natural that to the extent we turn from error, God will see no further need to correct those past errors. They will be “blotted out”. But to the extent errors remain unrepented of, needing correction, God will continue working with us. Besides Hebrews 12, consider Mark 9:49-50, where Jesus equates the cleansing qualities of salt with those of fire, and advises us to keep it within ourselves always.

“3. User must not use liberty from penalties as a license to sin.”

**VerseScout:** Romans 6:15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

James 4:1 Whence come wars and whence come fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your pleasures that war in your members? 2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and covet, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war; ye have not, because ye ask not. 3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may spend it in your pleasures. 4 Ye adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore would be a friend of the world maketh himself an enemy of God.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** To the extent we treat Grace as a “Get Out Of Hell Free” card, a license to sin, and we intend to sin, we have not repented, have we?

Grace is not a license to violate God’s laws deliberately – by choice – or worse yet, to not even bother reading God’s laws, just because Grace offers

*freedom from penalties!*

*Of course no one's repentance is perfect. So theoretically everyone blocks some of God's Grace.*

*That doesn't mean everyone will go to Hell, though, just because God still must discipline us. God has a whole range of ways to correct us short of Hell.*

*That does mean we are foolish to take Grace for granted, thinking we can now deliberately sin without consequence.*

*Grace has conditions, just like parole, and those penalties return when those conditions are violated. See Matthew 18:34-35.*

**“4. The user must be determined, even without the prod of penalties, to live by the principles of God’s laws.”**

***VerseScout:*** *Galatians 5:13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, [ISV: “an opportunity to gratify your flesh”] but by love serve one another.*

**“5.The user must love others as himself, and sacrifice for others as for himself. Especially for those most in need.”**

***VerseScout:*** *Luke 6:31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. 32 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. 33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. 34 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. 35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. 36 **Be ye therefore merciful,** as your Father also is merciful....38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For **with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.***

*James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before our God and Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world.*

*Matthew 25:44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? 45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as [as much as, or to the extent that] ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. 46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.*

**“6. The user cannot be proud. God really hates pride, because it is hard to help someone be better who already thinks**



he is the best. Pride is the feeling so poisonous that it will put your heart in Hell even if your soul is in Heaven. Ask Beelzebub how that works.”

**VerseScout:** *James 4:5 Or think ye that the scripture speaketh in vain? Doth the spirit which he made to dwell in us long unto envying? 6 But he giveth more grace. Wherefore the scripture saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble.*

“7. To the extent your actions differ from your intentions, Grace is measured according to your intentions. Of course, if you intend to only intend, or to act without your heart, soul, and mind fully engaged, that, too, will be measured.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 4:5 Therefore, stop judging prematurely, before the Lord comes, for he will bring to light what is now hidden in darkness and reveal the motives of our hearts. Then each person will receive his praise from God. [ISV]*

Our fallen brothers left some graffiti in some sand next to the Tree, which we had to clean up: “Lookit all the work God makes everyone do before He will be happy! You really have to EARN God’s respect before He will love you! Not so here! We are FREE! Here, we don’t have to make *anyone* like us!”

I thought about leaving it there and just adding my own answer. But I thought better of it, for Adam’s sake when he gets this far. I’ll limit my answer to my Diary.

Here it is:

“Meeting Grace’s conditions is not the same as ‘*earning*’ Grace any more than *qualifying* for a loan is the same as *paying off* the loan!”

**VerseScout:** *Romans 11:6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.*

Oops, there I go again, using examples from my viewing of God’s “Future Possibilities” globe. I need to stick to terms people right here in the present will understand.

“God loves me, and you, and even you, Dirtsy, way before you even *wish* you could do something to ‘earn’ love!”

**VerseScout:** *Romans 5:6 Christ died for us when we were unable to help ourselves. We were living against God, but at just the right time Christ died for us. 7*

*Very few people will die to save the life of someone else, even if it is for a good person. Someone might be willing to die for an especially good person. 8 But Christ died for us while we were still sinners, and by this God showed how much he loves us. [ERV]*

"To 'earn' something means to pay for what you are about to receive, with something of equal value. So what we need from God is Eternal Life, which cost Him His blood, as you see on this Tree. What are we going to give God that is of equal value to *that*? Or, for that matter, *that is of any value at all to God?*"

**VerseScout:** *Job 35:6 If you sin, what will that do to harm him? If you add transgression to transgression what will it do to him? 7 If you are righteous, what will you add to him? What can God receive from your efforts? 8 Your wickedness affects only yourself; and your righteousness, only human beings. [ISV]*

"Look at all that God asks of us. Does He ask anything for Himself? No! He wants us to forgive each other, says #1. He wants us to love each other, and sacrifice for each other, . He doesn't want us to act like we are better than each other, #6.

"So what about 2-4? God wants us to live by His laws. *But who do His laws benefit? Is there a single one of them that is for His benefit? Are they not for our own benefit, and for the benefit of each other?*"

Oh, look, here's a bit more graffiti that I missed: "Lookit how God makes you worship Him and give Him glory! What low self-esteem God has to make *that* the condition for you to get near Him!"

OK, Diary, are you still ready? "You actually think God needs *your* praise before He can look Himself in the mirror in the morning? He asks our honor for the same reason He is going to want children to honor parents: *not for the parents' benefit!* But so that the children will grow up smart and safe, able to live many years, safe from dangerous foolishness. Just as parents who honor God will live safely and wisely, and be a blessing to each other."

**VerseScout:** *Ephesians 6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. 2 Honour thy father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise;) 3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.*

"Where do I begin to answer your boast that you don't have to make anyone like you?! Are you actually comforted by the probability that no one likes you?!

"Here, our joy is in our Love. *Being* loved is nice and relaxing, but

*loving* gives meaning to life! We *love* whether or not we are *loved*! We serve those who can't repay us, just as God serves us! We love our enemies, and find, thereby, the truest of friends!"

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

# Chapter 14

## Laws from Hell

We learned what crazy ideas the demons are passing around about the Tree of Laws, during our next Hell Outreach mission trip.

**VerseScout:** *Revelation 14:9 ...If any man worship the beast and his image, ...10 ...he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:*

*Genesis 2:17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God's angels keep watch over Hell. Luke 16 tells how Abraham, in Heaven, teaches a man in Hell.*

*"The knowledge of good and evil" describes the contents of "laws". So when Comunicus writes about the "Tree of Laws", he must be referring to what the Bible names the "Tree of the knowledge of good and evil."*

They saw God's command not to eat of the Tree of Laws as a *curse* upon man! They actually thought the animals, not having the blessing of any command, or "Law", therefore had more "freedom" than man! They tried to tell us that because animals were never told anything they weren't supposed to do, that meant they had more "freedom"!

At first, of course, we assumed they were joking, so we laughed, relieved at the sign of some return of their former good humor. When their faces remained straight, we suspected they were being sarcastic. But after quite some time we finally gave up all hope of any evidence of rationality in their approach to the subject, and accepted the fact they really meant it. They were serious.

We wondered if any response on our part had any hope, since that much determination to twist the facts before them showed a similar disposition to twist whatever reasoning we might present to them. But we gave it our best, anyway.

They actually expected that once Adam and Woman realized they were given a commandment by God, an experience granted to no animal, that Adam and Woman would be "jealous" of the animals!

"Jealousy"! That deadly emotion which Beelzebub had felt towards God when all the trouble started! Apparently it didn't occur to the demons that Adam might *appreciate* the *reason* no animal had been found worthy to share this honor: because animals have no *capacity* to consciously

*decide* whether to do a thing. They have no capacity to *benefit* from a commandment given by God!

What a blessing! What a blessing to have that capacity, and what a blessing to be offered a pearl of the Wisdom of God! God has given humans alone, of all the creatures of Earth, the ability to consider logically whether to take one course of action or another! In other words, God has given humans the capacity to *create*!

This could not be, unless humans had also some capacity to visualize the consequences of doing this as opposed to that thing, and make a *decision*, on that basis, whether to do this or that. In other words, God has given humans the power to *choose*!

Choice! What a wonderful gift!

The demon drone: "Yeah, if God really loved humans He wouldn't give them even *one* law! God cares more about the animals than the humans, because the animals don't have *any* rules! They are Free!"

Yeah, right. Free robots.

This mockery was contradicted by another chorus of complaints from the same demons: "If God loved the humans He would give them *more* than one measly law! God is afraid of the humans getting too smart! He keeps them dumb to protect Himself from too much competition! If God really loved them He would let them have *all* those laws!"

The demons appeared unaware that they were contradicting themselves. We laughed, but wondered if humans could ever become that contradictory, on one hand blaming God for giving them so many laws, and on the other hand blaming God for denying them the wisdom of many more laws that God has kept "secret"?

Their complaining also contradicted their own eagerness to subject themselves to laws made up by other demons, which do not set them free but make them slaves, and which do not make them wise but make them fools!

**VerseScout:** *Luke 11:46 And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.*

*Colossians 2:20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, 21 (Touch not; taste not; handle not; 22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? 23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.*

*Matthew 5:27 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a*

woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Luke's warning is of men who love to burden others with laws from which they exempt themselves. Colossians' warning is of the willingness of average people to voluntarily submit to man-made laws, thinking that makes them wise! Just as Eve thought the knowledge of the tree would make her wise!

The rules that tormented the Colossians were typically based on God's Laws, but trivialized by their reduction to physical acts which human courts are able to judge. We call that "the letter of the law". Jesus calls us to live by "the spirit of the law" which raises its standard far higher, but also beyond the reach of human judges, leaving most enforcement to conscience.

"Laws", "rules", "instructions", "maps", and "manuals" all describe knowledge designed to guide human action, speech, and thought.

God's laws benefit man. They are short – about 1200 pages, in easy language that a child can read. Its principles inspired American freedom, including freedom of speech and religion, trial by jury, and a vote for all. (See documentary at [www.1620.us](http://www.1620.us))

The laws of men often benefit nobody. They fill entire buildings and change every year. None can read more than few of them, few can understand what they read, and few who understand what they read can agree what it means.

Hebrews 12 compares God's restrictions with those of parents.

They are the rules that must be followed to succeed in whatever the child chooses to grow up and do. God's laws likewise tell us how to do whatever we want in the way that will keep us safe and will lead us to what will truly satisfy us, and that will help us succeed in reaching goals as high as mountains. In other words, God's rules are rules for success. They are shortcuts to wisdom.

Yet God's laws are widely hated, for being too restrictive, by hypocrites who vote for human lawmakers to flood society with impossible human restrictions.

"God's prohibition of eating of this tree doesn't make any sense", droned the second chorus. "After all, even God admitted it was 'good', since that is the word He used on the very day that Tree evolved.

"Furthermore, it seemed apparent that eating of it would make humans wise. It would make them understand right and wrong. Why would God deny man something that 'good'?"

We answered, "What do you mean, denied by God? If God's intent were to deny it, why do you suppose He created it? *Obviously* God intends it for their eventual consumption, when they are ready. Its only discernible *purpose* is human consumption. Certainly no *animal* is able to digest its fruit!"

Our fallen brothers said God made that Tree only so there would be some wonderful pleasure to deny man!

**VerseScout:** *Isaiah 66:9 Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the LORD: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Forbidden sex.* We have no physical Tree of Knowledge before us today for Satan to accuse God of denying us. So sex is the thing Satan and his worshipers most accuse God of denying us.

*Sex is the pleasure most said to be a good which God denies man, even though the Bible opens with several romance stories starring women beautiful enough to trap kings. (Beginning with Genesis 12: read about Sarah, Rebekah, Rachael. Also Job 42:15, Esther 2:7-9.)*

*The taunts of God's critics, which include a great many professing Christians who just can't believe God's limits on sex are serious, are ridiculous. God's only restriction is that once you choose to have sex with someone, you have to keep having sex with that person as long as you are both alive. By what logic is that a "restriction"?*

*[Married couples have sex way more than unmarried folks:*  
<http://www.scienceofrelationships.com/home/2011/8/18/who-has-the-busier-bedroom-single-people-or-married-couples.html>*]*

*And by what logic can sex with someone you can't get along with that long be called "love"?*

*Can a man prefer Hell over Heaven, and while in Hell, insist he is in Heaven? Just as easily can a man violate God's "restrictions" on sex, or anything else, and suffer the many natural consequences which everyone knows about, for which he then blames God.*

*Satan didn't create pleasure. God did. So God is the One to listen to for tips on the best way to enjoy it. God didn't create something that good, to not be enjoyed. Isaiah 66:9. And He puts no restrictions on it that anyone with a little common sense who is not at war with reality shouldn't be able to verify for himself as being for his own happiness.*

*See "Fornication isn't the delight you thought" and "Why Laws Restricting Sodomy will Benefit Families, America, and especially Sodomites" at*  
[http://saltshaker.us/BibleStudies/BenefitsOfSodomyLaws\\_Adultery.pdf](http://saltshaker.us/BibleStudies/BenefitsOfSodomyLaws_Adultery.pdf) *and* <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Pm065g3cCa0>

*"If God had any intention of ever feeding them", the demons said, "why make them wait? What good reason could God possibly have for making them wait?"*

*"We trust God", we answered, "Who made the tree obviously for human eating, to invite them to eat at dinner time!"*

*The demons were unfazed. "The real question you need to answer: why should they have to wait? If it's good later, why isn't it good now?"*

*God is teaching us patience today. Some of us adopted, on this day, Sarcamson's habit of "rolling our eyes". All of us felt like doing it, but we mostly suppressed it. It didn't seem, somehow, very angelic.*

*We glanced over our shoulders at Eternity, stretching out farther*

than any but God could see. From where we stood, from now until the very end, if it had an end, was “now”. We had to do mental somersaults to remember that the demons, by separating from Oneness with God, hence with infinite Mass and Energy, were locked in “time”. (Unlike ourselves, who indeed were *working* in Time, but did not *Live* in it.)

This created, in them, an anxiety about things not already happening; a fear that there might not be “enough time” to do them. We wanted to tell them to trust God, who made Time in the first place, to have made *enough* of it. But their determination not to trust God is what turned Time into a prison for them in the first place. So we didn’t know what to say.

I finally blurted out, “If everything that ever will happen, happened at the same time, in the first moment of our existence, what would there be left to do, for the whole rest of eternity?”

Either the demons didn’t hear me or they didn’t want to.

I tried again. “If every meal that Adam and Wo-man were ever in the future to eat, were eaten in the same moment, would not that transform the pleasure of eating into torture and destruction?”

The demons definitely did not want to hear me. They challenged us to justify God not allowing Adam and Wo-man to eat of that tree *this very instant!* The common sense I had offered them wasn’t enough, they said. That was just speculation, they said. They wanted *facts*. They demanded to know *precisely* why God had not allowed Adam and Wo-man to eat of that tree *right now!*

What, are we supposed to explain the movements of every electron or reject its reality?! Must we explain what holds the moon in its place, or refuse to look at it?! Must we explain every action of God, or refuse to listen to Him?!

Then by that reasoning, let’s order Adam and Woman to explain what makes food taste good, or refuse to eat! Let’s demand they *explain* the joy of procreation, before they may *share* it! If they cannot explain these two basics, upon which *they know* their continued *physical* existence depends, why should they demand that God explain His warnings for the *eternal* life of their *souls* before they will heed?

Why should they imagine they have the capacity to understand any conceivable explanation of the foundation of Joy for all eternity, when they cannot even comprehend how the most basic physical experiences provide them pleasure each moment?

**VerseScout:** Luke 12:25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? 26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least,



*why take ye thought for the rest? ...31 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. 32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.*

Eye rolling became a general problem. Poor Sarcamson developed such a case of it that he had to have his eyes bandaged.

And all this mental turmoil over the greatest blessing of all creation: the power to choose! To visualize! To analyze! To create!

Just as it would kill a tree to begin its life full size from the ground up, before it has had time to grow roots below ground, even so God has not given humans the same unlimited knowledge He Alone has, from their beginning, before they have time to develop a foundation of love, obedience, and discipline.

Therefore as humans visualize the consequences of the choices before them, the accuracy of their visualization will be very limited, just as ours is.

But by trusting God to warn them of dangerous consequences, and by limiting their choices to those matters over which God has given them authority, what a team they will make!

To animals, God gave only an orientation towards doing what was needed for their fulfillment. Yes, what lovable creatures animals are! But the power of thinking, of reasoning, of analyzing, of choosing, of creating, is not theirs, but man's alone, of all on the Earth!

And now, Adam, God has given you your first challenge: a warning that of all the wonderful food growing around you, there is but one thing you should *not* eat. Just one, of ten thousand things you *can* eat *with God's blessing!*

What a simple first test. How can you fail? But were it a test for animals, they would not have the capacity for it. So God protects them by putting a kind of *orientation* within them towards eating good things; actually an *instinct*, something so automatic it does not even quite rise to the level of "desire". Neither does it rise to the level of intelligence. Animals can never have the capacity to adapt to new situations that is given humans. They will necessarily lead a much cruder, more dependent existence.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

I logged in to Buttbook. I looked for Beelzebub's page. I couldn't find it. It wasn't there. Is that possible? But I was certain I heard some demons talking about Beelzebub's Buttbook account.

Finally it occurred to me to look under “Lucifer”. Sure enough, there it was.

“Do you know Lucifer?” I checked “Yes.”

I clicked on “Add Enemy.”

I began reading his posts. One was “How can the time for more knowledge ever not be right?”

It would be a fair question, were there no God who has eloquently warned us about the harm of too much information too early. Were we evolved instead of created as Beelzebub now insists we imagine, with no one watching over us, caring for us, feeding us, but ourselves, in a mad race against everyone else to be the “fittest” so we can “survive” on the backs of others, then of course we would need the edge of every bit of knowledge we can process.

I clicked “Send message”.

I texted,

For one thing, because there can be no freedom to the extent all one’s choices must be made immediately, before one has time and experience to think about them and experience some of the consequences.

Freedom requires one decision at a time.

God created some animals to consume an entire month’s supply of food in a single bite. But not man. God created man to enjoy their food, their life, their ideas, and even their relationship with God, one bite at a time, one choice at a time. Because choice is the fuel of freedom, a gift to be savored.”

**VerseScout:** *Isaiah 28:10 For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little:*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Commentator John Gill explains this verse as a description of how children are taught: “a small lesson out of one book, and a small lesson out of another; a little one day, and a little on the next, and so on, that their memories may not be overburdened.”*

Unlike animals, God is giving humans an infinity of choices, and an infinity of possibilities through their walk with Him. They may choose what kind of human they want to be. That is even more choice than He gave angels. More freedom than He gave us.

God’s Laws are indeed Holy, and nourishing. They will

prepare men for Heaven.

Heaven is Infinite Freedom. It has to be, to be Heaven. But infinite freedom means nothing without infinite choices. That's why God created Time, to give man enough time to consider all their choices.

Beelzebub allowed my post to remain, so he could respond,

“Oh, so now we are free? That's a piece of news! I had thought that if I were free I would be able to do Twisteas all month without getting sick, kick the roses barefoot without pain, not be held down by this unwelcome force called ‘gravity’, and I would be free to kill God!”

That was quickly followed by mocking and jeers from many others who shared Beelzebub's strange antipathy towards reality.

After letting the rage build for a couple of days, I posted,

Obviously, “freedom” means no restraint *from any other force than reality* from achieving whatever you want.

The freedom God grants us is like wanting to paint, and being shown an infinite canvas with an infinite supply of paint, and commissioned to paint anything you want.

One may certainly choose to believe he has no paint, or that paint does not stick to canvas, or any number of myths which will guarantee failure. One may even choose to believe eating the paint will make him healthy, and that banging the canvas on his head will cure his headache.

One may certainly choose to ignore reality, and to forfeit freedom. But that is only the extreme, ultimate proof that he is completely, perfectly free.

But of course “free to fail”, “free to be stupid”, or “free to be a slave” is a perspective of Freedom which tragically understates its potential. “Free to achieve all you desire, with God's help” captures one of my favorite things about Heaven.

Within the hour my post was removed, I was “unenemied”, and posts about me began appearing with a level of contempt usually reserved for God. I felt honored.

~~~~~

A few friends joined me on a walk on the new planet. Not far into it, we came across several demons busily kicking a thicket of roses barefoot, and then screaming in pain that a God of love would never allow so much evil in the world, so God must either not love, or must not be in control.

We stepped forward and tried to reason with them.

“Uh, the pain you are screaming about might be from the thorns on those roses puncturing your toes when you kick them.”

“Judging, judging, judging!” they answered. “Can’t you ever just open your mouths a little without judging us? Go away!”

“But we have no unkind desire for you”, we tried. “We don’t want you to suffer. We are not sentencing you to suffer, which is what ‘judging’ is. We are not the cause of your suffering. We simply want to point out reality to you so you can *stop* suffering.”

“Look, Bozo, life is complicated enough already. We have to live with reality several minutes every day. So now we just want to relax, and be left alone, and take a break from reality, and just do something for our own entertainment without you bookworms coming over here telling us we haven’t studied reality hard enough – that now we are supposed to do it every second of the day!”

“Oh, we’re sorry”, we apologized. “Entertainment is your reason. Yes, we see that now.”

That of course softened them. One of them even invited us to join them. Very generous, after how insulting we had been.

We were hopeful, seeing the door to conversation crack open a little. “But how did you learn about this exciting means of entertainment?” we ventured.

One of them produced a thick book of rules for entertainment. Kicking roses is not something any dummy can do properly, we learned. In order to earn a high score, one must aim at a particular angle, and that is just one of about a hundred rules that must be memorized and religiously followed to keep the referee from blowing his whistle. And one must memorize statistics for use as ammunition in friendly arguments.

In fact, entire universities were set up to identify, train, watch, and honor rose kickers.

How could we reach them? How could we help them? One of us carried a pocket printer, with which we printed out a small booklet about thorns, that explained how thorns have the ability to poke you when you kick them. We thought maybe if they would read it, they would understand how their actions – not God’s creation – were the reason for their pain,,

and would stop.

Cautiously, humbly, politely, graciously, we offered them the book. After quite some effort on our part to get their attention, one of them finally glanced at it, but only to sneer, “that’s too long, and I am way too busy. If you’ve got anything worth saying, you can say it in a page.”

Logically, it shouldn’t even take a whole sentence to point out that when you kick roses, their thorns will make your toes bleed. But these demons had made themselves believe 1,000 pages of lies about how thorns don’t really exist, and how there is no greater pleasure than the feeling of roses slamming into toes. The myth of thorns is a conspiracy fabricated by God to deprive demons of pleasure, they “knew”.

Normally it takes longer to disprove a lie than to state it. So how does one disprove 1,000 pages in a single page? To say it another way, if reality itself is unable to persuade them directly, what can be said in just one page that can persuade them?

Nevertheless, promised that a single page might be read, we spent a great deal of time and concentration boiling down our message into a page. We offered it to them.

They were too busy with their kicking to look away to the page we offered. Sadly, we started to walk away. A couple of us saw the beer cartons, and had the idea of stuffing the page down into the cartons where the cardboard handles stick up.

In the midst of this, one of the demons picked up a page, skimmed it for about ten seconds, then wadded it up and tossed it saying “this doesn’t prove anything.” He resumed his kicking and cursing.

As hopeless as his reaction was, we were encouraged that he had given us ten seconds of his attention! We tried to talk to him. But before we had gotten out ten words he cut us off with “It’s no use talking with you! You’re not going to change your mind anyway!” as he went back to his kicking and cursing.

**VerseScout:** Acts 9:3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: 4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? 5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “Pricks”, from the Greek κεντρον, means a point, that stings, or a goad – a pointed stick used to direct oxen or cattle. A nurse who draws blood “pricks your finger”, we say.

A great many sins have consequences that hurt us as much as kicking roses barefoot, except that the pain is usually not that instantaneous. Just like in Hell, most sins in America today have entire industries built up around them,

*with their own stacks of rules, generally unwritten, requiring much harder work to reach certain rewards than pursuing them honestly. And they provide enormous entertainment for spectators, as if they were sports events, through news reports, and dramatizations in books and movies and on TV.*

*Acts 9:3-5 applies the metaphor to the absurdity of attacking God, or attacking people who love Him and who are trying to tell you about Him. This therefore applies to attacking all that God is: to attacking Love, 1 John 4:8, 16. Or Truth, John 14:6.*

We flew away. But we took with us a copy of their 1,000 page rule book. We stopped to look it over. We were fascinated with their conspiracy theory that thorns don't really exist, but are only alleged by God to exist in order to deprive them of pleasure.

We had previously theorized that the thing about reality that they resist is how complicated it is. We had assumed they are only interested in evidence of anything if it is simple and novel and requires little research, which is why they will not tolerate a precise statement of reality, or evidence that clarifies reality, that is complicated and boring and takes concentration.

But these 1,000 pages plainly disprove that theory. Indeed we look around at all evil and find it requires more concentration, involves more rules, takes more work, and creates more problems than good does.

In particular, I was curious about my old friend Beelzebub. What drives him so far away? How has he cultivated such a preference for an existence so joyless, so difficult?

We also explored the theory that novelty is what they demand in an idea. They are as interested in speculation as in facts. More intrigued by dramatic lies than boring precise truth. More interested in the novelty of an idea than its veracity.

Certainly there is more variety in fantasy than in reality, since there is no limit to the nonsense available to imagination, while there is only one reality.

But the problem with that theory is the impatience we encounter with evidence. If novelty always interested them, evidence that clarifies reality would be the more welcome, since it is the more dramatic, the farther one's assumptions have departed from reality. But we find the opposite: the farther one recedes from reality, the more one resists evidence.

That left one last theory which we now begin to consider: the preference we were dealing with was for accusations. The demons don't like research that consists of challenging their favorite accusations.

As we investigated this possibility we narrowed the problem down

to what we called “pure accusations”.

Honest accusations are not a problem. They identify words or deeds which are causing problems. They are supported by evidence which can be scrutinized, and they welcome scrutiny, so that the truth may be established and problems solved.

Pure accusations, by contrast, are not supported by evidence. In fact they are made carefully enough that evidence cannot touch them, either to disprove them or to prove them. When evidence can touch them, they accuse evidence itself.

The other factor that makes accusations pure is that even supposing they are true, they are presented as if nothing can be done about them. This protects the accuser from any pressure of responsibility to do something about the one or thing accused. Since nothing can allegedly be done about them, it matters little if the information about them is accurate. The only value of pure accusations, therefore, is their entertainment value.

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 1:4 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The CEV translation puts it: “You needed to warn them to stop wasting their time on senseless stories and endless lists of ancestors. Such things only cause arguments. They don't help anyone to do God's work that can only be done by faith.”*

A pure accusation, therefore, can't be disproved. If believed, it is also believed that the harm can't be corrected. A pure accusation is a perfect excuse for doing nothing different, saying nothing different, or believing nothing different than whatever departure from reality has become a comfortable habit, while blaming anyone and everyone but oneself.

We could still hear the screams and cursing in the distance. Our fallen brothers have chosen to make their decisions carelessly, without the concentration and study required to keep their dreams from becoming nightmares.

My former friend Beelzebub is insanely hostile to correctly discerning what is real. He lies, and laughs. He hurts, destroys, and laughs. He kicks the roses, bleeds, screams, curses, and laughs. Is that really, seriously, his choice? Is that really the choice of his followers?

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 6:4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the*

*Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.*

*Luke 12:47 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The warning of Hebrews 6:4 is relative – a matter of degree, according to Luke 12. That is, it is to the extent one knows better, and does wrong anyway, deliberately, that it makes no sense to say “oops, I didn’t mean to”.*

*But Satan really “knows better”. He apparently knows the consequences (how much his choices hurt him), has experienced them, chooses them, and laughs at them. Why? Why does any human follow?*

Our experience with the demons was a preview of what could happen to Adam and Wo-man if they became obsessed with laws before they established faith in God.

Even though the laws of the Tree are God's laws, we understood that any laws followed by humans must be processed, interpreted, and applied by humans, which would invite many errors because of the undeveloped state of human understanding and experience. And that if they proceeded without listening to God, their errors would not only go uncorrected, but would become tragic, cruel addictions, sustained by pride.

It may seem ironic to say that obeying God is more important than following God's Laws, but it is a fact that it is possible to follow God's laws in a way that God has forbidden. It is possible to use God's laws, not as a guide for love, but as a prop for pride and a license for terror!

May Adam and Wo-man be spared that unhappy addiction!

The mental sickness necessary to suppress conscience enough to feel righteous treating others like that, we called “deangelization”.

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 13:4 The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing: but the soul of the diligent shall be made fat. 20:4 The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing. 26:16 The sluggard is wiser in his own conceit than seven men that can render a reason.*

*1 Corinthians 9:24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. 25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a*



corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: 27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Success at anything, including obeying God, requires discipline. Which takes effort – mostly mental. Weak intellectual, physical, and/or sexual discipline leads to failure, which leads to shame/insecurity, which leads to a search for some gimmick or addiction to quiet the ravings of conscience that is less demanding than reality and God. That is the attraction of idolatry, and of the suffering demanded by God-substitutes – one’s own suffering, and human sacrifice of others.

Examples of demands of idols today are the austerity demanded by climate myths, and tolerance/acceptance of attacks by Moslems as deserved. This is all driven by lack of enough love to want discipline. That same lack of love drives dehumanization, of our critics, and of those we want to exploit.

What is the attraction of boasting? Is there insecurity? Why weren’t demons satisfied to be sons of God?

Why such total rejection of intellectual discipline, the preference being for suffering, to quiet the ravings of conscience?

~~~~~

God held out a Future Possibilities globe where we could all see it. It showed humans imagining themselves unworthy to even live. It showed other humans inventing cruel rituals and promising that performing them would make people “worthy”, “manly”, or even “heroes”! And wise!

One was to pierce their skin thousands of time to paint pictures on it. Another was to cut deep into their flesh in order to leave scars in grotesque patterns. They developed many ways to torture their own bodies. “Penance” was a word some had for their cruelties.

Some tortured also their hearts and consciences by the unthinkable tortures they inflicted on others as part of their savage “religion”, while they shouted, as if they had any comprehension of God, or any interest in acquiring any, “God is Greater”!

A couple of us grabbed the globe to reset it to “Origins”. How did such tragic nonsense begin?

We watched nonsense begin sometimes from no explicit communication from God, but only from the vague tug of conscience. Sometimes goals were clearly communicated from God, but added to or subtracted from by men through malicious interpretation.

Sometimes God's recommended goals were correctly understood but without faith in God for help to reach them. That led to depression, at best. At worst, it led to the invention of heavy, if not impossible burdens through which it was imagined that God's acceptance might be "earned".

What an insult to the Love of God, depicting God as so cruel that what it takes to entertain Him is to watch His People torture themselves!

It reminded me of how goats court.

When the female's hormones are all lined up, she wags her tail a lot. The male has to be alert, because her tail is very small. We call that "flagging" because for the male that is like waving a flag.

When the buck sees that, he goes into action. He cranes his mouth under his belly and pees in it. Then he uses his mouth to sprinkle its fragrance over as much of his fur as he can reach. Then he prances upwind of the female, who says in rapturous delight, in goat language, "What a MAN!"

The rest of the time, when goats aren't courting, goats love to play a game with each other. They rear back to get in position for a powerful lunge forward, and then slam their heads against each other as hard as possible. This is the goat equivalent of a human kiss.

When we first observed this behavior that God has programmed into goats, we just stood there with our mouths open, our chins nearly down to our knees. And yet the human behavior we see in the Future Possibilities Globe makes goats seem downright civilized.

An interesting side note: the latest photos of Beelzebub show him looking more and more like a goat. When the wind isn't blowing the other way too hard we can tell he smells like one, too – even when he is evangelizing and making himself as attractive as he can. It takes a special SCI to be attracted to that. (Significant Cerebral Interruption.) When he is just relaxing, it's a whole lot worse than ever seduced any goat.

Making choices that bring joy, happiness, and love require a lot of thinking, concentrating, and staying alert to sin. It takes caring enough to keep your brain turned on, to discern God's solutions.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 24:42 Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. (See also Matthew 25:13; Mark 13:35; Luke 21:36; Acts 20:31; 1 Thessalonians 5:6; 1 Peter 4:7; Revelation 3:3)*

It took much less strenuous mental effort for men in the Future Possibilities Globe to invent their own "solutions." Unhooking their brains seemed more "fun".

When that led to such physical pain, some of them might have

stopped had they considered that thinking intelligently, as hard as that is, isn't as hard as physical torture. But even those *not* proud of how much torture they could suffer were unwilling to *add*, to their physical suffering, the mental exertion it would take to realize how stupid their "religion" was so they could stop.

So as an alternative to thinking hard, people chose to suffer hard, imagining that to be a shortcut to acceptance by God.

And just to eliminate any possible confusion from the fact that God emphatically disagrees, people dispensed with God's acceptance altogether and sought instead the imagined acceptance of their imaginary "gods".

Although suffering is less comfortable than thinking, it is definitely *simpler*. Pain is *infinitely* less complicated than thinking. Suffering is so easy that a baby can do it.

Always, the tragedy was fueled by lack of faith in God. It was as if humans thought man was created to meet God's goals, instead of God's goals being created to benefit man.

**VerseScout:** *Mark 2:27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:*

"But if Adam and Wo-man have all knowledge", Ditsy asked God, "they won't even need *faith* in You, because they will *know*, won't they?"

A logical question, since Faith is the substance of things not seen. What one *sees*, one needs no faith to *accept*, I assumed. Certainly there is a sense in which faith fills in enough gaps in our knowledge that we can make decisions about things.

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 11:1 Now faith is the assurance that what we hope for will come about and the certainty that what we cannot see exists. (ISV)*

*Hebrews 11:1 Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. (KJV)*

"Can we help?" I asked. "Can we teach them so well that they will never be so foolish as to turn from Love and disobey? Can we show them the consequences – death – so clearly that they can never possibly stumble?"

God looked at Beelzebub. We followed His gaze and saw the folly of our scheme. God's glance at Beelzebub was all the answer Ditsy and I needed. What more evidence of God is there to know, than Beelzebub knows?

Beelzebub *is* knowledge without faith in God, personified. Who

could ever be taught so well as Beelzebub? Who could ever comprehend the consequences as thoroughly as Beelzebub? Yet knowledge did not save him. To the contrary, it was his knowledge itself which condemned him far more than had he done the same things in relative ignorance of the consequences.

**VerseScout:** *Luke 12:47 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.*

We understood that intelligence can only grow straight and true on a foundation of faith. All the intelligence in the universe brings one no closer to faith; while faith *inevitably* leads to intelligence, since all who follow God will be led by God to the greatest possible Wisdom.

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 111:10 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do his commandments: his praise endureth for ever.*

Beelzebub's knowledge was close enough to infinite to support the conclusion that even infinite knowledge can't make up for lack of faith. He certainly knows God exists, and that all God says is true and is for Beelzebub's own benefit, including what God says about love, forgiving, giving, work, prayer, wisdom, and purpose.

**VerseScout:** *James 2:19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.*

*1 Corinthians 13:2 What if I could prophesy and understand all secrets and all knowledge? And what if I had faith that moved mountains? I would be nothing, unless I loved others. (CEV)*

Beelzebub used to understand reality. Now he just bangs his head against it. It has been his choice to throw tantrums against all that he knows.

The memory tugged at me, of my resolve to try to talk with Beelzebub. Although I didn't know what to say, and he seemed pretty determined to resist anything anyone said, I felt a duty to add my voice to the pressure of Love upon his charred, blistered heart.

After all, we were once the closest of friends.

God's answer – his glance at Beelzebub – raises the question, which I now asked: "Considering how much pressure laws impose on man, and the consequent unlikelihood that man would ever *want* to be subject to them anyway, why did You even bother to tell him to leave them alone?"

"Do you remember how Beelzebub's reason for seeking wisdom changed? Before the Great Tragedy, why did he seek wisdom?"

"The same reason we all do", someone answered: "to understand best how to make his words and actions shine with love."

**VerseScout:** *Romans 13:8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. 9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. Love is the fulfillment of the law.*

*Mark 3:4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Love "fulfills" law – the purpose of law is to encourage relationships of love – to define that human interaction which channels love. The purpose of law is to save life, and to do good. To the extent any population reaches the conclusion that the purpose of a law is to destroy life, and to do evil, they regard, and treat, that law as illegitimate.

The Pharisees pervert God's Holy Laws, with these Holy purposes, into a license to "devour widows' houses", Mark 12:40. American courts today egregiously turn law against the very purpose of law in abortion cases.

Mark 3:4 models a legal defense copied in American law, generally called the "Necessity Defense". If your violation of law was necessary to save life, you are innocent. Because the purpose of all law is to do good. Therefore in any situation where following it would do harm, it is not the intent of lawmakers that the law be obeyed.

Yet the Pharisees "held their peace" upon being reminded of the legal defense. They were shamed into dropping their formal charges against Jesus – the penalty for working on the Sabbath was death. But they refused to validate Jesus' defense by verbally agreeing. Their hearts still raged against Jesus.

Similarly today, state supreme courts have heard the Necessity Defense in about 100,000 abortion prevention cases. "Is it legal in America to save life, or to kill?" State supreme courts say judges don't need to answer the question, and juries can't be allowed to know the question exists, because the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that unborn babies aren't "life". Which is the opposite of what *Roe v. Wade* said: that if we ever find out [from fact-finders, such as juries] that unborn babies are humans/persons, then "of course...the case" for legal abortion "collapses". But the Supreme Court has refused since 1973 cases which

address the factual evidence which the 1973 justices pretended to be unable to grasp.

“And to what use does he put his wisdom now?”

“To have something to brag about”, a few of us mumbled sadly, mechanically, while others laughed at the irony.

***VerseScout:** Romans 3:27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. 28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** What is the attraction of boasting? Insecurity? Why wasn't Eve satisfied with the Garden of Eden? There wasn't even anyone else to impress. Why wasn't she satisfied – why aren't humans today satisfied – to be sons of God?*

*Lack of faith in God to enable us to succeed makes us insecure. Laziness leads us to trust substitutes for reality that seem easier.*

Imagine! Laws whose purpose is to define words and actions which manifest love, made into criteria for how much one is superior to others, which is the very opposite of love!

No, we couldn't imagine, as hard as we tried.

Beelzebub had to first delude himself into thinking there is anything any soul can do or say or think that will make it any more precious than another soul.

Then he had to pretend that superiority in any skill or ability is honorable or admirable or of any advantage, or any cause of happiness for anyone, even when it isn't applied in a way that blesses others.

“Beelzebub demonstrates, for you, that there is another reason a soul can desire to obey wise, love-fulfilling laws, than to become more useful, or successful, or more of a blessing.

“There is no other reason that is *smart*, but there is a *reason*.

“Boasting is such a *poor* reason! The very *impulse* to feel superior creates so much more pressure than any amount of failure to obey laws for the right reasons!”

~~~~~

It is ironic that God has created a test that seems the opposite of what it is. It seems like a *restriction* on wisdom, but it is the *door* to wisdom. It is a test of whether Adam and Wo-man will trust God's warning; if they will, as we have, that will prove their readiness for more wisdom. If they won't, and eat, they will learn God's standards all right but

instead of the adventure of mountain-high goals they will feel the shame of failure; both because even with God's help it takes much time to master them, and because they will struggle alone, not trusting God's help to attain them.

Their failure will only make them afraid.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:10 And he [Adam] said [to God], I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The difference between adults and children learning music or a language illustrates both the advantage and the challenge of fully understanding one's goals way before one has developed the capacity to reach them.*

*Children have no idea how much there is to learn, and how much must be learned before they can apply their learning at an adult level. Expectations of them are lowered to their capacity. Their next meal does not depend on their progress. The steps ahead are made easy, attainable, and fun by patient adults.*

*Adults, by contrast, fully understand how bad they are, and how many years of study will be necessary before they can apply their learning in a world of adults who are less patient and indulgent than parents.*

*The experience is so relatively discouraging for adults that the myth is common that children can learn faster than adults! This myth is routinely given as an excuse for adults to not even try! (Although immigrants who need jobs don't have that option!) The opposite is true: concept for concept, word for word, note for note, adults learn much faster. The more thoroughly one understands one's goal, the faster one can reach it. But few adults have the luxury of patient, indulgent, helpful, omnipresent teachers to swaddle them in baby steps, that children have.*

*The ideal is a trusted patient teacher, no cost, unlimited time, adult comprehension, adult capacity, and child expectations. That is what God offered in Eden, which Adam destroyed by firing his teacher, and refusing to "practice" his lesson, in his quest to "grow up" way too fast.*

# Part 4: God's Past

## Chapter 15

### When God Was Alone

#### First Anniversary of the Earth, Sundown

It didn't make any sense. There it was in front of me. It was possible. But who could comprehend it? So I asked God, "*How* was it possible, for Adam and Eve, to *not want* to obey you?! Surely it will never be possible for them or any of their future children, should they fall, to never want to turn back to You!"

"May it never be!" God said, gazing upon our fallen brothers. Our gaze followed His. We were ashamed that, though their fall was so recent, yet we were already able to forget what had happened. No, I shouldn't say we forgot. We never comprehended it in the first place. We still cannot comprehend the terrible state *actually chosen* by our fallen brethren, and so it only follows that we still cannot comprehend any possibility that the man and woman might actually choose to *suspect* God rather than *trust and obey*.

"I want to tell you why I created consciousness."

The story title electrified the Host! This was the promised answer to a question it had never occurred to any of us to ask, and yet once promised, became the most burning question outside of Hell itself!

It was dark now on the Earth, and something instinctively inside us made us want to snuggle down with happy anticipation to hear what promised to be a long, fascinating adventure.

"I want to explain what it was like before I created *you*. I want to explain what it was like *when I was alone*."

#### When God Was Alone

OK, God had our attention! God was offering to answer another question it had never occurred to me to ask before God started dropping teasers about it recently, but now that I had heard the question, I just had to know the answer! I "couldn't" wait! An impatience welled up within me that I had never before experienced, whose effect upon my body was to make it shut up and listen. My ears even seemed to lean forward in the hope of hearing the story a little sooner than if they were a few lovatons farther back.

"I want you to understand the nature of consciousness, and



loneliness, and love, and evil.”

But, but, how could such wildly unrelated conditions be combined into a single story? It seemed impossible, yet God was saying it was not only possible but its explanation was imminent. All of us were incredulous, yet curious. A new word was created that night: we were all “intrigued”.

“I was happy even before I created you. Even when I was alone, there was much to do, much to explore, much to learn, much to enjoy. I studied many possibilities, created many substances, created many worlds from them, performed many experiments.

“I should explain the difference between those ‘worlds’ and the ones you know. They were composed out of my Breath, just like the worlds you know.

“I formed them from different matter than the Lovatons of which your bodies are composed, or the Atoms of which the present physical universe is composed. But that is not what most distinguished those worlds from these.

“You could say those worlds existed ‘only’ in my ‘imagination’. The process was like physical birth, where a seed from outside is introduced into a womb where processes native to the womb act upon it to cause it to grow until it is ‘finished’, or ready to leave the womb and continue its growth in the environment for which it was prepared.

“In the same manner, I introduced the Seed, a Vision, a Possibility, into the Womb of my Imagination, where it was nourished by the ‘blood’ of Wisdom and Concentration, causing it to grow and take form. When the World was just the way I wanted it, I released it from the grip of my Imagination and let it Exist.

### **Souls give Worlds their Purpose**

“The essential difference between those worlds and these was that those had little reason to exist outside the Womb of my imagination. They did not feed me, or entertain me, or provide me any necessities. Their usefulness to me was in what I could learn by creating them; once created, their purpose was ended. In other words, they were useful to me while they were in the ‘womb’ of my imagination, and my concentration and Wisdom was busy perfecting and completing them. After they no longer engaged my concentration, their purpose was ended. So although they ‘existed’, their actual ‘existence’ was of less interest than their formation.

“Not that I hated them. I still look back upon many of them with affection. But they belong to the past. The difference between the past and the present is that while the past is good to remember and learn from, the

present is where work is done and relationships built.

“But the universe before you is the opposite: its continued existence serves a greater purpose than its formation.

“The reason for this difference, of course, is that before I created you, I had never created souls. With other souls besides my own, worlds and universes have a reason to exist. They serve the needs and desires of the souls for which I created them.

That is why the universe you see before you, which I created over the past six Days, is the first nonliving thing I have ever created which has a *reason to exist*. The souls I created, that is, you, Adam, and his wife, nourish *me*: you feed my hunger for fellowship with kindred Consciousness. But even if you did not, you have Consciousness like I do, so things derive their reason to exist by whether they serve *your* needs, as well as whether they serve Mine.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 6:40 The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.*

*Matthew 10: 24 The disciple is not above his master; nor the servant above his lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord.*

*Genesis 1:26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. 27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.*

“Oh, I created ‘life’ before. But of course ‘life’ is relative. The heat from a Sun beating upon a dead cold rock is *interaction*. A plant which takes creative steps to maintain its own existence is a greater degree of life. An animal with the capacity to feel emotions, and to be conscious of its own life and health, and with complicated programming enabling it to perform intelligent tasks, is yet more ‘alive’.

“Such Life I created before. But never before did I create actual *souls* with the capacity to choose between alternatives, which means to evaluate which is better and which worse; in other words, to know good and evil. And with the capacity also to create: to interact with reality to alter it for the better.

“Of course animals make impromptu choices, whether to eat this or that, run this way or that. Plants ‘choose’ whether to drive a root down one way or another.

“But as you have already noticed, those ‘choices’ are so bound by My programming for each species that the ‘choices’ made within any

given species are consistent and predictable.

“But you, your souls, and now human souls, I made with the ability to think long and hard about alternatives, and about how to make them happen. I have not limited your range of choices. You can choose to behave like an angel or like a demon. Like a roaring lion or like a meek lamb.

“I gave you language, to articulate ideas that you can’t physically sense – something beyond the interest or capacity of any animal.

“I gave you love. I gave you the capacity to care for others as much as for yourselves: the capacity to choose to help others even when that hurts you.

“That level of consciousness is able to relish life, and understand death. So when I form it, I don’t want it to have to die.

“I conceived the possibility early of souls like yourselves, but I didn’t want to do it until my plans were complete; I felt that when I was ready to do it, I would not tolerate mistakes, because I would want souls which would live with me forever. After all, they would have Consciousness, as I do!

“The more I explored possibilities, the more I wanted to create them. But even though I was utterly alone, and even though now that I have your fellowship I could never think of making you cease to exist so that I would be lonely again, I want you to understand how it could be that I didn’t feel the longing of loneliness at the time.

“You see, consciousness can only desire what it can visualize. I made a worm with no more capacity than to visualize processing a speck of dirt for its food. Because it has no more capacity than that, it is just as happy, chewing dirt, as you are doing the happiest things you do. May that humble analogy help you understand that before I had visualized your fellowship, I was absolutely content without you. It wasn’t until I visualized you, and laid plans for every last tiny part of your souls and bodies, that I was overcome with anticipation until I had spoken you into existence!

**VerseScout:** *Luke 12:49 I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *This verse confirms that God is able to anxiously anticipate a future event. But could the converse possibly be true, that there was a time before God anticipated the event?*

*Jesus continually challenged us to understand how God thinks by meditating on how humans think in various situations. Certainly human creativity is a process of letting a goal mature in one’s imagination over time, through concentration. Certainly one grasps one’s goal at the end of the process*

*much more distinctly than at the beginning.*

"I want you to understand another basic principle of consciousness.

"And by the way, don't think I am talking about just My own personality, as I describe these characteristics of Consciousness. I am talking about the inescapable nature of Consciousness itself. These characteristics cannot be changed. I cannot create Consciousness by some other formula that escapes these features. The characteristics I want to explain to you are just the way Consciousness works; whether it is My own, or yours, or even Beelzebub's."

We looked with astonishment towards Beelzebub. He must have heard his name mentioned, because his head snapped towards God. There was an expression of curiosity, of openness, like we hadn't seen since before his fall.

Behind his now uncharacteristically peaceful eyes we sensed a broken heart crying out for God's Love, now seemingly lost forever. There was a minute of hesitation as Beelzebub, the Soul, actually debated whether to sit at God's feet to learn the mystery He was about to unravel.

He was curious, yes. But did he really want the truth? And would he want it from God, even if he did want it? Presently his seething hatred took over and silenced the crying heart within. He had considered listening in the first place only because God's kind mention of his name had taken him off guard. He sneered, mocking, and turned away.

\* \* \* \*

The last light of the warm sun melted away. A chill descended upon the land. Not enough for discomfort, but just enough to coax all earth's creatures to snuggle up and prepare to sleep. But not before a last, long look at the drama unfolding overhead.

Stars. Bezillions. All colors. All sizes. Arranged to outline pictures that tell stories. Stories of creation and salvation.

God continued explaining the mechanics of how to wind up a universe.

\* \* \* \*

God continued. "Rule Number One about the nature of consciousness is that *Creativity costs*.

"In that respect, it is like the energy I created, which is not free,

either.

“Matter is *absolutely* limited, in that it neither creates more of itself, nor destroys any of itself, but rather matter, to be used for one purpose, must be taken from another purpose.

“Consciousness is a little like that: at any given time, its attention is limited: so that if a concern taxes its capacity, it must leave other projects to attend to it.

“The difference between Matter and Consciousness is that Consciousness can either grow, or atrophy.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. 16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.... 19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. 20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliverdest unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. ....29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The fact that Jesus used this familiar story of human relationships to illustrate the nature of the Kingdom of God indicates that some of the characteristics of consciousness, which we experience, are shared with the inhabitants of Heaven. Notice how the capacity of consciousness grows. The more faithfully we take care of small responsibilities, the more large responsibilities we will be given, by God as well as by men. This is partly because being responsible proves we can be trusted; but in human experience it is also because we prove we have the capacity to do our job successfully. And we acquired that capacity by exercising the lesser capacity we had previously.*

*The nature of consciousness, having the capacity to grow, is so fundamental to the everyday experience of we who are made in the Image of God, and so fundamental to this Parable of the Kingdom of God, that Comunicus may not be so far from Biblical authority in reporting that the consciousness of God, too, grows – even God learns – and if it grows, that it was once “smaller” in capacity than it is now.*

God explained, “Have you noticed the dependence of matter upon spirit? Have you noticed how matter is nourished by Spirit, as sheep graze upon the green pastures?

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:14 I have seen all the works that are done under the sun; and, behold, all is vanity and vexation of spirit.(meaning in Hebrew that the universe is made of the Breath of God, which is sustained by “grazing upon” the Spirit of God.)*

Yes, we had noticed the incapacity of matter to do anything but just sit there doing nothing, before God pulled it apart to create tension.

For example, when God first created the earth, it was just, well, there. A lifeless, motionless clump, dark, shapeless. A giant puddle. No wind. No heat exchange from one area to another. No chemical reactions. Nothing.

God had to squeeze it until the middle melted. He had to separate the hydrogen, oxygen, and nitrogen to create air.

We were aware how delicate was its balance.

For example the sun has a limited life, even after God compressed it and ignited it. Without further intervention, it was destined to burn away and shrink.

We saw that even electrons flying around their protons could not continue so forever, without another push from Spirit – from the dimensions beyond – but must eventually slow down, stop, and collapse.

“Left alone by spirit, matter decays. It is subject to entropy.

“For example, water reacts with iron to form rust, but that only continues until there is either no more water or no more iron, and then the process stops. The sun gives heat and light to the planets, but that only continues until the atomic imbalance of the sun’s surface exhausts itself and the elements are able to reach equilibrium, and then the sun ‘dies’. The earth’s rotation exposes different areas of its surface to the sun’s heat in turn, causing seasons, day and night, hot and cold, mist and fair weather. But that only continues until the energy that requires finally slows the earth’s rotation to a standstill (or until the Sun goes out), and then all air and water movement ceases, and the life depending on them dies.

“Left alone, matter would decay from complex relationships to simple forms, until its end would be a flat, lifeless mass of matter composed of inert elements, in such balance that there would be no longer any movement of energy from one heavenly body to another, or from one terrestrial form to another, or from one atom to another. No life, no light.

**VerseScout:** *Romans 8:16 The Spirit itself beareth witness with our*

*spirit, that we are the children of God: 17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. 18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. 20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, 21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. 23 And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.*

“The nourishment of matter, so that it does not decay, requires an infusion of Life.”

**VerseScout:** *John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. 4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.*

*Genesis 2:7 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

*Deuteronomy 8:2 And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. 3 And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that **man doth not live by bread only, but by every word** that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live. 4 **Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither did thy foot swell, these forty years.***

“This Life must have energy greater than the inertia of Entropy, though this energy is not physical, but is Spirit. But Life consists of more than mere Spiritual energy. It consists also of Wisdom capable of directing Spiritual energy so that as it rearranges physical matter, the result is just the right tension.”

“Tension”, the demons had complained recently, was one of their sources of pain! “Why couldn’t God just leave them alone, and take off all the pressure of life?” they moaned! They didn’t want to have to “deal with” “problems”, they cried. They didn’t want to have to learn and grow. They just wanted to be “left alone” that they might sink into “peace” and “oblivion”!

God’s explanation touched on such foolishness, that we might better understand how to respond to it.

“Tension is the engine of Life. Without tension, matter dies. Movement stops. Life stops. Knowledge stops. There is only death. Tension within the Sun causes it to send Light far and wide throughout the universe. The hearts of Adam and his wife create tension within their arteries and veins, forcing blood to flow so that it may nourish their bodies. The tension of water and sunshine, acting upon phosphorous, nourishes flowers so that they may open and give joy to all who see them.

“But of course oblivion is not possible for a conscious spirit, or soul. Matter degenerates towards flat, lifeless existence, but consciousness does not. What a terrible thing to pray for, that one’s life will cease, while one’s awareness continues!”

We thought of our fallen brothers actually blaming God for denying them this sorry condition! How can souls, with so much, appreciate so little?!

God continued explaining the mechanics of how to wind up a universe. “Simple Tension destroys, generally speaking; it is Intelligent Tension which creates and gives life. The simplest tension is an explosion which creates heat and light but which does so by consuming complex forms and leaving them simple. Accelerated entropy. The Sun, for example, consists of continuous explosions of the very simplest physical elements; none of the complex living things on Earth could live there. The fire which Adam and Eve started this evening to warm themselves exists by consuming complex living wood proteins and reducing it to light, heat, and relatively simple, and quite dead, ash; living wood is consumed in the fire, and any living thing which falls into it dies and similarly is reduced to simpler elements.

“The tension which creates, rather than destroys life, must be arranged with great wisdom.”

What an understatement! No angel had ever created life! Not even Beelzebub, in his glorious past, had ever created so much as a blade of grass! Even *fallen* angels could *destroy* life, however! Mere destruction took so little intelligence that even a human could do it!

We who had not fallen also possessed the capacity to save, preserve, and heal life after it is created, but it was quite plain this capacity taxed our intelligence to its limit. And to be honest, even our “capacity” consists simply of channeling God’s healing power which does the work without us understanding how.

“An example would be the positioning of water so its collapse would create over 100 elements, before stretching out to become stars and galaxies. Had I not brought the water together at just the right moment it would still be water, rendered dead by entropy.



“By the same principle, I have given man physical bodies able to rearrange physical elements from dead, inert forms, using wisdom to place them in just the right tension to make many useful and wonderful things, and even turning them into energy sources.

“Wisdom is the intelligence to bring about a purpose. Wisdom, then, is the servant of purpose. Therefore the foundation for all *good* things is Love; for Love will choose purposes which are good, which Wisdom may serve.

“Without love, therefore, life would not even exist; nor any good thing; but only entropy, and death. So without love, wisdom is moot; intelligence is moot.”

What amazing scenery God was showing us on our journey toward answering my question how any man could choose not to obey God!

God continued, “Choice is the engine of rejuvenation. By choosing My nourishment, matter is preserved, and will not decay.

“But matter has no capacity for Choice.

“The foundation of Life is Tension, planned and arranged by Wisdom. The human genome, for example, and the billions of infinitesimal intelligent tensions it creates within each cell of the human body, directing energy so wonderfully and with results that have such specific consequences lasting for so many centuries, took the greatest wisdom of all you see before you. Nothing else in the whole universe compares in precision, beauty, and complexity.

“Especially when you consider the soul attached to the physical body. It was Man for whom I created the Universe, which is why I completed my design for man before I created anything else.

“It is not only Adam’s genomes, and those of Wo-man, which I have planned so carefully. When their seed unites, I will plan which of the possible combinations to bring together into a human being most suited to the circumstances into which it will be born. For that reason, when the time comes, I will warn Man how he must reverence his seed as holy, to be sown only as I guide him, that the circumstances of birth may favor a life of joy and love, and that I may have the best genetic material out of which to create such a body.

“Not that I could not create genetic material out of the air, but it is essential that both mother and father know their child came from them, because knowing that will help them love their baby.

“But nothing I have created matches the drama that is about to unfold, when the humans I have created will in turn begin to, in a sense, create independently of Me.

“I have created creativity!

“Until now you have seen plants and animals with their seed in them, so that they might reproduce themselves. Now you will see that I have planted a seed of Myself!”

What? How -? For a moment I was tempted to correct God! “No, God, you can’t mean that when the man matures he will become exactly like You!” I started to protest in my mind. But I quickly remembered my ignorance and God’s omniscience, and leaned back to listen.

“You see an acorn on the ground and do not recognize the image of the majestic oak tree. But that’s what it grows into. Likewise you look at a man and do not realize of Whom he is the seed.

“However, there is this difference between an acorn as the seed of an oak, and a man as the seed of myself: the oak grows to its full height and grows no further, while the seed grows alongside until it becomes its equal. Eventually the oak is destined to die, to be replaced by its own seeds. However, in My case, I do not stop growing, and I will not die. My seed can never, therefore, reach my ‘height’.”

God looked around at our stupefied faces. God had an excitement He was bursting to share, but we were a little too dense to take in this new panorama. So God stooped down a little more, to reach our level, with words we could not fail to grasp: *“I am going to have Children!”*

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 1:27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.*

*Hebrews 2:10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*

*1 Corinthians 2:9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.*

*John 14:12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.*

You might have thought that would be cause for rejoicing! But some things are just too wonderful for praise. So it was this time. This was not a time for shouting, or clapping, or singing, or Hallelujahing. It was a time for awe. A time for wonder at something beyond comprehension. A time for reverence.

Then there was the question, still unanswered, and growing by the minute: how, then, was it possible that a human could ever not want to obey God? *Especially* when a human is made in the *image* of God?!

God gave me a look that said “I haven’t forgotten the question. Do

you think you can follow the answer?”

God continued speaking out loud, “Consciousness is subject to something a *little* bit like entropy. Physical matter is *inescapably* bound to entropy, maintaining complex interactions only by the intervention of Spirit. Consciousness is not inescapably bound to entropy, because it can choose. But the path of least resistance, for Consciousness, is to degenerate; to do nothing; to coast; to be aware only of self.

“Only Love can motivate Consciousness to soar beyond its own fences, to interact with the rest of Creation. But Consciousness is not naturally inclined to Love. There can be no Joy without love, but consciousness does not innately seek Joy. Consciousness does not instinctively crave happiness, friendship, achievement, or excitement. Consciousness, without love, is utterly subject to a condition similar to entropy: (except that Spirit can, by choosing Love, rejuvenate) it degenerates, its thought processes becoming simpler and simpler until they flatten out into spiritual death.”

**VerseScout:** *(See Romans 8:16-23, above)*

“I can say it more directly: both consciousness and matter are subject to death. Matter can be saved from death only by the intervention of consciousness. But Consciousness too is subject to death, and can be delivered from it only by the intervention of Love.”

**VerseScout:** *1 John 2:15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *A theme throughout Scripture is our choice between Love, personified by God, which is equated with Eternal Life, and the World, which leads to death. This passage describes the choice as between the “lust” of the flesh which passes away, and obedience to God who leads us to eternity.*

*This describes our everyday experience: we humans whose souls are attached to bodies find that when our creativity coasts, our souls relax in apathy, so that the desires of our bodies rise in relative dominance, so that satisfying our bodies becomes our path of least resistance.*

*We have a glimpse of how Consciousness must behave without attached bodies, from our experience with apathy even when all our physical desires are satisfied.*

*In this case our “path of least resistance” becomes our concern only with ourselves; but if we are concerned only with ourselves, and our own desires*

*are satisfied, then there is nothing needing doing; our minds coast into inactivity, the ultimate form of which is Death.*

*From this condition, only Love can deliver us. Only Love can occupy our minds after our own needs are satisfied. Through Love, through the motivation to serve others, there is no limit to the challenges before us.*

We were astonished. We hadn't really thought about it, but it fit our experience. We already had experience with matter, where natural forces collided destructively until we intervened to restore the original created tension; and the reason we intervened was because of our love for God's intended plan, not because it personally did anything for *us*.

"Love pressures Consciousness to sacrifice its own self, which is not its path of least resistance. It pressures Consciousness to take its attention off its self in order to focus it on things or souls outside itself. 'Self Discipline' is required, to Love. Even My Own consciousness would be naturally subject to spiritual entropy (death), but for Love."

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 19:27 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore? 28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 And every one that hath forsaken **houses**, or **brethren**, or **sisters**, or **father**, or **mother**, or **wife**, or **children**, or **lands**, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. 30 But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first. (See also Mark 10:28)*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *These verses confirm the necessity of "denying self"; that is, of giving attention to needs other than one's own, at the expense of one's own. Notice that the boldfaced words are a list of physical delights and relationships that we may be required to deny. These are examples of the "desires of the flesh" spoken of in Romans 7:18-8:13.*

*Not that our flesh has any power of choice, but while our souls are attached to our bodies, pleasing our bodies is the path of least resistance for our souls.*

*Indeed, many sins involve a conflict between flesh and spirit: between some desire for physical delight, and some spiritual reason for avoiding or giving up that delight.*

*Of course, God does not have a body subject to hunger and other pain, as we do, yet this Diary says Consciousness itself, even God's consciousness, must somehow deny self, must reach out to other's needs contrary to one's own, in order to keep from "dying", or receding into inaction, or suffering "entropy".*

*If this is true, then quite literally, just as Jesus said in Matthew 16:25, the only way we can "save" ourselves is to "lose" ourselves; in other words, the only way our consciousness can keep from dying is to reach out to love and bless*

others.

*Every decision for the easy way, against the Love which God embodies, hardens the heart, forcing the heart to call God, and all things good, the enemy! This heart-hardening eventually leads to desires, not merely for the easy way, or for the flesh, but specifically to oppose God. Since God desires for us everything good, this leads to crime, to destruction, and death – to everything actually opposed to physical comfort.*

*For example, sex can be quite wonderful, done God's way; but done in rebellion against God, it leads typically to the cruelest tortures OF ONESELF – the most disease-causing filth, the most inhuman humiliations OF ONESELF! Therefore, to seek the easy way, which is to favor the physical body, is to ultimately destroy even that same physical body along with everything else good.*

I looked again at our fallen brothers, and began to understand. Entropy, the road to Oblivion, Apathy, Laziness, Lack of discipline, Disobedience. All names for the most *natural* impulse of Consciousness. Only Love makes obedience possible. Love is the only hope of life!

# Chapter 16

## How Consciousness “Dies”

### How Consciousness Grows; How it “Dies”: Reality, and Oblivion

“But my story is about what it was like when I was alone, and of course when I was alone there was none of the Matter you see now. Well, there was other matter, which likewise was subject to entropy, but that did not ‘exist’ in the sense matter does now – but that comes later in My story. The point is that for the purpose of My story, matter was not a factor. There was only My Consciousness.

“It is important for you to understand the war ahead. It is not a war between living bodies made of flesh, though humans will think it is. It is a war between living ideas made of Spirit.

“Humans will be told by Beelzebub that it is physical things which will drive their choices for or against Me. Beelzebub will tell them their choice is between their physical needs, and Me. You need to understand, so that you may teach them, that the real choice is not made on the basis of what happens in the physical world. The real choice is spiritual. It is made by naked Consciousness, apart from the physical world. What happens ‘outside’ does not drive what is decided ‘inside’, but the other way around.”

***VerseScout:** Ephesians 6:10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 **For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against** principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, **against spiritual wickedness** in high places. 13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; 15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;*

“To help you understand this Truth, I want to explain how similar

Choices lay before Me, when there was no physical universe, and no Beelzebub. I have described the entropy of matter [*the inevitability that matter, left to itself, will “wind down”*] only to illustrate for you the nature of Entropy. Now I will explain how Entropy operates in Consciousness, when Consciousness exists alone. I want to explain the factors that influence consciousness either to grow, or to wither.”

This was starting to get complicated and exciting at the same time. It was getting complicated enough that I grew concerned I might lose the train of thought, but this train suddenly seemed one of the most important rides of my life.

“But let me explain what I mean by ‘growth’ or ‘shrinkage’ of consciousness.

“Consciousness is always active. It cannot cease. There can be no oblivion for Consciousness. It can come close, however; it can rest, between periods of intense concentration. It can relax.

“But Consciousness must always focus on *something*. It cannot focus on *nothing*.

“But Consciousness has another choice, for its focus, besides Creativity: an undisciplined succession of half-formed, chaotic impressions.

“‘Creativity’ works towards a desirable result. (Desirable, that is, to the one creating.) It is a healthy growth in the Womb of Imagination, bringing the Seed of a general idea into the full maturity of a desired result.

“Undisciplined imagination, on the other hand, begins with all the same desires, all the same motives and incentives, but never nurtures them sufficiently in the Womb before it attempts to ‘give them birth’, or implement them. What it creates is thus not complete and perfect.

“That is why, for example, you must teach men to spend daily time in prayer, meditation, and study before attempting their work for the day.

“Imperfect creation always has enough of the appearance of being satisfying to persuade Consciousness that it is ‘good enough’, requiring no more exhausting concentration. But imperfect creation always has ‘fatal flaws’ which turn satisfaction into disappointment, if not utter terror.

“I did not create anything imperfectly. But I foresaw the possibility that I could, if at any time I shrank from the intensity of concentration necessary for what I was doing. The ugly consequences I foresaw of such carelessness kept me alert to do all my resting *between* periods of creativity, and not *during*.

“Creativity is the work of Love. Love sacrifices itself for the benefit of someone or something besides itself. One cannot *benefit* another

without *creativity*. Creativity works to conquer the challenges of Reality. The work of Love is to conquer such challenges for the benefit of another.

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 13:4 Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, 5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own...*

“By contrast, the retreat toward Oblivion is the work of hate. It is the attempt to Escape Reality. It is a retreat from the horrors of a half-formed creation – such as a life lived full of errors. Such horrors present Consciousness with only two choices: one must either face the challenges and conquer them, or turn and flee.

“Well actually the choice to flee reality, in fear, is possible for souls, but it was never my choice. It was never possible for me to fear anything because there was never anything outside of Me that might threaten Me, or even apply pressure upon Me. I faced no deadlines. There was no problem I could not eventually solve. Even if there had been problems beyond me, it wouldn’t have mattered, because I simply would not have brought into existence any Universe infected with such problems.

“But angels and men are capable of fear, if they depart from me, since then their resources will be too meager for the challenges they face. I created souls that way, dependent upon one another, to create incentives for them to Love. Of course perfect love casts out fear, since if they love me, which means to obey My Commandments, then their problems will be small, and their resources for overcoming them infinite. Not only that, but love focuses one’s consciousness not so much on one’s own problems as on the problems of others.”

**VerseScout:** *1 John 4:18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. 19 We love him, because he first loved us. 20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen? 21 And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his brother also. 5:1 Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. 2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. 3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. 4 For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.*



“Even though I have never fled from a problem out of fear, I have laid aside problems temporarily, in order to rest. Creativity requires effort. It can be exhausting. It can even be painful. Like on the evening of the Seventh Day, I was really tired – so tired that I began resting from my work. I actually *needed* to rest.

### **Creativity requires Intensity of Concentration**

“Complicated problems simply cannot be approached leisurely. Complicated systems involving the interaction of many parts must be held in the mind, by the power of concentration, all at the same time, so the mind can study how the parts will interact. Your musical composers understand this principle: it is not enough to leisurely hear, in your mind, just one musical part at a time to see how pretty it sounds. All the parts must be heard, in your mind, at the same time, so you can determine how to alter which parts to make them more harmonious with the whole.”

God pointed to me. “Ask Comunicus to explain how writing in a diary requires him to hold enough of the ideas he is going to write, in his mind all at the same time, for him to be able to choose with which idea to begin.

“If it were possible to create by visualizing but one part of the whole at a time, then one might take much longer and complete the work more leisurely. But whether the creative project is a symphony, or a shelter which Adam might choose to build, or a living being, or a universe, it is not possible.

“I created the universe in 6 days rather than in 6 trillion years, not because I was in a hurry, or was careless, or would not have liked to take longer, but because once I achieved the intensity of concentration required to foresee all the possible interactions of all creation, that’s how long it took.

“The other reason it is necessary to move quickly, with sufficient concentration to plan to the end of a project rather than planning only one step at a time, is that complicated projects have so many interactions that they must be all constructed together.

“For example, if Adam were to build a house with six rooms, he could not build just one room and then leisurely put off planning and building his second room for a few years, because all the rooms hold each other up. A design for a one-room house must be different than a design for a room which is part of a larger building.

“Suppose I *had* taken a billion years to create animals, after I created plants.”

We grinned. God was alluding to the fantasy of the demons, that the universe which they have just observed God creating, actually took

millions and millions of years of evolving all by itself!

“How, then, would flowers have pollinated themselves? How would certain plant seeds have been distributed?

“And suppose there had been millions of years between the third day, when I created plants, and the fourth day, when I created the Sun?! The plants would have all died the first week, without waiting for even one year to pass!

“And suppose there had been millions of years between the fifth day, when I created fish and birds, and the sixth day, when I created land animals and man! They were designed with endless interactions! They cannot thrive without each other! Before fish and birds could exist for long without land animals, they would have to be designed differently.

“Of course the souls I create will need more time than I took, to create *their* projects and inventions, since additional time will be required to develop their powers of concentration until they can hold their entire projects in their minds all at once. Souls who turn from me, as did your fallen brothers, will have additional distractions from their concentration such as doubt, temptation, and lust, requiring even greater time to overcome.

“Therefore the more complicated the system to be created, the more intensity of concentration is required to master the challenges.

“So the effort required by creativity is a significant reason consciousness may choose to retreat towards oblivion, and thus to wither. The required effort may limit how long consciousness is willing to concentrate on difficult problems.”

I asked, “Is that why the demons say they wish for oblivion, because their problems were so difficult that concentrating on them wore them out?”

God answered, “Partly. Of course their problems suddenly mushroomed after they refused My help in solving them! Because of my own experience with the possibilities of Consciousness, I created them with natural incentives to love, by giving them problems which are easily met through My help, but which are overwhelming without Me, because only with Me...well, let me continue my story.

### **Oblivion is Not Nice**

“Of course, when I was alone, I did not have the benefit which humans have, of *problems* to coax *Me* into a relationship of Love with someone able to *help* Me. But there was another factor that drove me back to the exhausting problems challenging me, and that was the emptiness of oblivion.”

But God had said there was no such thing as oblivion! Of course,

even if it were impossible for any soul, nothing would be impossible for Him.

“No, I never reached *absolute* oblivion. As I said before, Consciousness cannot. Consciousness can only come close enough to not be able to stand the boredom, the utter loneliness, and to return, screaming with restless frenzy, to complexity.

“As I said before, Consciousness must focus on *something*. The less it has to focus on, the more it is like a fish out of water, vainly flapping its fins in air too light for its fins to push against.

“But as I said before, there is an alternative, to returning to complex problems: *imaginary* problems. The mind which still refuses to return to real problems will suffer *hallucinations and nightmares and paranoia* as *imaginary* problems rush in to fill the vacuum. That is the condition of your brothers, who have made themselves demons. The problems I created for them help force them to peek out of their imaginations a bit, towards reality, sparing them, somewhat, from the worse Hell that awaits them in their own imaginations.

“They complain ‘why don’t you just leave me alone?’ I cannot, because I love them. I cannot stand by and do nothing while they mire themselves in imaginary, but pure, terror!”

I asked the obvious question: “But what could possibly motivate any soul to fill his consciousness with living nightmares when he could just as easily concentrate on overcoming all his challenges?”

### **Laziness**

God’s answer was simple. “A mental vacuum is a *simpler* response, to challenges, than overcoming them. Though *ultimately* far more painful, as a mental vacuum cleaner sucks in the Living Nightmares around it, a mental vacuum *initially* requires less exertion.”

Was that it? Did the choices between good and evil boil down to spiritual laziness?

**VerseScout:** Proverbs 26:16 *The sluggard is wiser in his own conceit [eyes] than seven men that can render a reason.*

Proverbs 6:6 *Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise: 7 Which having no guide, overseer, or ruler; 8 Provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest. 9 How long wilt thou sleep, O sluggard? when wilt thou arise out of thy sleep? 10 Yet a little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep: 11 So shall thy poverty come as one that travelleth [wanders], and thy want as an armed man.*

Proverbs 13:4 *The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing: but the soul of the diligent shall be made fat.*

Proverbs 20:4 *The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold;*

*therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing.*

## **God's Blueprints of the Future**

God pulled out his Blueprints. We craned our necks to see. They were titled "Future possibilities". They contained detailed instructions for us, for what to do in every possible future situation on Earth.

God opened up one of the Possibilities. It was called "Games of Chance". What we saw gave terrible new meaning to the happy word "games"! We saw crowds of hate-filled, frozen-hearted people crowding around for the "chance" to take, from their neighbors, their very food, and other essential needs, and to call it "winning"!

Men gathered around a table. One man threw something on it with symbols written on its sides. The men had agreed beforehand that the side facing up when the thing quit rolling would determine which men would voluntarily give, to one among them, all they possessed!

It seemed like a game, and yet the certainty of disaster for most of the men present was so great. Only one or two of the men could possibly be bettered by the process, and yet *all* the men present expected to be that one or two who would take from the others!

What despair, what hatred, filled every heart! The material things they expected to "win" came at the price of a seared heart, cold enough to stumble over the financial corpses of others to claim them! Cold enough to pray for the "right" to ruin all the rest, which they considered the grandest possible experience on earth! Some even said they had no interest in Heaven because this ecstasy wasn't allowed there!

Of great interest to us was the *contract* which bound these lost souls to this corner of Hell. Ordinarily when one man took all the possessions of an entire group, he would be considered a criminal, and would be punished by the authority of the laws of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. But in this case, every man present had *voluntarily* agreed that should the device stop rolling with a certain symbol facing up, then he would *voluntarily* give all he possessed to another man! Each man present had *voluntarily* agreed to become a crime victim, and to honor the criminal as "fortunate" and probably even "wise"!

We calculated that all the "gamblers" could have simply *earned more* than they hoped to receive by "gambling". ALL *could* have been rich. But instead they chose to meet their needs by a process which could only "help" one, and which would deaden the hearts of all!

I couldn't help myself. I jumped right into the blueprints. I just had to know.

I approached one of the gamblers. He turned to me and bragged,

"I won \$100 last night! This is real swell entertainment!"

"How much more have you won, than you have lost, over the past year?" I couldn't help asking.

"How much more have I won?" he answered less enthusiastically.

"Yes."

"Oh, maybe \$250." Liar Lights flashed overhead. "Or maybe I lost a few thousand. I don't remember how much I lost. Ask me how much I *won!*"

"Which was more entertaining?"

"Winning", he laughed.

"When you lose a few hundred dollars, do you find that entertaining?" I really wanted to understand.

"Well, I guess sure, the food and music are good."

"If you knew, the next time you are thinking of going, that you will definitely lose that much again, will you still go for all that entertainment?"

"Well, uh, I guess not."

"Is losing an experience you would wish upon your wife, your children, or your friends?"

"No. I want them all to win!" What love he thought he had for them!

"How about strangers? The folks that stock your groceries, service your car, smile at you on the sidewalk, teach your children, who might marry your daughters, would you support a system that absolutely guarantees that most of them will lose?"

The man froze. The whole scene froze; every person in the room like stone. I understood then that I had brought the man to a point of clear decision between Love and Hate. These blueprints did not predict how men would decide. They just gave us directions how to reach points of decision, and then they stopped.

As we marveled at this Possibility, wondering if it might ever actually be, God spoke. "This illustrates the Sluggard Principle. These potential men actually believe they are meeting their needs by this activity, don't they? Show them the evidence that their activity will ruin them, and they will angrily oppose you. They will tell you they are being responsible, because this is a way they can meet their needs. See? It may not be a very *good* way for them to meet their needs, but it is definitely a *simpler* way."

Simpler? Those men spent more time and concentration studying imaginary formulas in their vain pursuit of "winning" than hard-working men earning top salaries! Simpler? These men worked harder, for the hope of not having to "work", than if they had simply found honest work!

“No”, God answered our unspoken questions, “Not simpler, if you count the long hours of intense study, the health-wrenching concentration, the fortunes lost forever, the talent wasted from lack of attention, or the hearts seared beyond feeling.

“But they only count a couple of minutes before and after they ‘win’ something, and if you count only that, then you can see how the miniscule intelligence and effort required to ‘win’ is definitely an easier, simpler means of acquiring money than honest work!

“Simplicity. Failure is simpler than success. Despair is simpler than hope. Living nightmares are simpler than hard work!

*“Sin is simpler than obedience. Hell is simpler than Heaven.*

*“Definitely not happier. But simpler.”*

I stared at Hell. I watched our fallen brothers place their hope in absurd activities undeserving of any confidence whatsoever.

# Chapter 17

## The Deadly “Simple Life”

God explained, “Addictions consist of activities which are substitutes for problem-solving, which, the addicted have persuaded themselves in the face of contrary evidence, will satisfy them. And there is only ONE reason the addicted prefer these imaginary solutions to real solutions: they are *simpler*.”

“Remember: the essence of life is interaction with environment.

“A rock is not considered ‘alive’ because its reaction with its environment is low, occurring only at the chemical level; so that only its individual molecules may be said to interact, not the rock as a whole.

“A plant, by contrast, ‘lives’, we say: it is not only acted upon, but it acts upon its environment, as a whole unit: tear it in pieces and if parts of it live at all their interaction will be much reduced. By contrast the rock may be ground into powder without diminishing its interaction with its environment.

“Still more ‘alive’ are animals. They are mobile, and clever. They can build things out of dirt and plants. Through travel, construction, subterfuge, and cleverness they can breed, nourish themselves, and escape danger.

“But if you cut one even in half, both halves will die. (With the exception of a few of the simplest, such as worms.) Some parts of some animals, cut off, will grow back. But while any plant that survives injury can grow back any broken part, animals with few exceptions would be permanently crippled. Thus animals are more distinctly integral units of Life.

“Now consider the Soul! It attaches to a physical body locked in space and time, while the soul itself lives in dimensions beyond. On earth, the Soul does not merely interact with its body but completely steers it, (with the potential, through self discipline, of steering it well), and through it, interacts with other souls and with animals, with almost unlimited potential for controlling the Earth!

“Meanwhile in the dimensions beyond, the same soul interacts with Me, God, not merely being acted upon by Me but moving Me to use my unlimited powers to alter any part of creation!

“Notice also that the Soul can recover from any injury, but even the slightest injury, not allowed to heal, will kill the entire soul. (Although

its death is reversible, unlike that of plants and animals.)

“You can see that the desire for simplicity is the desire for death. The more complex the interactions with environment, the higher the life. The simpler, the lower. A completely ‘simple life’ is, by definition, complete death.”

## God’s Solution to the Lure of Simplicity

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 6:5 And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.*

“I discovered that consciousness is not well served by floating back and forth lazily between oblivion and exhaustion. The problems to be worked out cannot be *efficiently* worked out when Consciousness returns to them only to relieve boredom. Mental efficiency occurs only when the Mind is focused on challenges near its capacity for concentration.

“But concentration at this level, as I said, can be tiring. To ask of Consciousness that it tire itself consistently, is to ask of it that to which it is not naturally inclined.

“But as I said before, I discovered the force able to hold Consciousness near its capacity: that force is Love.

“There are two levels of Love. First, there is the ‘love’ of which even Beelzebub is capable: It is a natural quality of consciousness to love what itself creates. After a great investment of time, energy, and strength in any project, consciousness does not like to see its investment ruined because of mere errors. It is a natural quality of consciousness to love what is itself.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour; and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

“I foresaw that the creative abilities with which I created souls would become an incentive for souls to love what they create, to the



extent they indeed exercise their creative ability. But I also understood this incentive would not be as strong in them as it is in Me. After all, all that exists proceeds from My Breath, so even with no higher 'love' than self interest, how can I not 'love' all? But that which men create can never be more than a tiny fraction of their environment.

"But the Love that Liberates is more than mere desire not to waste an investment. Love is the desire for results beyond the concerns of one's own Consciousness.

"In fact if Love were mere concern for an investment, we would say the demons must love deeply, with their deep investment in lies!

"I became *concerned* with the challenges that teased Me. I became aware of a feeling of Love for, well not for *problems* exactly, but for *Wisdom*. I loved Wisdom, and wanted more of it.

*VerseScout: (For reflections on whether God can become wiser, see Chapter 24 notes on Matthew 25:14-29.)*

"I came to understand that this Love, itself, seemed as wonderful as the Wisdom which was its object. It was *wonderful* to have greater concerns than those of My own consciousness.

**"Let me make this point more clearly, because this is a point which consciousness can barely grasp: it was *WONDERFUL* to care about something so much that I was willing to *SUFFER* for it."**

Gasps convulsed the Host. God was right. A point like this was very difficult for consciousness, at least our consciousness, to grasp! We had all experienced suffering, but we generally regarded it as an unavoidable evil. We bore it out of "duty". We hadn't thought of suffering as particularly "wonderful".

God explained, "I don't mean the *suffering itself* is wonderful. It is the caring enough to suffer that is wonderful! The suffering itself stinks. But if there were never suffering, then caring that much would be meaningless. The glorious experience we call 'love' awakens when we know very well that continuing our work on this project outside ourselves will cost us pain, and yet we resolve that we will nevertheless endure it, because of our *love*. So suffering is a necessary ingredient to the most wonderful of possible experiences.

"I do not mean to suggest I created the opportunity for consciousness to suffer, just so 'caring' would have a measuring rod. As I have already explained, it is the nature of consciousness itself to 'suffer' when exhausted by intense concentration.

"I discerned that the reason love was so wonderful was because it

allowed me to 'escape' my *self*.

"Not that I lacked *contentment* even before I created something to love. I couldn't hate, because there was nothing outside myself to hate.

"But after I created souls outside myself to love, I became aware that my previous perpetual consciousness of my self was, by comparison, a burden. It felt like being trapped. When, through Love, my mind soared beyond my self to hover over my creation, I felt liberated. I felt free."

Long experience has made it a habit to believe everything God says. But some things God says are harder to believe than other things. This was one of those things.

It's not that I don't "take it by faith" when God's words soar beyond my grasp. Of course I accept that the words, whatever they mean, must be true. But I want to know what they mean.

Was my mind just playing tricks on my ears? Was God really saying these words?

The idea of love setting consciousness free, in contrast to the "trapped" or "burdened" feeling produced by selfishness, is certainly something I have marveled at in my personal experience. But the idea that God has shared this experience?

These are challenging revelations.

God continued.

**"Beelzebub sought oblivion to escape reality. I found freedom through involvement in reality.**

**"Beelzebub sought 'escape' and never found it. I found 'freedom' though I never sought it.**

**"Beelzebub retreated from involvement to concern only for 'self', only to experience 'self' as a heavy chain. My consciousness 'lost' myself and left behind its chains.**

**"Beelzebub vainly seeks self-ish freedom from problems through Oblivion. I found freedom from Self through Love!"**

***VerseScout:*** Luke 9:24 *For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.*

Luke 17:33 *Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.*

1 John 4:7 *Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. 8 He that loveth not knoweth not God; for **God is love.***

John 15:9 *As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. 10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might*

*be full. 12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another; as I have loved you. 13 **Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.** 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. 15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.*

“Beelzebub let himself be attracted by the restful simplicity of selfishness instead of the costly hard work of involvement, which is an aspect of Love. He made himself forget that the very costliness of Love is what makes it a source of Joy. But swimming in Self he found to be a joyless existence, so he sought the ultimate retreat: oblivion, through meditation on nothing.

“But consciousness will not sleep for long. The greater his determination to escape reality, the greater will be his rage when it intrudes again – the more he will lash out, desiring to destroy, desiring that all the living share his perceived misery – the more he will hate the purest, those most innocent, those most responsible for the interaction that makes life continue, but which also knocks loudest on the door of Oblivion that he keeps trying to shut behind him.”

***VerseScout:** John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. 20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. 21 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** The quest for oblivion does not end with a harmless plugging of the ears and pulling the blanket over the head and not hurting anybody. It strikes back at any **missionary of reality**, from the child begging his father not to drink any more, to the Christian with his dreaded verses, to the mis-cut board that will not fit its intended place in a wall.*

*The quest for oblivion is relative, extending all the way from those who would utterly retreat from life in suicide or drug induced stupor; to anyone so content with his place in life that he resists the greater challenges continually presented by Life and by God.*

*No one has attained such spiritual heights that he is immune from the condemnation of preferring darkness over light. In fact, these words of Jesus were for Nicodemus, the most righteous of all the Pharisees, who followed God*

*more closely than the clergy of any other nation or religion. Malachi 3 had said it was to purge these most righteous leaders of the world that Jesus came.*

*Yet when God offered them so much more than His written words: Himself, the Living Word, they killed him.*

*They didn't WANT more. They had been content.*

*Let every Christian, and especially every Christian leader, take warning. We need to watch as vigilantly as any sinner, that our happiness that we love so much does not block God showing us more, like the child glad to have his new trumpet but who resists regularly practicing it. We never become so mature that God ceases wanting us to grow.*

*Why are Christians and Jews hated and persecuted by Moslems and Communists around the world? Because God teaches us to talk as if we are Free, even in nations whose laws make us criminals and slaves. It is simpler for a tyrant to kill, than to persuade. Killing takes very little intelligence. Persuading takes all our intelligence, and more.*

*It takes less emotional self discipline to torture someone who disagrees with you, than to forgive him, or reason with him.*

*"Insulting Islam" is a capital crime under Sharia law. It includes stating facts and giving evidence which do not favor Islam in the opinion of Muslim clerics.*

*God, as understood from the Bible, never punishes anyone for respectful, sincerely held differences of opinion, even when humans think it insulting. The condemnation, Jesus says, is preferring lies to truth, darkness to light. If you do that, what will change your mind after you die? What will make you comfortable with Heaven, then?*

**"Of course, my own experiences made Me anticipate Beelzebub's choices even before I created him. That's why I created Angels and Men with as many incentives to love as possible, without compromising the integrity of Choice."**

**My mind almost did a back flip at that phrase, as I thought of the respect God had for the *ability* to choose, and compared it with the respect which the demons *demand* for *how* they choose. What a contrast! What a perversion of God's Holy created *ability* to choose, was Beelzebub's Hellish *choice*! What a contrast between God's love for Beelzebub, to create his ability to choose, and Beelzebub's contempt for God, to profane his Holy ability with so hateful a *choice*!**

**What a caricature he presents of the ability to *think*, that he then fails to perceive that galaxy-wide contrast, and to proudly demand that we reverence his contemptuous, blasphemous *choice*!**

**Beelzebub actually seems to expect us to somehow spare him the horrible *consequences* of his choice. I guess we are supposed to have so much respect for his "Right to Choose" that our respect will act as some sort of powerful antidote to the inescapable consequences of his actions.**

Sorry to disappoint him.

But how ironic that were what he demands possible, (nullification of the consequences of choices), it would nullify the *ability* to choose between alternative consequences! If the consequences of every choice were the same, what meaning could “choice” have? The “respect” Beelzebub demands for the “Right to Choose” is actually a fantasy that the *ability* to choose should cease to exist!

But the contrast of contrasts was between the choice to Love, and the choice to Hate. Love cannot be Love without the *choice* to love, which is what makes “choice” so glorious and necessary! But how tragic whenever that Holy Choice is profaned by hate!

God, by Love, found freedom, He just told us. Beelzebub, by hate, created Hell.

God seemed to wait for these thoughts to find lodging in my mind before He continued.

“The point came where I saw the possibility of creating Consciousness in My own Image – as much like Myself as possible in a universe with more than one Consciousness.

“The possibility seemed so wonderful, that I wanted to proceed very carefully. I mean, time wasn’t a problem. I spoke before of the intensity of concentration required to complete a complex plan by visualizing, and accounting for, its myriad interactions; however, there is a ‘pre-planning’ period before that when it is good to take plenty of time to develop desirable details.

“Immediately I saw a big problem if it wasn’t done exactly right. The benefits of more than one Consciousness existing were tremendous: there was the opportunity for Fellowship, and Love of another Person. But there would come into existence, also, the possibility that one Conscious Being might interact with another in a way disagreeable, or even harmful, to the other. I foresaw that if I moved too carelessly, I might even harm a Consciousness I created. So I waited until My plans could ensure that would not happen. I also foresaw that the Consciousness I created might *choose to hurt Me*. I accepted that risk.”

God looked towards Beelzebub, cackling with glee over some new torture he had devised for one of his hapless followers. Our gaze followed God’s. We were awed that God had foreseen the possibility of Beelzebub’s fall.

# Chapter 18

## God Keeps Everyone Safe

God continued, “And of course I foresaw that the Conscious souls I created could hurt each other, if I didn’t proceed carefully. So I waited until I understood how to prevent even that.”

We were a bit puzzled, since we had been grievously hurt by the loss of fellowship with our fallen Brothers. What did God mean, by saying He had already prevented us from being hurt by them?

God explained, “I don’t mean I learned how to prevent the heartbreak you feel when someone you love destroys himself. I can’t eliminate the risk of *that* heartbreak, without taking away your capacity for love, and making you as insensible as a rock or a flower. When I gave you Consciousness, that is, with the power to visualize and choose, then along with that came the power to Love, and along with Love came the risk of being ‘heartbroken’ by the suffering of those you Love.

“Nor could I prevent the loss of *function* you experience when others, with whom you are designed to interact, and with whom you long to cooperate, refuse to interact with you.

“What I mean is that I created you without the possibility that your fallen brothers might *directly* cause you pain, like they cause themselves. I created you without the possibility that anyone else might take away from you anything, that is, any energy in any form, that you need or want.

“My creation of Man is bolder. I have created them in physical bodies surrounded by physical matter. They will learn how to create things out of matter. When they work together, and with Me, their creativity will seem unlimited. But it will seem possible for some of them to take, from others, the ‘things’ they need and want. It will also seem possible for some of them to damage each other’s physical bodies and cause great suffering, and even the deaths of bodies. But I did not allow this creation to take place until I had organized a way to prevent any genuine harm happening to any man.”

How? We couldn’t imagine! Indeed, we had noticed the potential, within physical matter, for harm to come to physical bodies.

“I will place you in charge of protecting all men from each other.”

*VerseScout: Psalm 91:11 God will put his angels in charge of you [who trust the Lord] to protect you wherever you go. 12 They will hold you up*

*with their hands to keep you from hurting your feet on the stones. 13 You will trample down lions and snakes, fierce lions and poisonous snakes. [GNB]*

*2 Peter 2:4 For if God...5...saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; ...7 And delivered just Lot, [through two angels] vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: ...9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:*

We were thrilled and humbled. We were glad there would be a way for humans to enjoy the same safety we do!

“However, there will be times when men will benefit from physical upheaval. Upheaval (they will call it ‘evil’) will benefit the rebellious by separating them from the object of their addiction: their comfortable conditions in their physical world. As upheaval makes them ‘go cold turkey’, they will be reminded of Me and My Love, which will incline them to return to Me.”

**VerseScout:** *2Kings 22:20 ...thine eyes shall not see all the evil which I will bring upon this place....*

*Jeremiah 26:3 If so be they will hearken, and turn every man from his evil way, that I may repent me of the evil, which I purpose to do unto them because of the evil of their doings.*

*Jeremiah 36:3 It may be that the house of Judah will hear all the evil which I purpose to do unto them; that they may return every man from his evil way; that I may forgive their iniquity and their sin.*

*Isaiah 10:15 [Responding to the cruel tyrant King of Assyria’s boast that all the catastrophe he caused was by his own power] Shall the axe boast itself against him that heweth therewith? or shall the saw magnify itself against him that shaketh it? as if the rod should shake itself against them that lift it up, or as if the staff should lift up itself, as if it were no wood.*

**Romans 8:28** *And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God, and His critics, both use the word “evil” to describe natural catastrophes as well as human-caused evil.*

*Their disagreement is that His critics say a loving God would not allow “evil”, but God promises He has a bridle on all evil to harness it for good.*

*God in fact demands credit for every catastrophe experienced by man. Isaiah 10:15. See also Leviticus 26.*

*When unusually destructive weather hits, pay attention, and you will sometimes hear about pockets of horrible sins which were worst hit by the weather.*

*For example, Iowa suffered an unusual drought in 1989, until the Iowa Legislature rejected sodomite civil rights, the front burner issue that consumed its traditional all-Saturday-night session before the legislature went home for the*

rest of the year. About three days after the wicked measure was defeated by one vote in one chamber, the rains came that saved the crops that year, according to the Des Moines Register. But Eastern Iowa still suffered drought, until the Davenport City Council finally rejected a similar measure.

Over 70 pornographic companies, that produce over 95% of U.S. porn videos, were at the epicenter of the 1/17/94 earthquake in Northridge, California, near Los Angeles. They were all damaged, according to <http://www.usiap.org/Viewpoints/Family/Morality/PornographyPlague.html>

On December 6, 2004, a Tsunami in the Indian Ocean killed 155,000 and left millions homeless. It struck in an area known for child sex slavery.

The “Southern Decadence” sodomite parade on Labor Day weekend, in New Orleans, was scaled down when Hurricane Katrina hit in 2005 about one week before. A few very determined sodomites cashed a rain check and paraded later, but it was only dozens compared with the usual thousands. The Hurricane also struck just after the U.S. pushed Israel to evacuate the Gaza Strip, displacing about 10% of the number of those displaced in New Orleans.

“*The Eye of the Storm*” is a book documenting how nine of the ten most destructive U.S. storms in U.S. history happened right after U.S. presidents took some action against Israel’s right to its own land.

The worst “evil” God brings us is good. It is for our benefit. It is as beneficial as spankings are for disobedient children. God does it to bless us, to spare us from the worse suffering our consciousness would sink into if God did not distract us.

“Sometimes upheaval, even to the point of terrible pain, will benefit the faithful. I will never allow anyone to suffer unless he is able to benefit from it, and escape his fear.

“I want to show you something.”

God pulled out his Blueprints of Future Possibilities.

He opened them up to a man who was wonderfully righteous.

**VerseScout:** Job 1:1 There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and eschewed evil.

Because he obeyed God so faithfully, and because God’s rules have, for their purpose, making men successful in every thing good for men that men try to do or create, this potential man was a world leader.

**VerseScout:** Job 29:2 Oh that I were as in months past, as in the days when God preserved me; ...7 When I went out to the gate through the city, when I prepared my seat in the street! [Ed: the “city gates” were like Washington DC today; where rulers handed down judgments, where cases were brought.] 8 The young men saw me, and hid themselves: and the aged arose, and stood up. 9 The



princes refrained talking, and laid their hand on their mouth. 10 The nobles held their peace, and their tongue cleaved to the roof of their mouth. 11 When the ear heard me, then it blessed me; and when the eye saw me, it gave witness to me: 12 Because I delivered the poor that cried, and the fatherless, and him that had none to help him. 13 The blessing of him that was ready to perish came upon me: and I caused the widow's heart to sing for joy. 14 I put on righteousness, and it clothed me: my judgment was as a robe and a diadem. 15 I was eyes to the blind, and feet was I to the lame. 16 I was a father to the poor: and the cause which I knew not I searched out. 17 And I brake the jaws of the wicked, and plucked the spoil out of his teeth. ...21 Unto me men gave ear, and waited, and kept silence at my counsel. 22 After my words they spake not again; and my speech dropped upon them. 23 And they waited for me as [farmers wait] for the rain; and they opened their mouth wide as for the latter rain. ...25 I chose out their way, [made decisions for the people] and sat chief, and dwelt [led] as a king in [leads] the army....

And yet this righteous man was full of great fear!

**VerseScout:** Job 3:25 For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me. 26 I was not in safety, neither had I rest, neither was I quiet; yet trouble came.

We could see God's heartbreak over this man's crippling fear, even though the man was only, so far, potential.

**VerseScout:** Ecclesiastes 1:18 For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.

But what could any of us do to help the man? What could God do? Fear feels like Hell. It is not playing too loose with language to say fear *is* Hell, as profoundly as God is Love.

**VerseScout:** Revelation 21:8 But **the fearful**, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, **shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.**

1 John 4:16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. **God is love;** and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

God said, "When My Promises aren't enough, there is another cure for fear for My People. That cure is to let My People experience what they are most afraid of. Then, when they are in the deepest pain of what they fear more than anything else in the whole world, I will give them the most

wonderful experience they ever could have imagined: My Presence. I will come to them, and make myself known to them, and teach them, and comfort them, and bless them.”

Wow! Should that potential ever happen, I hope our video crews will be on the ball! That movie will make us cry whole rivers!

**VerseScout:** *Job 35:9 ...the multitude of oppressions...make the oppressed to cry...10 But none saith, Where is God my maker, who giveth **songs in the night**; [joy even during tribulation] 11 Who teacheth us more than the beasts of the earth, and maketh us wiser than the fowls of heaven?*

**Safety from victory over the storm:** *Matthew 14:25 ...Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea. ...28 And Peter...said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. 29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. 30 But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. 31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?*

**Job's longing to talk to God:** *Job 13:3 Surely I would speak to the Almighty, and I desire to reason with God. ...22 [Job to God:] Then call thou, and I will answer: or let me speak, and answer thou me. 23 How many are mine iniquities and sins? make me to know my transgression and my sin. 24 Wherefore hidest thou thy face, and holdest me for thine enemy?*

*Job 23:3 Oh that I knew where I might find him! that I might come even to his seat! 4 I would order my cause before him, and fill my mouth with arguments. 5 I would know the words which he would answer me, and understand what he would say unto me. 6 Will he plead against me with his great power? No; but he would put strength in me. 7 There the righteous might dispute with him; so should I be delivered for ever from my judge. 8 Behold, I go forward, but he is not there; and backward, but I cannot perceive him: (Also 9:34-35, 16:21, 31:35)*

*Job 38:1 Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, (God answers Job for the next three chapters)*

*Job 40:1 Moreover the LORD answered Job, and said,*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Only lack of faith in God can deprive man of joy in any physical circumstances. God's presence in the midst of tribulation is the “song in the night” we are offered. [35:9-11] With that “song”, we are able to walk safely even through a violent storm on the ocean with no boat, nothing physical holding us up more substantial than water. [Matthew 14:25-31] Job's suffering was his nightmare come true, 3:25, but Job repeatedly [9:34-35, 13:3-24, 16:21, 23:3-8, 31:35] said an answer from God would be his dream come true, and that is what God gave him. [38-40] After we experience God's consolation in the middle of experiencing what we had feared more than anything else, we are no longer much afraid of anything.

“If men become so evil that they *want* to harm others, then I will

allow them to become my tools of healing, instead of using natural forces. But I will allow upheaval only to the extent it will actually *benefit* everyone.

“In this way I provide the *maximum possible* freedom, to obey or rebel, to love or hate, to help or hurt, while at the same time I preserve *absolute* safety for all!”

**VerseScout:** Job 1:11 *But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he [Job] hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. 12 And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** God even answers Satan's prayers, though limited to what He can turn into a blessing for Job. The fact that God's respect for our choices is so great that He even indulges Satan, is an assurance of how willing God is to answer our prayers as we walk with Him!

How ironic, and how majestic, that fear is Satan's greatest victory, and yet God used Satan to release Job from fear, and let Satan think it was his idea! How merciful even to Lucifer, to let him accomplish nearly every wicked thing he imagines, so that he can see for himself their emptiness! So that he is not able to say “if only I could have \_\_\_\_, then I would be happy!”

God does answer all good prayers! Not just what He pre-approves! God invites us to be creative when we pray. It was Peter's idea to walk on water; Matthew 14:29. Even when God isn't crazy about what we ask, Luke 11:8 indulges “importunity” [persistent, brash, shameless demands]: God dotes on us, anxious to spoil us as much as any parent his child. God even grants many of Satan's requests, Job 1, though no more than He can turn into good for His people, Romans 8:28.

Elijah had no more inside track than we do, according to James 5:17. God didn't tell him what to pray for, any more than He told Peter to ask if he could walk on water. But Elijah cared so much about the evil of his generation, that He begged God for 3 years of no rain, believed God would answer, and used it to end worship of a cruel rain “god”.

God wants us to “fear” Him, Ecclesiastes 12:13, in the same way we “fear” electricity if we violate its rules. God doesn't want us living in fear, as Job was according to 3:25, so that God had to put Job through what he feared most so he could learn there is a “song even in the night”, 35:10.

But no assurance in the Bible that God will answer our prayers is as dramatic as this passage in Job 1, where God even tries to engage Satan in a friendly conversation! But Satan prays for a cruel test to prove Job is as phony as Satan is - and God generously indulges even that request!

Exactly what was Job so afraid of? If his physical suffering is what he had so “greatly feared”, why did he imagine God would even allow it?

The only logical scenario implied is the one Satan articulated in chapter 1. If Satan's accusation accurately articulated Job's fear, then we see Job was terrified that he was only righteous because God had made it easy to be righteous; and that if calamities came, he would not have the moral strength to

*remain righteous! In other words, he was afraid he would be tested. Satan said Job would fail such a test. Job's own dialogue, for example 13:3, indicates Job was worried that he might have overlooked some terrible sin that would explain such terrible suffering.*

*The scene in chapter one, where the Sons of God come before God, and Satan comes among them, can be interpreted in two ways: either as a singularity, (it happened only that one time in all the world's history), a parade which no other place in the Bible confirms, or it is a graphic way of describing what happens all the time, every day. Don't the Sons of God appear before God every day, in prayer? And doesn't Satan come among them, in the form of our doubt? If this is what Job 1 describes, then Job was simply praying, and thanking God for his blessings, but also expressing fear for his own weakness, should he face serious trials. How about you? Have you ever feared that you might "backslide"?*

*Actually there is one other time in the Bible where Satan stands before God, accusing a man who is also before God: Zechariah 3:1-5. But the outcome is the opposite. In Job, Satan's request to indulge a famous, wealthy world leader is granted. In Zechariah, God rebukes Satan for accusing a religious leader dressed in filthy rags, and clothes the man and commissions him to finish his work.*

**"In other words, I will give mankind *considerable* freedom, but not *absolute* freedom, to do wrong, so that their *choice* between doing right or wrong will be *real*. But their *safety* will be absolute. And their freedom to *choose* right or wrong will be absolute, even when I limit how much they can *act* on their choices."**

***VerseScout: 1 Corinthians 4:5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels [Gr: choices; will] of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.***

**"But I foresaw a new, greater danger, where more than one Consciousness exists, than when I was alone. When I was alone, there was little consequence from how long I took to swing back and forth between boring inactivity and intense creativity. No one was hurt if the exhaustion from intense creativity drove me to the brink of oblivion for a very long time before the boredom there drove me back to creativity. No one cared if the weariness of creating caused me to lay aside projects before I had completely removed the problems from them.**

**"In other words, when I was alone, there were no deadlines, so idleness was not a problem.**

**"But I foresaw that after I created many souls, it would be. I**

foresaw that souls would be affected by each other, so that the actions, and creations, of each soul would benefit or disturb other souls.

“Therefore souls would not have the infinite leisure to linger at the lips of oblivion, waiting for a prod from boredom. I saw that I would have to create other incentives besides mere boredom, or the horrors of errors, to prompt souls to love one another through diligent service one to another. I saw that I would have to create souls with built-in incentives to love which I Myself lack, to ‘make up for’ the incentives to Love which I enjoy, which they cannot have.

“As I explained, it is easy for Me to Love all things and all souls, because I created them out of My own Breath, and Consciousness is naturally inclined to love what it creates itself.”

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:23 And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.*

*Ephesians 5:29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Our natural inclination to love what is ours is illustrated by how it satisfied Adam that his wife was taken from his own body, and by many verses about the “cost” of sacrificing what is our own for others and for God. The presumption that God’s consciousness shares much of the nature of ours, though not its limits, is encouraged by how often Jesus used familiar human relationships to illustrate how God thinks.*

“I can’t give souls that advantage, since only One can create all. So to give souls the same incentive to Love that I have, I gave them almost the opposite, from what I have, in capacity: I severely *limited* their intelligence! So that in order to achieve what is in their heart to do, they will need the intelligence and skills of others! I created souls likewise dependent upon Me for the intelligence and power to satisfy their desires. If souls will work together, and with me, *as a single body, united in heart and purpose*, then nothing will be beyond them!

“So I have really not limited the intelligence of *the human race, acting as a body and with Me*, but I have only limited the intelligence of individual humans living out of harmony with each other and with Me.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 11:4 And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower; whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. 5 And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. 6 And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this*

*they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. 7 Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The sin of Babel was not men working together, but working against God; in fact, in competition with God! God here states that to the extent men are united, “nothing will be restrained from them”. God wants to help men who work together and with Him; in fact, He not only wants to “work together” with us, He wants us, united as in a body, to be His Bride! (Revelation 21:9-10, Ephesians 5:23-32)*

“Another way I created humans with natural incentives to Love is by giving them the capacity to give birth to the bodies of other souls. The birth process will require great time and energy, requiring parents to invest heavily in their children, causing parents to love their children. As an incentive for humans to be willing to begin this investment, I have made the production of children the most wonderful of all physical pleasures. As an incentive for parents to be grateful to continue this investment once begun, I have made baby humans my Ambassadors from Heaven, molded out of fresh pure Joy, simple enough to soften very hard hearts.

“After Eve ate of the Tree of Laws, I gave her great pain in the birth process, so that she would see her child as valuable enough to be worth great sacrifice. That would not have been needed, had she obeyed Me.

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. 15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Eve did not obey God, so God added that incentive to love. Even with it, many mothers are just barely able to love their own children enough to refrain from murdering them!*

*This is not historically new. Chemical abortions have been around from earliest times, even though, then as now, they pose considerable risk not only for the baby but for the mother. What hatred for a baby, that mothers are willing to risk their own lives to kill their own baby! In pagan cultures throughout history babies have been freely murdered after birth.*

*In China a lake was found by missionaries into which locals threw their babies to drown and then float, bloated, until they were fully decayed. In Rome during Bible times Romans left their unwanted babies outside the city wall to die of exposure. Christians saved and adopted many of them. In ancient Mexico, Aztecs ritually sacrificed babies and children to their demon “gods”. Aztecs cut open their chests and pulled out their still beating hearts. This was graphically depicted in Apocrypha, a 1996 movie by Mel Gibson. Around ancient Israel, pagans threw their babies and children into the red hot brass arms of their*

*demonic “god” Molech, using loud drums and chants to drown out the screams.*

*Today it is either dismemberment or scalding with acid, before babies are even born. In the past, pagans murdered their children after they were born.*

“I created many other elaborate systems of interdependence between humans, and between humans and angels, to help you Love. I realize it is still possible for my children, all of whom I love deeply, to choose not to love each other. But I have created, for all of you, every possible reason to Love.”

We were humbled by the Love God had shown in creating us with all the right choices as easy for us as possible. We were humbled that God had spoken to us, not at all like Beelzebub who pretends to be our moral superior, with understanding far above us – which would have been natural for God who truly is our superior without having to pretend – but as a Friend who simply wants us to understand!

Our original question had been “how is it possible for a soul to choose not to obey God?” God had given us much understanding.

And now God summarized:

“And so the reason it is possible for a soul to choose not to obey me, is simple: it is because I challenge souls to forsake oblivion for creativity. To forsake the chains of Self for the freedom of Love. To forsake inaction for involvement. To forsake Death for Life.

“Death requires less exertion than Life. Thus My requirements always require exertion. For humans, My commandments will require *physical* exertion, beginning with the most basic exercise of their physical bodies necessary for them to grow and become healthy and strong enough to function, and at times culminating in the necessity of physically suffering. But even when no physical exertion is required whatsoever, spiritual exertion will always be required. Understanding will always require effort.”

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** *The following passages show how God rebukes those He loves, knocks down the high and mighty, but builds up those who are beaten down. God challenges everyone. No one has grown so great that God says “OK, you’re done. You can just coast now while you are waiting to die so you can come to Heaven.”*

***VerseScout:*** God challenges everyone – *Luke 1:46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, ...48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: ...50 And his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation. 51 He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. 52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.*

*Matthew 16:16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. 17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, **Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: ...22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. 23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, **Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me:** for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.***

*Matthew 15:22 And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil. 23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. 24 But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26 But he answered and said, **It is not meet [right] to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs.** 27 And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table. 28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, **O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.** And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.*

*John 6:65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that **no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.** 66 **From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.** 67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? 68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God. 70 Jesus answered them, **Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?***

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** God challenges everyone. He rebukes those He loves, takes no lip from the politically powerful, but encourages those who are beaten down, so that they may stand strong enough to endure more of God's challenges. Jesus gave Peter the most awesome praise one might imagine, and in the next paragraph brought his soaring pride crashing to the ground. Jesus seemed to rebuke the Canaanite woman with the most withering insult anyone could imagine, only to lift her up in the next sentence with the sweetest comfort, the most encouraging praise, anyone could imagine. After an entire chapter of speaking over the crowd's heads, and after they left with Jesus' disciples, Jesus turned to His apostles and practically invited them to leave too! When they stayed, Jesus challenged them further!

*If God did not, would not consciousness itself eventually exact a worse penalty? Doesn't God's rebuke soften the barbs of Reality in the same way parents absorb some of the demands of human survival so their children may thrive?*

**"This struggle is not between that soul's will and My Will. I do not impose rules upon any soul which are for my benefit, at the expense of what will benefit that soul. The struggle is between the conflicting inclinations of each soul. This struggle is embedded in the inescapable nature of consciousness."**



**VerseScout:** *Job 35:6 If thou sinnest, what doest thou against him? or if thy transgressions be multiplied, what doest thou unto him? 7 If thou be righteous, what givest thou him? or what receiveth he of thine hand? 8 Thy wickedness may hurt a man as thou art; and thy righteousness may profit the son of man.*

God leaned back. His eyes nearly closed. God's Bedtime Story was finished.

"I just want to be left alone! Why doesn't God just leave me alone?" I heard the plaintive cry from the borders of Hell. Now I understood the answer.

God created us as dependent upon each other as possible. Every soul who chooses not to contribute, to the whole Body of souls, that wisdom and skill which God gave him to share, immeasurably hurts all of us.

But it hurts himself most of all! It places him at the door of Oblivion, and instead of being driven back from that abyss towards creative, problem-solving work, he chooses instead the worst nightmares of his God-deprived imagination.

"I leave relatively alone those who flee from Me. At least for now. The torment, perceived by those who complain that I won't leave them alone, is mostly from reality and from the conflict between the competing purposes within their own souls. My intervention is only to help lessen the pressures of reality and their internal conflict by patiently showing them the most direct escape from their suffering. Those who hate Me, hate because I challenge their myths and addictions in which they vainly trust to deliver them from their suffering. But I do not cause their suffering. My intervention lessens their suffering, if not their hate."

**VerseScout:** *Romans 1:28 And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;*

*Proverbs 13:24 He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes.*

*Hebrews 12:4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin. 5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.*

“Although I do create some pressure upon the hell-bound to spare them the worst of their created horrors, and if possible to coax them back to Me, the primary pressure upon them is the very nature of Consciousness itself. Their only hope is not further retreat, but Love. Without love, they are destined to Die while still alive.”

***VerseScout:** Hebrews 12:1 Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,*

*1 Corinthians 9:24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. 25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: 27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** The struggle between our physical desires and our higher purposes is illustrated by a runner. His stomach could care less whether his legs win a race. Neither do his legs care, for that matter. But the runner must ignore the rumblings of his stomach and the screaming of his legs in order to reach what his will has determined is a higher purpose.*

Most of the host nodded off to sleep as soon as God finished speaking. It was not only God who was exhausted! But I couldn't sleep until I had finished recording my notes for my diary. I looked for a couple of brothers too animated by revelation for sleep just yet, as I was. I found my two dear friends with whom my adventure of understanding Hell began. We talked it over.

“Right”, said Dr. Kaw-*tawn*. “It is not the suffering, but the willingness, that is love, and that is wonderful. The suffering itself stinks.”

“And God would never *impose* suffering upon another, and call it love or wonderful”, added Dr. Shaw-*mah*.

“But”, said I, “the demons regularly accuse God of imposing suffering upon them.”

“Their suffering is the farthest thing from love or wonderful”, commented Dr. Shaw-*mah*.

“Their suffering is very real, and very tragic,” added Dr. Kaw-*tawn*, “but we know it naturally results from conditions they have chosen. We beg to help them, but they refuse us. And in fact *they* accuse *us* of increasing their suffering by our efforts to help!”

“Indeed”, observed Dr. Shaw-*mah*, “we attempt to rescue them from their ultimate suffering – their nightmarish imaginations screaming,

surrounding them on the lips of oblivion – by shining a light on their nightmares to assure them they are not real. But they have so much faith that their next nightmare will be a sweet dream, that they accuse our light of being the source of their suffering, while complaining that a god of love wouldn't allow so much suffering!”

I marveled at their demonic rage against our evidence that their “religion” is devoid of power or authority, results or reason. As I reflected on this, a glowing I saw in the corner of my eye directed my gaze to God's worktable, where God's Future Plans were laid open. The glowing came from the title page of the chapter called “Cain”. I wondered what that meant.

“Interesting,” I observed, “that both for God at one end of the spectrum, and demons at the other end, there is suffering. Is, therefore, suffering inevitable, for consciousness?”

Dr. Shaw-*mah*'s eyes brightened. “Surely it is. But what difference! The suffering which is the cost paid by love for another, how glorious! How life-filling! The suffering of terror of living nightmares, how horrible! How tragic!”

Dr. Kaw-*tawn* was confused. “Then is it the destiny of lovers to suffer the work of trying to rescue haters from their suffering?” “Yes,” I answered, “for as long as one of them will still, as God put it – here it is in my notes – ‘rage when...reality...intrudes again...lash out, desiring to destroy, desiring that all the living share his perceived misery.’ Or for as long as they ‘hate the purest, the most innocent, the most responsible for the interaction that makes life continue, but which also knocks loudest on the door of Oblivion which he keeps trying to shut behind him.’

“But of course there was a ‘time’ before Lucifer fell, when God still suffered for the joy of Wisdom. And were there no souls in rebellion now, there would still be plenty to create, plenty of good to concentrate on, through which we may stretch ourselves and grow.”

Dr. Kaw-*tawn* mused. “There should be some principle here which can guide us more efficiently in working alongside God to help our lost brothers.”

Dr. Shaw-*mah* began, “The key is the level of complexity which our minds are willing to address. Picture a soul at the middle point between the suffering of creative love, and the suffering of nightmarish hatred of reality. As the mind addresses and resolves the problems which have caused it to suffer, the mind can tell itself it now has less to do, in which case it can coast, which of course means coast toward death. OR the mind can determine to accept new challenges, not waiting for the goad of suffering, but creating new wonderful things and conditions.”

Dr. Kaw-*tawn* continued, “God told us He had all eternity to finally become bored enough to turn back, bored, from oblivion, to love, but we cannot take that long. So God can shock us back into mental activity with problems.”

I added, “You mean, with problems whose unresolved condition already causes us pain. The problems are always before us, challenging us, but if we do not reach out to embrace them in love, before their unresolved condition hurts us, then God can reconfigure them so their condition hurts us enough to reach out faster to solve them.”

“Interesting.” Dr. Shaw-*mah* noted. “Very interesting. It is when everything seems to be going right, that we are in the greatest danger!”

We all laughed. “Yes”, I said. “Our natural inclination – the natural inclination of consciousness itself – is towards spiritual death when everything seems to be going right! Love alone resists this natural inclination of consciousness to lose its grip on reality.”

Dr. Kaw-*tawn* considered. “We have observed our lost brothers invent imaginary foundations for action to replace God’s Laws, and imaginary foundations for philosophy to replace God. They have, in a word or two, invented false Gods. This must be the natural culmination of the inclination of consciousness to lose its grip on reality.”

He hadn’t finished his thought, but his next sentence choked before it could begin. He struggled several long seconds before he could force his voice to function again. “This must, therefore, be a common, ordinary end result we should often expect to see among the Fallen.”

We were horrified. It was a long time before any of us could speak. Finally I spoke, impressed with the gravity not just of the condition of the Fallen, but of our own.

“For ourselves, to keep our dark spots from growing, perhaps the thing we need to focus on is to remember all these things. To not forget all that God has given us, all He has taught us to do, that we may be vigilant and not coast beyond the periods of rest He has appointed.”

*VerseScout: Deuteronomy 8:1 All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, **that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land** which the LORD sware unto your fathers. 2 And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. 3 And he humbled thee, and **suffered thee to hunger**, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that **man doth not live by***

*bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live. 4 Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither did thy foot swell, these forty years. 5 Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the LORD thy God chasteneth thee. 6 Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him. 7 For the LORD thy God bringeth thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water; of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills; 8 A land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees, and pomegranates; a land of oil olive, and honey; 9 A land wherein thou shalt eat bread without scarceness, thou shalt not lack any thing in it; a land whose stones are iron, and out of whose hills thou mayest dig brass.*

***10 When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the LORD thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. 11 Beware that thou forget not the LORD thy God, in not keeping his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day: 12 Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; 13 And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied; 14 Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the LORD thy God, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage; 15 Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water; who brought thee forth water out of the rock of flint; 16 Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna, which thy fathers knew not, that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end; 17 And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. 18 But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. 19 And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the LORD thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. 20 As the nations which the LORD destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the LORD your God.***

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** Catastrophe is what shocks a dying consciousness back to life. People ask why a God of Love would allow “evil” in the world. This is the answer. It takes great self discipline and spiritual maturity to have everything going well and yet to still love, to still be reaching beyond one’s own needs to serve others, to be a blessing to others.*

*Adam didn’t have it, so God increased his stress level. Not to end*

*his life in judgment, but in love, to keep him from dying indeed.*

Dr. Kaw-tawn pondered. “Although God does create some pressure upon the hell-bound to spare them the worst of their created horrors, and if possible to coax them back to Him, the primary pressure upon them is the very nature of Consciousness itself. Their only hope is not further retreat, but Love. Without love, they are destined to Die while still alive!”

**VerseScout:** *Romans 8:5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16 The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: 17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. 18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** See how “the flesh” is equated with “death”, v. 6, and “enemy of God”, v. 7-8. Notice v. 6 doesn’t merely say “to be carnally minded LEADS TO a future death”, but that it “IS death”. In other words, a death while one yet physically lives. V. 11 isn’t merely equating the physical with death and the soul with life, but by talking about elevating the body itself from death to life, we see God is speaking about the consequences, for both body and soul, of choices made by the consciousness.

V. 13 says it is possible to “mortify the deeds of the body”. “Mortify”, in Greek, θανατοω, (thanatoo) means “to put to death; metaphorically, to make to die i.e. destroy, render extinct; by death to be

*liberated from the bond of anything, literally to be made dead in relation to (something).” So God has made it possible for us to be liberated from the bonds (chains) of our sin-inclined “flesh”. But only “through the Spirit”, not if we “live after the flesh”.*

As God leaned further back to rest, relaxing but not closing His eyes, those of the Host still awake replayed God’s story in their minds several times and took notes, quietly, worshipfully.

That is, until a thought struck all of us, about the same time. It was about God’s incredible vision of “forsaking the chains of Self for the freedom of Love.” The thought: how, is it possible for one part of us to find freedom, by deserting the interests and needs of another part of us? How many parts of us *are* there??!”

God’s eyes opened wide again. He sat straight up. “That’s right”, God said, restoring everyone to wakefulness. “The consciousness which each of you have, and which I have, behaves as if it has competing personalities within each center of consciousness.”

What? Competing personalities within each of us? OK, I’m ready to listen. Shake out the sleepy dust, eyes.

“We’ll talk about that later”, God said. “For now, it’s been a long day. Go to sleep.”

God promptly rested again, and we obediently laid down to sleep. No one said a word, but no one’s eyes came anywhere close to closing! Our eyes were all about as wide as halos!

We watched each other’s eyes to see if we were thinking the same thing. We stared at God to see if we could see any extra Gods where before we saw only One. We stared at each other, looking for any extra faces, hands, wings, any clue at all to something more which had been heretofore hidden.

God just laughed softly to Himself and relaxed a little more.

# Chapter 19

## Travail Within the Trinity

"I haven't giggled that much for a long time!" Sarcamson calculated.

"Of course, time has only existed for a week", I observed.

More giggling.

There was no disrespect in our laughter. We did not doubt the fact. But the verity of the fact did not diminish its appearance of absurdity. Not that we considered reality absurd; we realized only our own ignorance could make it seem so. Still....

"Now let me see if I have this", Sarcamson requested, collecting himself. "We can defy ourselves."

Sober faces all around. For several seconds, even. As we looked at each other, to see who would break first. Then...

Giggle City.

"Well, if we can *laugh* at ourselves, why shouldn't we be able to *defy* ourselves?" Rostrofus wiped his eyes.

"The part that scares me", I ventured, "is that I know what God means!" Curious eyes drilled into mine. "I disobey myself all the time! Why, sometimes I think I must have two people inside me, who are too often arguing!"

Bad move. The giggles gave way to guffaws, and sarcastic wit at my expense.

"That explains a lot, Justinus!"

"Yes, it does! I had thought you might be putting on a little weight."

"I had thought the tug-of-war I have observed in you was between your perception and reality. I can see I have underestimated the problem."

"Which one of you are we talking with now?"

Oh, aren't we so very clever? Laugh yourselves silly, my former friends!

I had really wanted, anyway, to lay my question before God, but now this course offered the additional benefit of changing the focus of the discussion away from me. "God, please help me understand how this applies to the struggle I sometimes sense within myself!"

God smiled and opened His mouth to speak. The Host became blessedly quiet.



“When I created you, I made you a little like Myself. I am *Three* Persons.”

The Host froze. We hadn’t noticed! Nor is it noticeable even now, after it is pointed out to us!

“Do you mean three distinct personalities?” asked Angelon.

“Do you mean three different people inside your body?” asked Sarcamson.

“Do you mean *we, too*, are, each one of us, *three persons*?” I asked.

“I am not describing the existence of anything other than what Comunicus told you he has already experienced”, God answered.

My jaw dropped. I had thought my inner conflict was *like* an argument between two people. It had never occurred to me that my inner conflict *was* an argument between *three* people!

I sensed some of the Host were suspicious, watching me and God alternately, to see if God was conspiring with me in a practical joke.

God laughed, but He wasn’t joking. “Stop it! I’m not talking about some strange unusual alternate reality! I’m just helping you understand everyday, normal, familiar experience.

“One Person, my Will, determines what to do, based on information supplied by the Second Person. My Will also directs the Second Person in what information to gather.

*VerseScout: Proverbs 3:19 The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens.*

*Hebrews 1:2 [God] Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;*

*Matthew 26:41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *These verses distinguish “Lord” from “wisdom”, while equating “wisdom” with “his Son”. “Wisdom/Son” serves the “Lord”; thus “Lord”, called “God” in Hebrews, is the Person of the Trinity which makes final decisions; thus, God’s Will.*

*Matthew 26 describes the distinction within ourselves between our will, and our “flesh”; that is, between what we know is best for us, and what we feel like doing; or between what we would certainly do if there were no cost, and the hesitation by the part of us that must suffer the cost.*

“A Second Person, my Wisdom, creates, plans, and carries out my Will. It studies whatever it is told to study. It always studies and learns; even when not directed what to study, in which case it studies whatever is most interesting.

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 136:5 To him that by wisdom made the heavens: for his mercy endureth for ever.*

*John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God....3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made....10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not....14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “Wisdom” is associated with the 2<sup>nd</sup> Person of the Trinity – the Son. Not with the 1<sup>st</sup> Person, God’s Will. God the Father directs Wisdom, just as our own wills direct our minds but our wills rely on our minds to inform our wills of our options. This is only possible because our minds explore facts and possibilities that our wills haven’t directed our minds to explore, in order to have options to present to our wills for decisions. God the Father created nothing by Himself, without God the Son, according to John 1:3.

Thus either “Wisdom” or “Mind” are Biblically defensible names for the Second Person of the Trinity, as well as the names Son, and Jesus.

In ourselves, we associate the part of us that develops wisdom with our brains, an organ not mentioned in the Bible. Today we think of our brains as a super computer, able to process all kinds of information from the physical senses and from the world of nonphysical ideas. Yet the idea of a Will fits clumsily into our notions of what a brain can do; as if our Will is separate, and in charge of our brains, as a computer operator is separate from and in charge of his computer. Yet our wills are dependent on our brains, as computer operators are dependent on their computers, to accomplish things not possible without them.

“There is a Third Person, also: My Spirit. My Spirit is my Power which proceeds out from me to make things happen as directed by My Wisdom, and to nourish My Breath, which is the substance of all creation.”

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:2 Vanity [Hebrew: “breath”] of vanities [breaths], saith the Preacher; vanity of vanities; all is vanity [breath of breaths, all is breath]. ...14 I have seen all the works that are done under the sun; and, behold, all is vanity [breath] and vexation [Heb: r@uwth: grazes upon, or is nourished by] of spirit [Heb: ruwach: Heaven].*

*Mark 12:30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** How different these Hebrew words are, in meaning, from English translations! (Vanity vs. breath, vexation vs. grazing.)

These verses show that the matter of which the universe is composed is the Breath of God, and it is nourished by the Holy Spirit.

*The “First Commandment” states that there are four distinct parts of our consciousness which are capable of love! Our “strength” appears to be our counterpart to God’s Holy Spirit power to nourish creation.*

*God: Father, Son, Spirit, Breath. Us: heart, soul, mind, strength. The physical universe, identified by Ecclesiastes as God’s Breath, is not part of God, but came out from God. Our “strength” means not just technically, meeting minimum requirements, but we must love with all our energy, say Bible commentators. But it means a little more than that: it means action that reaches into the world around us and heals. As God reaches into the whole universe and nourishes.*

We followed God’s grinning gaze to an angel whose twitching mouth alternated between a trembling frown and a wide smile.

“Yes, Sarcamson, you may ask it. You asked it of Comunicus and never got your answer.”

Sarcamson was suddenly terrified. “I’m sorry! I never meant...”

God laughed. The rest of us marveled, wondering. “Ask!”

Poor Sarcamson bowed low, as if, adding to respect, he might succeed in completely muffling his voice. “Er, God, er...”

“Of course / can hear you, but I think the rest of the Host will want to hear, too.”

Sarcamson looked up just a little, cleared his throat, and finally blurted out, “Which one of you are we speaking to now?” and began sobbing uncontrollably.

The rest of us roared, which helped Sarcamson not one bit. God laughed gently, assured us “He’ll recover”, and waited for the *rest* of us to recover.

When we were ready, God answered Sarcamson for the benefit of all of us.

“When you talk to Me, it is My Will, or The Father to use the analogy of humans, that you address.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 11:2 And he said unto them, **When ye pray, say, Our Father** which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.*

*Luke 22:41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stone’s cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, 42 Saying, Father; if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless **not my will, but thine**, be done.*

“It is My Will Who answers – Who approves, Who makes the final decision to give what you ask.”

**VerseScout:** *John 16:23 And in that day ye shall **ask me nothing**. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall **ask the Father in my name, he will give** it you. 26 At that day ye shall ask [the Father] in my name: and I say not*

unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: 27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

*Romans 10:1 Brethren, my heart's desire and **prayer to God** for Israel is, that they might be saved.*

*1 Corinthians 11:13 Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman **pray unto God** uncovered?*

*2 Corinthians 13:7 Now I **pray to God** that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.*

*Phillippians 4:6 Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving **let your requests be made known unto God.***

*Colossians 1:3 We **give thanks to God and the Father** of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you,*

*1 Thessalonians 1:2 We **give thanks to God** always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers;*

*2 Timothy 4:16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: **I pray God** that it may not be laid to their charge.*

*Revelation 8:4 And the smoke of the incense, which came with **the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God** out of the angel's hand.*

“I – My Will, The Father – Love you.

***VerseScout:** John 14:21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him....23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.*

*John 16:27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.*

“Although I of course Love my own Son – my Mind, my Wisdom – more than you love your own selves, I love you, and man, so much, that I am willing to cause My Son to suffer, to whatever extent that will benefit you. Which is what Love means.”

***VerseScout:** Ephesians 5:29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:*

*John 15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

“When you think of My Love, think of both the Father and the Son. The Son will shed His Blood, as He did in preparing the Tree of Life, and will do again; and the Son may choose whether to do so willingly or under

pressure from the Father. The fact that He volunteers proves His Love, too, for you, as well as for Me.”

**VerseScout:** *John 10:15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. ...17 Therefore doth **my Father love me**, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. 18 **No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself**. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.*

*Matthew 26:53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?*

*John 13:34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.*

*John 15:9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.*

“But it is the Father whose Will must ultimately prevail. It is the Father Who makes the final decision whether the Son must suffer. Therefore it is the Father’s Love which brings you blessings.”

**VerseScout:** *John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.*

God saw me getting wobbly, and assured everyone who might have shared my confusion, “Just remember – don’t start getting mysterious on me – this is no strange, unusual phenomenon. This is quite ordinary. Neither myself, nor any of you, are three separate people, boxed up in cramped quarters somewhere inside our bodies!

“I am three distinct personalities, but I am the same Person, the same Being.”

**VerseScout:** *Job 13:7 Will ye speak wickedly for God? and talk deceitfully for him? 8 Will ye accept **his person**? will ye contend for God?*

*Hebrews 1:1 God, ...2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by **his Son**,...3 **Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person**,...*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Hebrew word הפניו panim, translated in Job 13:7 as “person”, literally means “face”. The Strong’s definition says it is a plural form, “but always [used] as singular”.*

*(The meaning of the verses is “Do we need to lie to help God? Does God need us to show Him favoritism? Does God need us to fight to protect Him?”)*

*Job 13:8 speaks of God's "face"; Hebrews 1:3 says Jesus is God's "express image", which describes one's "face".*

*Our "face" is not a different "person" than "us". Our face is not our mind, or our will, or our energy, yet as multi-faceted as we are, each of us is one single "person".*

"It would be absurd to speak of Me as three separate people, which is why, in speaking of Myself, I sometimes use My names interchangeably; I might use the Name 'God' to refer to the Son."

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 1:8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. 9 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. 10 And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands: [Hebrews 1:8-9 quotes Psalm 45:6-7.]*

As God paused, rumblings from Hell rolled over the hills. Like erratic thunder. No, more like brains falling down stairs. We heard its voices.

"God, three persons! How stupid! Why, if God were three gods, he would always be fighting himself, to establish which is the most powerful, one god overpowering another, until they finally all killed each other!

"What blasphemy, to claim such a thing! To claim the possibility of love enough for two or more equally powerful beings to live in peace! Anyone who claims such a monstrosity needs to have his head sliced off!"

**VerseScout:** *1 John 2:22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. 23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also....4:1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: 3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *1 John identifies he who denies that God the Father and God the Son are both God, as "antichrist". This is precisely what Islam denies, and in fact is the Christian teaching which most infuriates Islam. The Koran teaches:*

*Surah 5.17 "Certainly they disbelieve who say: Surely, God -- He is the Messiah, son of Marium. Say: Who then could control anything as against God*

when He wished to destroy the Messiah son of Marium and his mother and all those on the earth?"

Surah 23:91 "Never did God take to Himself a son, and never was there with him any (other) god -- in that case would each god have certainly taken away what he created, and some of them would certainly have overpowered others; glory be to God above what they describe!"

"Or I might use the Name 'Son' to refer to the Word of God."

**VerseScout:** John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God.... 9 That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. 10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. 11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

"Or I might use the name 'Word of God' to refer to the Spirit, or call the Spirit 'God'."

**VerseScout:** Ephesians 6:17 And take the helmet of salvation, **and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:**

John 4:24 **God is a Spirit:** and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

"I might even say the Spirit is speaking, when the Son is speaking."

**VerseScout:** Revelation 1:1 The **Revelation of Jesus Christ**, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:.... 18 **I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.**

Revelation 2:7 He that hath an ear, let him hear **what the Spirit saith** unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

Revelation 3:1 And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; **These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God**, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

"But on the other hand, to simply describe myself as a single homogeneous personality would fail to explain the very real interaction between the elements of My Self, which are very distinct personalities. Likewise, to deprive you of this knowledge about me, would be to deprive you of knowledge you need to understand yourselves."

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 3:16 And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*

*Matthew 28:19 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of **the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:***

*John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, **and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.***

*1 John 5:7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, **the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.***

*Revelation 19:13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: **and his name is called The Word of God.***

*Hebrews 1:1 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by **his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;** 3 **Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power,** when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; 4 Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, **Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?** And again, **I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?** 6 And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. 7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. 8 **But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.** 9 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even **thy God,** hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. 10 And, **Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands:***

“Let me explain, in another way, which of Us you are talking to, when you are talking to Me.

“As I said, when you receive Love from Me, think of The Father. Again, don’t get weird; all of Me loves you! But in the most profound meaning of Love, which is *willingness* to sacrifice for another, The Father has the most independent Will, and is most capable of giving it. The Son sacrifices directly, but the Father suffers too, with the Son, via empathy.

“When you receive Grace from Me, think of the Son, My Mind, My Wisdom. My Son is the One who suffers as a consequence of the determinations of My Will. It is His labor which pays the price created when you step off the true path – the labor of helping you back on. It is He who suffers the pain of remaining close enough for intimacy with souls



so full of hatred that they will repay My Love with all the injury they can achieve!

“Think of My Holy Spirit, when you receive fellowship with Me – the partnership of working side by side on a project, the participation in My Work, the social intercourse of communication, or even provision of your needs.

“But can’t you see that all of these benefits are all from Me? From your God?”

***VerseScout: 2 Corinthians 13:14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.***

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** By listing only one benefit for man for each of the Three of the Holy Trinity, God characterizes each of the Three, identifying the primary benefit to us of each. From Jesus comes, primarily, Grace. From God, Love. From the Holy Spirit, Communion.

The Greek word translated “communion” in the KJV is translated “fellowship” 60% of the time it is used. It is κοινωνία (koinonia), defined in Strong’s as: “partnership, i.e. (literally) participation, or (social) intercourse, or (pecuniary) benefaction:--(to) communicate(-ation), communion, (contri-)distribution, fellowship.”

The Host was enthralled with this new window into God’s personality, and into our own.

I still longed for fuller understanding. “This certainly gives me more perspective of this struggle which I sometimes feel within myself, between one part of me and another, but will you help me understand better?”

“I will. Again I will describe My own experience, in a way you can apply in understanding yourself.

“The tension within Myself does not involve My Holy Spirit, but is between My Will and My Wisdom. The reason tension is possible is that My Will evaluates what is best to do from a position free from any possibility of suffering. But My Wisdom, through its exertions of Concentration, can become exhausted and suffer. My Will takes into account the strain on My Wisdom, in deciding what is best to do, but My Will, itself, suffers in no way.

“Remember, as I tell you these things, that I am describing the very nature of consciousness itself. I am describing not only my experience, but yours. You, too, experience tension between what you know you should do, and your doing of it. You, too, have both a Will, and a Wisdom-processing Mind.

“Our Minds, yours and Mine, always obey Our Wills. Mine, perfectly; yours, pretty close to perfectly. Your fallen brothers’ minds rebelled against their own wills, along with My Will! Their gap between Will and Mind is always great.

“But even for Me, when right action is very costly, the struggle of My Wisdom to obey My Will can be great. Creating the universe, for example, was hard work! My Wisdom had to draw great strength from My Will in order to prepare for it.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 26:39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt. ....42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.*

*Luke 22:42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. 43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. 44 And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The fact that Jesus was the One who created the Universe and all that is in it, Hebrews 1:2, John 1:3, and the fact that the work was so exhausting even for God that He rested, Genesis 2:1-3, is one example of the fact that when The Father decrees, The Son does the work and suffering. Jesus’ “Passion” – His turmoil in Gethsemane – is another.*

*The psychiatric terms “conscious mind” and “subconscious mind” are quite different from the terms “will” and “mind”. Psychiatry assumes we have a “subconscious mind” which sometimes is influenced by our conscious mind, and sometimes influences our conscious mind. It’s as if we have two wills: a conscious will, and a subconscious, secret will that undermines our conscious choices. If anything, psychiatry says, the subconscious is more the “will” than the conscious, because the conscious mind reels like a fish on a line held by the subconscious, until its rescue by the psychiatrist’s couch.*

*It is true that we have made choices we never understood, and which we have forgotten, some of which are now habits. But it is the choices we make now, in the light of the understanding we have now, that determine our future. Philippians 3:13-14, “...forgetting those things which are behind...I press forward....”*

*Neither is it correct to think of our “subconscious” as our “mind” which carries out the agenda of our “wills”. In the first place, psychiatry does not correctly understand the subconscious to be the servant of the conscious, and in the second place, the reasoning, researching, creating, and calculating functions of the Mind need to be conscious.*

“Furthermore, the Man I have created likewise has these qualities

within himself. Not only within his own mind, but in the relationship between him and his future children. He will be a father to his son. Fathers know what their sons should do. Fathers know the cost to their sons, for doing it. Sometimes when the benefits will be very great, the cost will be very great, and sons will struggle to obey their fathers.”

**VerseScout: The Image of the Holy Trinity in Man** Deuteronomy 6:5 *And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine **heart**, [the part of us that reasons, according to hundreds of verses that feature this word] and with all thy **soul**, [Heb: “vitality”; our will] and with all thy **might**. [Heb: vehemence, or passion]*

*Romans 7:14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. 15 For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but **what I hate, that do I**. 16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. 17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: [literally, my physical body is not the home of goodness] **for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not**. 19 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God after **the inward man**: 23 But I see another law in **my members, warring against the law of my mind**, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? [or, this body whose lack of discipline interferes so much with the interaction with my environment that I want (interaction is the measure of life)] 25 I thank God [for offering deliverance] through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

*2 Corinthians 4:16 For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, **yet the inward man** is renewed day by day.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** The facts that God is a Trinity of Three In One, and that we are created in His Image, should leave us unsurprised by the hope that we may study the relationship between Father, Son, and Holy Spirit by contemplating the tension between competing interests within our very own selves. (And vice versa.)

Deuteronomy 6:5 divides the person of man, likewise, into three personalities: heart, soul, and might. Our soul, or “vitality” according to the Hebrew, our “breath of life”, is like our will. Our heart, according to hundreds of Scriptures featuring the word, is like the part of us that reasons. Scripture says it is controlled by the “you”, or by the will. Our “might” (Heb: vehemence, or passion) may be an analogy of the Holy Spirit.

The tension between our Wills and our Minds, distinct literal personalities within our very own selves, is described by Romans 7:14-25 in terms every human will find familiar. It is like the tension between human fathers and sons, and between our Heavenly Father and Jesus. That is, Jesus’ Passion is

*like the struggle of our minds to get in step with what our wills have decreed we really want to do, and like the struggle of human sons to obey their human fathers even when they know, intellectually, that dad is right, but what is right is so hard.*

*The passage even distinguishes between “the inward man”, the will, and the “members”, meaning literally (in the Greek) the members of the body, meaning arms and legs. The picture is of the Will (the “I”) telling the body to do something, and the body “declaring war”. The contrast is even more graphic, in 1 Corinthians 4:16, between “the inward man” and “our outward man”.*

*In each of these relationships, Jesus, human sons, and our minds have a pretty good idea of the correctness of God, human fathers, and our wills, but because of the frequent costliness of obedience, there is a frequent struggle to obey. There can be such a struggle that sons and minds can look about desperately for an alternative to obedience. Every human understands the power of this desperation to tempt sons and minds to completely rebel against fathers and wills, in denial of their obviously superior wisdom and trustworthiness.*

*Jesus modeled the wise response. He indeed searched for an alternative. He indeed appealed to His Father for an alternative. But even from the beginning of His pleas, He reaffirmed His commitment to accept His Father’s answer, trusting that if there were an alternative His Father would definitely offer it, (Ezekiel 4:12-15 is an example of God providing a less costly alternative when asked), and that if His Father does not offer an alternative, it will be because there is none.*

*Other than His willingness to offer a less demanding alternative when prayed for, when there is one, God is rock-solid, unwavering, in knowing what is necessary and sticking to it. In the same way, our own wills (or “conscience”) are far more definite in their determination of what we ought to do, than our fickle minds, or imaginations, whose focus ranges from the most sublime to the most debased.*

I worshiped God. “This is exciting! I’ve been curious about these things a long time! But is there one of the three which is more ‘You’ than the others?”

“My Will, The Father, steers My whole being. My Will steers My Wisdom and My Breath. So you could think of My Will as being the most ‘Me’ of the three.”

**VerseScout:** *John 10:29 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father’s hand. 30 I and my Father are one.*

*Mark 13:32 But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.*

“But what could My Will do, without My Wisdom? My Will must trust My Wisdom to carry out all My Will’s intentions. My will cannot even determine what to do, without information supplied by My Wisdom.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 10:22 All things are delivered [Gr: surrendered, entrusted] to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *As God did not Himself create the universe, but entrusted that to Jesus, Hebrews 1:2, and as our wills cannot bring to pass their intentions without the energy and creativity of our minds, even so the greatest impact human fathers can have upon future generations is to leave them children who will carry on their principles; but fathers are helpless to do so without the obedience of their children.*

“However, the original desire of My Will for Wisdom preceded My Wisdom’s original search for information. In that sense, you could say ‘I created My Wisdom; or, you could say, The Father gave ‘birth’ to The Son. But all of Me is still ‘Me’. And ‘My’ desire for information would have gone unfulfilled had not My Wisdom’s capacity to provide it not already been there.”

**VerseScout:** *John 1:14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of **the only begotten of the Father**,) full of grace and truth. (Also v. 18.)*

*John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave **his only begotten Son**, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. (Also v. 18.)*

*Psalms 2:6 Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. 7 I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, **Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten** [Heb: declared the pedigree, or publicly acknowledge as My Son] thee. 8 Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “only begotten” translates the Greek μονογενής (monogenes) The Theological Dictionary of the New Testament says the word means “the nature of the derivation, e.g., noble or common”, not one’s birth. Thus the word itself means Jesus is the unique, one-of-a-kind “Son of God”, without brothers or sisters – although Romans 8:29 adds that there is a real sense in which Jesus will be “the firstborn among many brethren.”

*Of course, Jesus was physically born to Mary. But Jesus did not come into existence that late in history!*

*Was there a “time” before Time when The Father existed before The Son? Only in the theoretical sense reported here by Comunicus, which assumes there was an “original thought” in the Mind of God. But that original thought*

would have gone nowhere, had there been at the same time no capacity for processing it.

*But does Psalms 2:7 identify the very day Jesus was “born”? Was He born after the kings of the earth were created and had become wicked? Of course not. The Hebrew word “yalad” (KJV “begotten”) has for one of its principal meanings, “to declare a pedigree”. This means about the same as “to declare the nature of one’s derivation, whether noble or common”, the definition of the New Testament Greek word for “only begotten”.*

*In other words, the Hebrew word means this is the time for God to declare to the world that Jesus Christ, whom they crucified, was His Son indeed, Who will now rule over them. Consistent with this interpretation, Hebrews 5:5 interprets the verse as identifying, not the day Jesus was “born”, but the day Jesus was “glorified” by God.*

*This same phrase from Psalm 2 is quoted in Acts 13:33, Hebrews 1:5, 6, 5:5, and 1 John 4:9, which the KJV translates “only begotten son”.*

*Revelation 1:5 says Jesus is “the **first begotten of the dead**, and the prince of the kings of the earth.” But the Greek doesn’t even place a word meaning “born” in that verse. James 1:18 says we will “**be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures**.”*

*But Jesus was born first, in at least two senses. Being “the express image of God”, He of course was molded to the Will of God before anyone else existed. In the second sense, He was the first of all men to die and be resurrected again in His physical, glorified body, Revelation 1:5. James 1:18 makes the distinction between Jesus, the Firstborn Creator, and us, the “firstfruits” of those whom He created.*

*There is another sense in which we can even “give birth” to each other, by leading each other to God, 1 Corinthians 4:15 and Philemon 1:10.*

*None of these verses, therefore, indicate any time in which God the Father existed, before Jesus the Son existed. Jesus uses human fathers as metaphors to help us understand God’s care for us, and His relationship with God. But no metaphor perfectly corresponds to what it illustrates. Human fathers precede their sons in time; our Heavenly Father precedes us in time, but did not precede Jesus – at least not according to any information in the Bible.*

**“And what can My Will and My Wisdom do without My Spirit? My Spirit sustains My Breath, the canvas upon which My Wisdom, the brush, paints as directed by My Will, or my eyes – to use the illustration you have just seen of Adam drawing pictures with sticks on his canvas of sand. My Breath is the medium of which all created things are composed, and My Spirit is the agency through which I nourish and change them. My Spirit, like your body, is the instrument of My interaction with all things. My Spirit is also the power that responds to the instructions of My Wisdom. What value would any of my plans have, if I had no power to implement them?”**

**VerseScout:** John 14:16 *And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;*

John 14:26 *But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost [Gr: πνευμα, (pneuma), often translated “spirit”], whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*

John 15:26 *But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:*

John 5:30 **I can of mine own self do nothing:** *as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.*

Colossians 1:19 *For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;*

Colossians 2:9 *For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Holy Spirit (also called The Comforter, John 14:26) takes directions from Jesus, the Son, John 15:26 – although Jesus does nothing without going through the Father, 5:30. In this sense, even though the Son directs the Holy Spirit, it is also true that it is not the Son who sends it, but the Father; in answer to the Son’s prayer, 14:26. (“...the Father will send in my name...”, 14:26, “...whom I will send unto you from the Father...”, 15:26.)*

*Ecclesiastes 1 tells us the Holy Spirit is what sustains the universe. This doesn’t diminish the claim in John, Hebrews, and Proverbs that Jesus created everything. When we say a carpenter pounds in a nail, we understand the hammer did the actual pounding, not the carpenter’s fingers, yet we correctly credit the carpenter with the building.*

*Mark 3:22-30 and Luke 12:10 say the most unforgivable blasphemy is that which is against the Holy Spirit, not against God or Jesus. This makes sense if the Spirit is the part of God whose work we physically see. If a function of the Holy Spirit is to sustain the matter of which the universe is composed, Ecclesiastes 1:14, then when a man sees a miracle, he is seeing the very function of the Holy Spirit sustaining matter – reversing entropy – with his own eyes. Of course he is also seeing the work of the Son, who directs the Holy Spirit, and the Father, who directs the Son, but indirectly. What he sees with his physical eyes is the work of the Spirit.*

*In other words, one may blaspheme God or Jesus, not knowing what he is talking about. But when something miraculous and wonderful, or in other words Holy, occurs right before our own eyes, right in this substance we call “matter” which the Bible says is made of God’s Breath, and we blaspheme it, we cannot plead ignorance.*

**“Not that My Will has no existence apart from My Wisdom and My**

Spirit. Indeed, some of my most sublime moments are with My Will alone, without My Wisdom or My Spirit. I meditate on what I have done, decide what should be done, meditate on what is good, and revel in Love, the Source of Joy. In the same way that you reflect on the past and make resolutions for the future, without for the moment engaging the part of you that researches or the part of you that takes action outside yourselves.

“But ultimately My Will relies upon My Wisdom to research the knowledge needed to verify the rightness of its decisions. Thus My Will has wonderful fellowship with My Wisdom, or to use the terminology of human relationships, The Father has wonderful fellowship with The Son, as The Father reviews The Son’s findings, draws conclusions based upon them, teaches The Son what The Father has concluded, and directs The Son how to proceed with new studies and activities.

“But I must say again: We are so much ‘one’ that while We are distinct, it would be ridiculous to regard Us as separate from, or independent of, each other.”

***VerseScout:** John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and **the Word was God.** 2 The same was in the beginning with God.*

*John 14:10 Believest thou not that **I am in the Father, and the Father in me?** the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but **the Father that dwelleth in me**, he doeth the works.*

*John 14:20 At that day ye shall know that **I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.***

“I have already explained how My Mind must occasionally struggle to obey My Will, which can give the appearance of having an independent Will, a Will of its own, as if it were literally an independent Person. But only were My Will to waver could My Mind have the power to rebel, and even then only to that extent.”

We turned to our fallen brothers. We remembered Lucifer’s wavering between the Good he understood, and the Easy Way which he allowed to first intrigue, and finally to overwhelm him.

***VerseScout:** John 3:32 And what he [the Son] hath seen and heard, that he testifieth:...34 For **he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God:** for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.*

*John 5:19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do:** for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. ...30 **I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge:** and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.*



*John 7:16 Jesus answered them, and said, **My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.***

*John 7:28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29 **But I know him: for I am from him, and he hath sent me.***

*John 8:28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that **I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.***

*John 8:38 **I speak that which I have seen with my Father:** and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. ...40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you **the truth, which I have heard of God:** this did not Abraham.*

*John 9:4 **I must work the works of him that sent me,** while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.*

*John 12:49 For I have not spoken of myself; **but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.***

*John 17:8 For **I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me;** and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that **thou didst send me.***

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** The fact that Jesus can literally do nothing without the Father proves not only that the Two are distinct, but also that they are not separate, or independent of each other.

*Did Jesus say that because it was literally true? Did Jesus literally mean He could do NOTHING without God?*

*We know He had the power to rebel, because He resisted temptation, Hebrews 4:15, which cannot be said of a soul with no power to succumb to temptation. We can relate to that withown experience with our own “lower natures”. Yes, our lower nature has the power to rebel!*

*But only in thought. Not in action, when our will holds firm. Our lower natures are able to grumble. When our will holds firm, our lower nature has only this choice: whether to submit voluntarily, or by force.*

I asked, “I know the struggle, but is it possible, if my will remains firm, for my mind to still rebel?”

“The power of your mind and My Mind, or The Son, to rebel against our Will, is limited. To the extent the Will remains firm, the Mind has no power to disobey than a dog has power to run beyond the end of a strong leash. On the other hand, the likelihood that The Son will resist, to the extent the Will wavers, is certain.

“But The Son cannot replace the agenda of The Will with a positive alternative. It’s temptation is not to follow a different but equally difficult path, but rather to follow an easier path, and to prefer *any* easier path.

“It is in that sense that The Son has the inclination to rebel, and to misquote what He hears from The Will. *My* Son will not, but *your* minds

and imaginations, unrestrained by your wills, have the power to misrepresent the pure resolve of your wills, or your conscience.

“However, even though The Will always has the power to drag the Mind, kicking and screaming, back to its straight and narrow path against the Mind’s inclinations, and although this *must* be done with a Mind full of evil imaginations, this is not the most peaceful existence. Our goal must be a Mind so disciplined, so accustomed to trusting the Will, that given the choice, it will gladly, conscientiously obey.

“Let me give an example of why that is so important for you and I to achieve that harmony, even in the smallest matters, for our success in our many goals.”

God showed us a house of the future, and the tools used to build it.

“See this hammer, and these nails? It takes practice to hit the hammer on the nail with enough force that it doesn’t take all day to drive the nail in, straight enough that the nail isn’t bent before it goes in, and aimed well enough that the hammer doesn’t miss the nail and put a dent in the wood, if not send the nail flying off into a neighbor’s eye.

“The skill of building a house requires mastery of many sub-skills like that. It requires that there be few, preferably no, struggles with a lazy mind that would rather accept less than perfection in order to not have to concentrate so hard to perfect each sub-skill.

“Because even if one has all eternity to finish, and an infinite supply of nails to waste, one must be able to set these sub-skills on automatic while thinking about many other things. Like not falling off the roof where you are hammering – which would not be a concern for you angels but would be serious for a human. Or trying to hammer with your left hand while holding a heavy board in place with your right hand.

“So these sub-skills must become so perfect, so consistent, that they are automatic, not requiring any internal arguing, so that other tasks may be performed at the same time.

“Even skills unrelated to construction, sloppily executed, will interrupt construction. For example, all the while one is building a house, unresolved problems from other areas of his life will spill into his thoughts while he is concentrating on building. Whether tension with his wife or child, where he has not yet figured out the right words to say, or tension with Me – lack of faith that My advice is for his benefit, or dissatisfaction with love, or with life itself.

“Your fallen brothers have proven capable of that, so you know humans, who have consciousness like yours though not as developed just

as yours is not as developed as Mine, are capable of that. Even My Son is *capable* of that. That capacity is an inescapable property of consciousness.

“Which is why, in order to be the most successful in *anything*, you must aim for perfect harmony between your will and your mind in *everything*, even in the smallest details which don’t seem to matter, and which indeed wouldn’t matter if one of those details were the only work before you.

“Whether building a harp, or playing your harps which requires plucking the correct strings at the right times without even watching your hands, or building a friendship, any subtask that takes time away from concentrating on the next big goal is a seed of failure. Life is made up of many decisions, actions, and goals that often must all be accomplished at the same time. Multi task. whether playing a harp, or construction, or building a relationship. Sub-tasks must be reliable, automatic, and not distracting. Your degree of vigilance about perfecting them becomes a habit that affects your approach to bigger things. And the biggest goals in your lives are destined to become sub-tasks to greater goals in your future which you cannot now imagine.”

**VerseScout:** *2 Kings 13:15 And Elisha said unto him, Take bow and arrows. And he took unto him bow and arrows. 16 And he said to the king of Israel, Put thine hand upon the bow. And he put his hand upon it: and Elisha put his hands upon the king's hands. 17 And he said, Open the window eastward. And he opened it. Then Elisha said, Shoot. And he shot. And he said, The arrow of the LORD'S deliverance, and the arrow of deliverance from Syria: for thou shalt smite the Syrians in Aphek, till thou have consumed them. 18 And he said, Take the arrows. And he took them. And he said unto the king of Israel, Smite upon the ground. And he smote thrice, and stayed. 19 And the man of God was wroth with him, and said, Thou shouldest have smitten five or six times; then hadst thou smitten Syria till thou hadst consumed it: whereas now thou shalt smite Syria but thrice.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *If I were the king, I would have been puzzled. (Leaving aside the puzzle of how a computer could be a king.) I would have complained, “well, had you told me that, then of course I would have struck more! Geez, if it was that important, why didn't you say so? Why did you wait to tell me after it was too late to do any good? What kind of crazy prophet ARE you?”*

*But now I realize that would have been dumb. Can you figure out why? Can you figure out why the prophet was right, and why the test wouldn't have worked had he explained it first?*

*You see, we are like the king. We have chosen many things that we would like to accomplish, which require lots of work. Some things are so important that failure is unthinkable. Other things have little importance. We don't understand*

*the importance of doing our very best even on what matters little, just like the king didn't understand what was so important about slamming a bunch of silly arrows on the ground.*

*Yet we, just like the king, hurt the important things in our lives when we shirk lesser responsibilities.*

*We can't do everything. But once we decide what to do, we must develop the habit of doing it right.*

*Because if we get in the habit of being sloppy, and failing, in little things, how will we get important things done?*

*The more we make laziness a habit, and get used to failure, the more we tell ourselves, "I'm just not very smart. So it's no use trying really hard this time: I will probably just fail again, anyway."*

*There is an easy solution that will make you successful and smart: whatever you decide to do, do it really well. As a very wise man once wrote, "Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might."*

*One even wiser warned that we should double the talents with which we begin, if we want to really live. To stop learning is to stop growing up, which is to live half dead. (Ecclesiastes 9:10, Matthew 25:14-30)*

*God wants you to be very successful. He wants you to be more successful than you can ever imagine, and He is waiting to help. He even invites you to order mountains out of the way, and then watch them march off. (Mark 11:23, Matthew 21:21) But not even God can figure out how to please you, if what you do is different than what you say you want. (James 1:6-8)*

*The more quality you put into your lesser responsibilities, the more you will be trusted with greater opportunities by God and man. (Luke 19:15-19)*

*There are terrible things in this world which seem impossible to correct, but "with God nothing shall be impossible." Luke 1:37. The goals that matter most require every ounce of your energy and concentration. Make success a habit. Don't come to the end of your life thinking of all the times you gave up because you didn't think you could succeed.*

*It is especially the things which the Bible clearly tells us to do, that we need to do with all our might. Arrows are expensive today, and they were costlier then. To smack them on the ground, especially when that means leaving yourself defenseless on the way home, would not only seem destructive, but irresponsible.*

*But the king's choice was whether to trust the prophet of God, or his arrows. God specifically warns us against putting so much trust in ourselves that we ignore Him, forgetting our helplessness before He delivered us.. Deuteronomy 8-9.*

*"Thus, I, that is, My Will, or The Father, **give** My Son the power to disobey, simply by restraining my power to coerce his obedience. To put it another way, I, The Father, **permit** My Son to disobey Me. But I do so with confidence because He has proved Himself trustworthy.*

“And why do I take such a risk? Because if I do not, My Son does not have the joyous opportunity of *obeying willingly*. Also so I am free to concentrate on My next big project.

“Because I have entrusted all things to My Son, and because My Son always obeys, there is no disharmony in Me. My Father and My Son are one.”

*VerseScout: John 10:30 I and my Father are one.*

The Host applauded! The Host almost *never* did that, but we were thrilled beyond words, yet in need of expressing our appreciation in some manner, so we let our hands speak!

Angelo inquired, “Then when we feel a struggle within ourselves, between our minds and our conscience, should *we likewise* trust our minds to obey our wills, and refrain from forcing our minds if they do not?”

God’s eyes widened with horror at the thought, while His mouth broke into a wide smile at its absurdity. “Not if the matter is important! Trust only those who have proved themselves trustworthy!

“For any important duty, when your Will or Conscience knows what you should do, let your will resolve to do it no matter how much resistance you meet, from within or without!”

I began to feel faint from the weight of responsibility. Too much concentration! How can I be *that* righteous? My mind isn’t that strong!

God answered, “To the extent a task is not so important, however, and your mind is reasonably trustworthy, your will needs rest, and focus on other goals. It is possible to be so righteous that you become hard and proud. It is arrogant to imagine you can concentrate so hard you will not fail.

“I was able to concentrate that much because I was not limited by time. For reasons I explained earlier, I have subjected you, and especially humans, to time. Perfection takes time. On the way, you will fail.

“Don’t be so hard hearted that your failures to bless others doesn’t concern you, but on the other hand, don’t be so proud that failure can make you feel ashamed.”

*VerseScout: Ecclesiastes 7:16 Be not righteous over much; neither make thyself over wise: why shouldest thou destroy thyself? 17 Be not over much wicked, neither be thou foolish: why shouldest thou die before thy time?*

“For the sake of your own peace, also pray to Me, asking Me to authorize My Holy Spirit to help you clean out all the old unwanted debris out of your imaginations so that your minds can tune into your wills without distraction, and I will do it.”

Sarcamson put in, “You mean the resistance of our minds is due to the debris of unwanted imaginations, and maybe habits and prejudices? Which are capable of being flushed out? How does such debris pile up?”

God smiled in anticipation of making this particularly interesting point: “Your mind has no capacity to choose what it thinks about, to the extent your will is definite about what your mind should think about!

“Your mind is like the ground into which a man sows seed to plant a garden. The ground cannot grow any other than the seeds given it. Neither does the ground care whether it grows weeds, or flowers, except that weeds which grow quickly, with little effort from the ground, are easier for the ground to grow than fragile flowers which require much time and protection. Other than that, the ground does not like to be flooded, or scorched with heat, or trampled by dinosaurs. It wants to be comfortable, but it is equally comfortable with weeds or flowers which require equal effort.

“Your will is like the man when he selects his seed. The man chooses what should grow, knowing that what is easiest to grow is not always the most useful.

“But if the man is not resolved to vegetables only, and sows a little of each, and later resolves that no weeds should be planted but only vegetables and flowers, he will change what he sows and the ground will comply. However, the ground’s ability to comply will be limited to the space not already occupied with the weeds already sown.

“If the man resolves to create a clean garden with only vegetables and flowers, and no weeds, he must not only stop sowing weeds, but he must do what?”

“Pull the weeds”, came the answer from the Host.

“Your minds are more intelligent than the ground! And your minds are more intimately united with your wills, than ground is to a gardener! But this little parable helps answer your question, how debris piles up, and how it must be removed.

“It also illustrates the function of the mind to process whatever information it is directed to focus upon by the will, just as the ground has no input into what seeds are given it to nourish, but makes grow all it is given.

“The ground takes all seeds given it – not only those of the gardener, the will, but also those blown in by Life – raises them up into

mature plants, and presents its labors for the gardener's inspection, in the same way the Mind processes not only those thoughts which the will intended it to focus upon, but also thoughts which the will did not want but did not stop, and also thoughts blown in by Life itself, and then reports back to the will with its findings, to await further instructions.

"A garden also illustrates why minds favor some thoughts over others. Rocky ground discourages plants which send their roots deep before rising to meet the sky. Such strong, hardy plants cannot send their roots down very far before they are stopped by rocks. While they are struggling to root themselves, they are crowded out by shallow-rooted weeds which grow fast out of the ground because they hardly bother with roots.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 7:24 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.*

*Matthew 13:3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; 4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: 5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: 6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: 8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. 9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

"In the same way, minds most easily receive the shallowest thoughts, which require the least processing: the least research, the least concentration, the least sacrifice, the least risk. Minds encourage wills to be content with the shallowest, emptiest, vainest thoughts.

"In order to so encourage wills, minds even fabricate elaborate reasons, for wills, why assignments to such drivel would be worthwhile, or even noble. Wills which waver under this pressure can accomplish little."

**VerseScout:** *James 1:6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.*

"I have made humans with the same relationship between their Wills and their Minds as the relationship within Me. Just as My Son has no independent ability to do or research anything except as permitted by My Will, even so the Heart of man cannot do or think anything without the consent of the man's Will.

"But My Son has proved Himself so trustworthy, that I have entrusted Him with all things."

***VerseScout:** Psalms 8:6 Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put **all things under his feet**:*

*1 Corinthians 15:27 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put **all things under him**.*

*Ephesians 1:22 And hath put **all things under his feet**, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,*

"I have even given Him the power to rebel, knowing that He will not."

***VerseScout:** Matthew 26:53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father; and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? 54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?*

"My Son is, therefore, your example.

"My Son is the example for souls, such as yourselves, of how to obey Me, no matter how much you desire alternatives to what I have commanded."

***VerseScout:** Matthew 26:42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father; if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.*

"My Son is the example for minds, such as yours, of how to completely obey your Will, like a Son ought to obey His Father. Let your wills so discipline your minds, that the two will not need to do perpetual battle! Let the battle end with your minds happily subdued! Let your wills then give your minds their instructions in complete trust, that your wills may move on to new challenges without having to constantly look back as upon a destructive rebel who must be constantly watched."

***VerseScout:** Romans 7:22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: 23 But I see another law in my **members, warring against the law of my***



*mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

*Galatians 5:16-18: Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh; for the desire of the flesh fights against the Spirit, and the desire of the Spirit against the flesh, for these are contrary the one to the other; that ye may not do the things that ye would. But if ye are led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** By what means are we delivered “through Jesus”? (Rom 7:25) Through His miraculous intervention in our failure by means which we do not understand, achieving progress we little perceive? Yes, partly. By contemplating His example? Is Paul telling us “look here! The key is right here!”? Yes, surely.

*On one level, this verse looks forward to the day when God will give us new bodies when the last trace of imperfection will be cleansed from us. On another level, this verse points us to the relationship with God which, will we but follow, will lift us up, slowly but as surely towards Heaven as a tree rises from the dust to finally tower over all that lives..*

*Burkett (a Bible commentary) says of Romans 7:25: “if a good man, at a particular time, does the evil that he hates, he always hates the evil which he does. Blessed be God, sin shall never hurt us, if it does not please us”*

*Actually sin usually pleases even sinners before they sin, but not afterwards. Perhaps we should clarify “Sin shall not hurt us, to the extent we consistently hate it.”*

*Burkett continues, “As God will not finally judge us [for a single action], so we ought not censoriously to judge one another; or injuriously to judge ourselves by a single act, by a particular action, but by the habitual and constant bent of our resolutions and the general course and tenor of our conversation.”*

*The Geneva Bible says: “He recovers himself, and shows us that he rests only in Christ. This is the true perfection of those that are born again, to confess that they are imperfect.”*

“My Son is the example for wills, such as yours, of how to stand firm against their struggling hearts. My Son is your example of how to set your mind free! Your mind – the part of you that wanders, imagines, absorbs, calculates, fills in details, creates, cares for your body, develops habits – is not made free by inviting it to steer your soul! Your mind has no more capacity for that than the ground has for selecting the seeds blown across it.

“When your will wavers, that only burdens the mind with confusion and turmoil. Set your mind free by making its mission clear and inescapable, and then let your will step back and watch your mind work.”

Sarcamson sheepishly approached God with a low voice, “I’m having a hard time distinguishing, as I hear you explain these things,

which part of me is my will, and which part is my mind.”

God explained, “Will puts the *idea* in a sentence. The Mind arranges the grammar so that the idea may be understood.

“Will receives an inspiration from Me, (which it may call ‘intuition’), and tells the mind, ‘drop everything and concentrate on this. I think this is true, and I think it is important. Check it out for me, and work out the details.’ The mind then turns its attention as directed.

“When the mind wanders, a determined will wakes up and rushes back to the mind, ordering, ‘stop! That’s not where I told you to go! Get back on track!’

“Indeed, without will’s monitoring, the mind would skate along from subject to subject, conquering the whole world one imagination at a time, daydreaming away the soul’s entire life. In fact, the only difference between a ‘daydream’ and the most intense study is merely the discipline upon the mind imposed by the will.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 13:45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: 46 Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.*

*Matthew 26:40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?*

*Mark 14:37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one hour?*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Dropping lesser daydreams to concentrate on an important matter demanded by the will is illustrated by Jesus’ parable of The Pearl of Great Price.*

*The disciple’s fiasco when they tried to pray for one hour reflects our own difficulty in concentrating on prayer for that long, and is an example of the mind’s propensity for wandering, no matter how determined the will is to focus it on a task.*

“Will is the voice of Conscience, stirred by a warning from Me, condemning the mind for its thoughts and the body for its actions.”

**VerseScout:** *Romans 14:5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. ...22 Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. 23 And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Verse 22 confirms again the everyday human experience of “guilt”; that is, the condemning of our own selves for those things which we have just finished allowing ourselves to do! As if there is one part*

of “us” which condemns another part of “us”. The part that condemns we call “conscience”.

*Verse 5 shows that God authorizes our wills, or our conscience, latitude in determining what is right and wrong. Not that God will look the other way when men deliberately “persuade” themselves to do wrong, “Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;” 1 Timothy 4:2, but verse 5 certainly indicates God’s confidence in our conscience to guide us correctly, if we will obey it.*

*Or perhaps it is that even when our conscience errs, God wants us to obey it as a test of our obedience; just as troops in battle are punished for disobeying orders, even when the orders turn out not to have been wise.*

*When God sees that we are faithful to obey what appears to be orders from God, God will be faithful to help the conscience mature so that it increasingly speaks accurately for God. (We do not mean, by “conscience”, to exclude evidence of God’s Will brought to our attention by reason or Bible study! “Conscience” matures by including these sources in its calculations.)*

Sarcamson furrowed his brow, as if thinking something significant, as he opened his mouth and took a breath to speak. But his face deflated into a merely interested expression as he declared, “Oh.”

We laughed, but Sarcamson had not intended to make light of the subject. He just lacks very much capacity for not being funny.

I was curious about something. “I see how the relationship of Your Will to Your Mind, or The Father to The Son, is like the relationship of our wills to our minds. Is there any difference between those relationships, and the relationship of You to us? Aren’t our wills as much your servants, as our minds are to our wills? Don’t you have the same power to crush rebellion in us, as our wills have to crush rebellion in our minds?”

God was pleased with the question. “I’m glad you are putting ideas together to create new insights.”

**VerseScout:** *Mark 4:13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?*

*Proverbs 26:7 The legs of the lame are not equal: so is a parable in the mouth of fools.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God wants us to put 2 and 2 together. That is, to study spiritual things by examining their reflection in familiar things. When the disciples failed to do it, Jesus criticized them with some impatience. When a man does it carelessly, drawing unwarranted significance from parts of the analogy which do not match the reality, Proverbs calls him a “fool”.*

“Yes, there are similarities, but also differences.

“Your wills really are independent of Me. I have made them so.

“Sure, I have the power to crush your wills when they rebel, but not without crushing your very existence.”

God turned his gaze to our fallen brothers, where we were reminded of evidence of the difference. Yes, they certainly had genuine power to rebel! They were certainly distinct, separate persons from God!

“Not so when your minds rebel against your wills. When you force them into compliance, there is no Person or Soul whose existence is crushed, any more than if a human pulls an unnecessary tooth.

“Even My Son is like that. Should I ever need to force Him to obey The Father against His ‘will’, He will obey without any loss of individuality or freedom. Because He and I are One.

“But the rest of My answer to your question is that although there has been a difference between the relationship of My Son to My Will, and the relationship of Me to you, my prayer to Myself is that the difference will disappear, and that you will be as much one with Me, as is My Son!

“But not by force, but rather, by your choice! It is when you *choose* to work alongside Me, though you have the power to choose otherwise, that you love Me.”

*VerseScout: John 17:11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that **they may be one, as we are.** ....20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That **they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:** that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; **that they may be one, even as we are one:** 23 **I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one;** and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

*John 3:35 The **Father loveth the Son**, and hath given all things into his hand.*

*John 5:20 For the **Father loveth the Son**, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.*

*John 14:31 But that the world may know that **I love the Father**; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do [offer my life as a sacrifice for you]. Arise, let us go hence.*

“I offer you this as an example for yourselves. Let your prayer – to Me and even to yourself – be for the day your minds will never need force of will before they will obey, but out of love for your wills, will not resist even when your wills impose the most grueling duties possible.”

## Chapter 20

### How to Lose Weight

*[Note from the Translator, Dave Leach: I tried to leave out the following chapter because it is too silly. All it is, is about how to lose weight. I can't believe Comunicus spent so much time on the subject. I mean, how often do you see an obese angel anyway?*

*[But my publisher said I have to come up with SOMETHING that will make people want to buy the book. Either how to make money from home without having to do anything, or where to see people naked, or how to lose weight. She said that a bunch of Bible stuff, without adding anything else to make the book interesting, is unmarketable. I mean, what would you put in a Facebook ad? "Read The Prehistoric Angel Diary! A bunch of boring Bible stuff"? Not!*

*[She gave me a couple of other options. Flying saucers, The Secret Bogeymen who Run the World. All the dirt on famous people.*

*[But since Comunicus had actually written about how to lose weight, I went with that option.]*

"This is crazy! Let me share this with you!"

As God said this He handed us the Future Possibilities Globe again.

"This illustrates what I was explaining, about how there are different voices in the same consciousness who struggle against one another, to the extent Will is not firm."

As we, too, laughed at the comical absurdity of it, He explained: "Beelzebub's most grievous accusation is that My Commandments are not just My advice, based on My own experience with Consciousness, on how to avoid disappointment, but that I actually want souls to do something other than what will most fulfill them!"

"But look at this! See these poor people going through all the steps of rebellion which we have seen in your fallen brothers, and yet the Commandments against which they are rebelling are *their own!*

"This helps prove that rebellion is not a contest of wills, a difference of purpose between one Consciousness and another, or a battle between the competing, irreconcilable interests of God and Man! That Authority, against which Consciousness most rebels, is, essentially, its own!"

I clicked “print”. The globe instantly printed out several trillion copies, one for each of us, of a handwritten notebook titled “Diary”. It was somewhat like the diary in which I am now writing. But this diary was written by a human, centuries away, in one of many possible futures. Here is what it said, or I should say, may one day say:

### *The Fat Diary*

I’ve been studying fat in the Bible.

I can make a Biblical case that overeating is a sin, and obesity is out of place in the life of a Christian.

It is not a very strong case.

[Overeating is one of the possible figurative definitions of “glutton” (KJV) in Deuteronomy 21:20 where “glutton” is one of three juvenile crimes punishable in court; and in Proverbs 23:21 where the “glutton” will come to poverty.

But the Hebrew word, *Zalal*, literally means “to shake”, the way the wind shakes a tree; figuratively, it means to be morally loose and worthless, or a prodigal, Luke 15:11-32.

Jesus was falsely charged with being “gluttonous”, Matthew 11:19 and Luke 7:34, (the Greek word means the same as the English word), but the word “glutton” emphasizes wolfing down a lot of food at one time, which some do who remain skinny.

Moses’ dietary laws prohibited *eating* fat, and Moses’ sacrificial laws demanded the fat be burned on the altar; should we apply that to “burning off” our fat?

Judges 3 presents a cartoonish picture of a very fat wicked king, and how his fat assisted his righteous assassin.

1 Samuel 4:18 tells how indulgent Eli’s obesity contributed to his death.

Job 15:25-28, Jeremiah 5:28, 50:11, and Psalms 17:9-10, characterize God’s enemies as obese.

Isaiah 6:10 makes a fat heart a metaphor for a closed mind.

Ezekiel 34:16, 20, and Zechariah 11:16 describes God’s judgment on those who are “fat”, but perhaps wealth gained dishonestly and not shared charitably is meant.

On the other hand being “fat” is the reward of trusting God, Psalms 92:14, Proverbs 28:25, although perhaps it is not a fat body that is meant but a “fat soul”, or “fat bones”, as in Proverbs 11:25, 13:4, 15:30, and Isaiah 58:11.

Obesity, or even being a little overweight, may well concern any Christian. But it is not enough of a spiritual concern to be specified in the

Bible as a concern, along with covetousness, adultery, murder, stealing, gossiping, divisiveness, etc.

1 Corinthians 9:25 may be the strongest case against obesity; it doesn't specify fat but compares an athlete who runs to win with the Christian who lives for God's glory and says they must both be "temperate in all things". The Greek word for "temperate" means "to exercise self-restraint (in diet and chastity)".

In the spirit of general temperance, Proverbs 24:13 advises "My son, eat thou honey, because it is good" – "a land flowing with milk and honey" is even what God says was best about the Promised Land – yet Proverbs 25:27 warns "It is not good to eat *much* honey", Proverbs 27:7 explaining that eating too much will make one tired of it, and Proverbs 25:16 picturing getting tired enough of it to cause vomiting. (Probably a figure of speech like we say we are "stuffed" when we overeat.)

To the extent it is a concern at all, it comes under Romans 14's broad advice that each person should decide for himself whether a particular thing is right or wrong; it is between his own conscience and God; it is not for us to judge each other.

**Considerations consistent with Biblical principles but without specific Biblical support.**

Perhaps the most wholesome motivation for losing excess weight is the same motivation one has for standing up straight, combing one's hair, taking a bath to control odor, etc: not to become the object of others' lust by becoming beautiful, but simply because a Child of God dirties God's Temple, 1 Corinthians 6:19, by deliberately making it ugly.

Certainly obesity shortens one's time on earth, and thus one's opportunity to bless others and serve God here. And during one's shortened time, obesity reduces one's health and freedom of movement, further limiting one's effectiveness. Reduced health increases one's medical expenses, reducing one's resources for blessing others.

Of course to the extent health is one's motivation for losing weight, one will not use methods that worsen health, such as smoking. Nor will one eat "junk food" up until it puts on weight; it is better for one's health to eat too much healthy food than to eat only a little food that is all junk.

An undisciplined appearance can distract from our messages of healing, blessing, and overcoming. Although if we have no message beyond how neat our bodies, clothes, cars, homes, jobs, or community presence are, then mere physical discipline – neatness – doesn't matter. It provides no spiritual advantage.

What are our dreams for our new, healthy, beautiful disciplined body? To look good on the beach where it can become the object of

others' lust? Do we look forward to more, better adultery? Are we going to adorn our lovely bodies "with fancy hair styles or with gold ornaments or pearls or expensive dresses", 1 Timothy 2:9? That will distract from a wholesome message way more than fat!

Better to remain round as a beach ball, die young, and go to Heaven!

That is a "weight loss program" motivated by lust.

"Fornication isn't the delight you thought" is the title of my video posted at <http://bit.ly/162nTfY>.

A program motivated by love, of serving others, will keep one's disciplined, healthy body modestly covered. Such people will be "modest and sensible about their clothes and...dress properly", dressed "with good deeds". 1 Timothy 2:9-10, The Book translation.

My struggle to lose weight has taught me about sin – and about rebellion against God, and why people actually choose Hell without God, over Heaven filled with God's love – precisely *because* fat is not, spiritually, a big enough deal with God to get a mention in the Bible.

The popular urgency of weight-loss programs teaches about the nature of sin precisely because when a fat Christian yields to the "temptation" to overeat, and fails to follow *his own* weight-loss program, it is *not* God against Whom he rebels, *but himself*! His concern for losing weight is, ordinarily, far more to satisfy his personal vanity, than any conviction that God may care.

There are other examples of how we humans rebel against ourselves. *Any* time we resolve to do something, and then struggle against *our own resolution*, will serve our purpose. Whether it is to "overcome a bad habit", or break free of an addiction, or climb out of debt, or simply complete some work or study, which we have resolved to ourselves to do, it is then *ourselves*, not God, against whom we are primarily rebelling.

How does one rebel against oneself?

What is it? Does one part of me want it, and another part does not? Does each human contain not one but two souls, each wanting the opposite of what the other wants? Always arguing? Is it impossible for me to ever be satisfied, because in order to satisfy one of the souls within me, the other must be deprived?

That crosses my mind when I try to lose weight! After I have eaten too well, a worn, haggard, scarecrow of a once noble, proud, moral champion rises up within my heart and enacts yet one more new law: that this time, I am not going to eat any chocolate creme cheesecake



smothered in whipped cream for an entire week, not even if it is offered *free* at tomorrow's convention.

Crouching in a dark corner, the other soul within me smirks. He knows his time is coming, and he will prevail again, just like every other time. That time is when, at the convention, the very delight contemplated indeed awaits, and there are *strawberries* in the whipped cream, and miracle of miracles, the person next to me left early so I can eat his!

Not without a fight with The Scarecrow, of course: the usual, perfunctory fight.

This other soul is much less noble. He has never been noble. He has never grown up. He is a whining child whose objections defy all reason, experience, and self-interest.

The child whines, "Oh, I have been so good for the last two days! I have deprived myself so much that now I am quite hungry. In fact, I think I feel a little faint. I need a burst of energy to make it through the next boring presentation without my eyes locking shut. It's not fair to have to be this hungry! Well maybe I'm not actually hungry, but I really want it. Why shouldn't I have what I want? I don't think it will matter if I have just this one desert. Well, or even these two. I think I can still lose the weight I need to lose if I eat this."

Then comes the choice. Which to follow: the noble, haggard Conscience, so accustomed to defeat, cowed into silence, watching sadly but saying little? Or the selfish, spoiled brat making such a strong, persuasive case for this physical delight being the key to true happiness?

We have the power to choose. Even though we have such rich experience of failure to choose the way we want to choose, even when we give in to the spoiled brat, we are aware that we cannot actually release our hand in the direction of the dessert, until our conscience formally "gives up" and authorizes the treat.

It is this power to choose that is our clue to our true nature. We are not two souls in a single body, each with its own legitimate needs and desires. It is the power of choice that rules. It is he who chooses who is the real "us".

We also know from experience that the noble Conscience can always be satisfied, by a wise balance between enjoyment of the physical delights of earth to refresh and strengthen us, and abstention from those same pleasures when obsession with them is not refreshing us but perverting us; is not strengthening us but consuming our strength. The spoiled child, by contrast, can never be satisfied, we have learned. After the chocolate cream cheese strawberry whipped cream delight is gone, still more waits to be savored, until the stomach suffers physical pain, and

yet the tongue ceases not, but cries always "More! More!" At some point the Noble Conscience must gather strength and shout "No More! Enough!" or our weight will surely grow until our freedom of movement ends.

### **The Key to Genuine Satisfaction: Obedience**

As for the dilemma of two voices within us, always clamoring for the opposite, so that both can never be satisfied, we have learned from experience that whenever our Noble voice stands tall and strong, not haggard and defeated, and orders the Whining Child to shut up and disappear, that the spoiled child is not merely suppressed but still there, brooding, unsatisfied. It disappears. *It ceases to exist.* There is no voice of dissatisfaction. Satan has fled, James 4:7. *There is nothing to disturb the peace.* Physical hunger may remain, but its power is gone.

When we discipline ourselves, we are content. That is, when we deny ourselves the physical delights we know are not spiritually beneficial, we suffer no dissatisfaction, no lack of fulfillment, and no unhappiness. Rather, we are at peace. We are content. We are fulfilled. We are successful. We lose weight. We climb out of debt (whether financial or caloric). We conquer Satan. We conquer our sin nature. We overcome temptation. We conquer doubt, and strengthen our Faith. We have exactly what we want. We endure persecution without wavering from our witness. We could not be happier. We enter Paradise.

In the famous words of Nancy Reagan, wife of President Ronald Reagan, who used the words to found a national anti-drug movement, "Just Say 'No.'"

Strange.

Yet isn't that your experience too?

If you aren't following me yet, just think back to the last time you did something that was hard.

Maybe as a child it was eating some food your parents imagined to be nourishing but which you knew was manufactured to kill rats.

Maybe as a student it was writing a 500-word term paper.

Maybe as a youth it was coming home from a date by the time decreed by your parents, who obviously didn't understand the purpose of dates.

Maybe as a young adult it was slogging through your first 40 hours of a job that didn't seem nearly as fulfilling as a date.

Maybe as a young parent it was getting nourishing food down your child's throat.

Maybe as an older parent it was slogging through a philosophical discussion with your child about the purpose of dates.

Maybe you have never had any of these experiences. Just think of any skill you have ever acquired. Did you ever learn to play a musical instrument? Then you know about the hours of practice during which some people without musical discernment said you stink, though it sounded uplifting to you. If you never learned music, you must have been in sports. Sports participation often hurts, because often you face foes bigger than you who are in your way.

How about the skills you acquired for the job you have now? How about just cleaning your room? (If you are a woman, that is; if you are a man, I don't suppose you clean your room.)

In other words, we are not just talking about losing weight. We are talking about the self-discipline you need to get through life.

Now, have you selected a memory through which we can relate to each other?

Just think of the progress of whatever temptation you conquered, skill you mastered, or hazard you navigated. At first you dreaded it, either because it seemed too hard, too painful, or too boring. But once you began doing it, there came a point where you "got into" it. In spite of yourself, you actually started liking it!

Depending on the memory you selected, this experience of actually liking what you had previously dreaded may have lasted from a few moments of your experience, to nearly all of it. But if you have selected a memory of a situation you eventually completely mastered, then you have had much fulfillment (along with pain, depending on what you mastered) from your doing this thing which earlier you had thought rose from the Pit of Hell. In other words, the Spoiled Brat Within, or Satan, fled, and you were perfectly contented! Phillipians 4:11.

Although Satan still returns to distract you from goals not yet mastered, we all have the experience of seeing Satan completely give up when we fully master a skill and haven't the slightest desire to return to the lack of self control of our childhood.

For example, even on those occasions when self control causes pain, nothing can tempt you any more, now that you have grown up, to deliberately soil your underwear any more.

Nor does the issue even cause you, any longer, inner conflict. You have learned that it isn't the Voice of the Brat that robs your peace: it's when you listen. It's when you give it the least credibility. It's when you wonder, for even an instant, if it might offer you greater wisdom than Conscience.

That is, when you listen to the voice which, you already have a good idea, is the one offering short-term pleasure at the expense of long-term peace or fulfillment through accomplishment of your goals.

It's not quite as simple as saying that voice is Satan, and the nobler voice is God. The truth is something more intimate than the existence of two *external* voices. The fact is that when we rebel against God, it is more tragic than rebelling against some external consciousness. God is more intimate than our own Selves. In God "we live, and move, and have our being", Acts 17:28. Indeed, the very tissues of our bodies are held together by God, Colossians 1:17!

God is so much closer to the true "us" than our own desires, that rebellion against God is rebellion against Self.

*Could it be that, conversely, rebellion against our selves, against our own goals and resolutions, is rebellion against God? Is God's Will THAT intertwined with our own? Many Scriptures indicate so!*

James 1 says "a double minded man is unstable in all his ways; let not that man think he shall receive anything of the Lord." As if God WANTS us to ask for things which He did not tell us to want; and to receive them. Jesus gave many promises of God's willingness to give us what we ask if we ask in faith. God WANTS our joy to be full through receiving all that we ask, John 16:24! God WANTS to "give you the Kingdom", Luke 12:32!

Working hard towards good goals is the engine of purpose in life. But working for vanity which will never satisfy, once acquired, is tragic; yet not half so much as not working for what is wanted, but only wanting what others have! And that tragedy is nothing beside that of already having all the ingredients of Paradise, but wanting instead the Hell belonging to others!

Sometimes what we mistake for the voice of Conscience is actually the values of the world, from the pit of hell, persuading us to feel "inferior" because our car isn't new enough, our house isn't big enough, our hair isn't beautiful enough, our belly isn't slender enough, our wife isn't lovely enough, when God is actually trying to get through to us that these wants are only ingratitude for our blessings, and are great weights hindering our race towards eternity, which we must throw off or despair now and die forever!

But to the extent the Voice of God is truly speaking through what we recognize as the voice of Conscience, and the voice of Satan the Rebel is heard in The Brat, then to that extent, our peace is robbed by listening to The Brat. The more we listen, the more we obey, the more alleged

pleasure we grab for ourselves, the less satisfied, or grateful, we become; the more ravenous his demands become; the more impossible it becomes for us to ever find happiness, or even genuine pleasure.

To that same extent, we have perfect peace by giving no credence whatsoever to The Brat. Perfect Peace is ours when we recognize its demands and promises, or any demands and promises that hinder perfect obedience to God, as lies.

But the key to overcoming, not just temporarily, but forever, is found in a mind full of God.

*Matthew 12:43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.*

**Empty.** When temptation is driven out of your mind, don't just leave your mind "empty"; that is, "unoccupied by any other who would keep him out" in the words of the Family Bible. Invite God in to guard the place 24/7.

Don't let your mind "take a holiday". Don't just "devote yourself wholly to...leisure" (don't let down your guard). These are the definitions of the Greek word *σχολάζοντα* (scholadzonta) which KJV translates "empty" in Matthew 12:44.

Fill the emptiness with *thanksgiving for what you now have*, which you will lose again if you continue complaining about it. Discipline your memory to consciously appreciate the blessings whose loss would devastate you.

If a newer car or bigger house is not the wisest use of your resources, thank God for what you have, or your lack of appreciation may cause you to neglect what you have and allow it to deteriorate. If it is, then pray for it, save for it, get it, and thank God for His provision. Thank God for the opportunity that will open up when you reach your goal, so that when temptation to waste your savings on frivolity comes knocking, it will be met at the door with a clear mental picture of the wonderful goal which temptation has come to destroy.

If a flatter belly is an asset in your service to Him, you can trust Him to help you secure it! Just say "NO" to whatever it is you eat too much of, and thank Him continually for the opportunities which will open up when you reach your goal, so that when temptation comes offering to destroy your opportunity, it will meet a vivid image of your goal.

There are desires you dare not want, if you value everything good and satisfying! You dare not want what belongs to others! You dare not want a bigger house or newer car that belongs to another! You dare not want to kill and hate! You dare not want Hell, when God has given you Paradise!

You dare not want another wife than the one you have!

You must treasure the loveliness and excellence of what God has provided you, or you shall surely lose it, and your soul and wallet shall surely bear the cost! Fill the emptiness left by ejected forbidden desires, with thanksgiving to God for what He has provided you, which you will surely lose, along with your peace and prosperity, if you do not take care of it!

**Swept.** Don't just sweep away all your problems. Don't just "brush off" evil as if ignoring the voice of temptation for a few minutes is enough to keep you safe. Don't think a "clean mind" or "clean thoughts" are all the protection you need. Don't think getting rid of evil in your life is the end of your journey!

If you have kicked drugs or alcohol, you need to also replace your substance-encouraging friendships. That doesn't mean you must never see your old friends again: but you must love them as you love yourself, abhorring their substance abuse as well as your own, seeking to save them through Jesus as Jesus saved you.

You need to replace habits and mementos associated with your former misuse. You need to seize the opportunities unavailable to you before, and thank God for them continually!

The Greek word literally means "broom". Brooms are wonderful devices. They can sweep out evil. But by themselves, they cannot *keep out* evil. Witches use *brooms* for *transportation*.

**Garnished.** (Gr: κεκοσμημενον kekosmehmenon) "to put in proper order, i.e. decorate (literally or figuratively); specially, to snuff (a wick)." KJV translates the word in other places as "adorn, garnish, trim". When the wick of an oil lamp burns, oil cannot travel through its fibers and the flame slowly dies. The burned portion must be cut off. Thus the first listed definition of "snuff" in my big fat dictionary is "to trim off the charred end of (a candlestick." (Actually a candle flame doesn't die because its wick is charred, but the flame of a kerosene lamp does.)

Don't just put up decorations to show the world "see what I pretty mind I have?" Don't just pull out, for display, the trophies you have managed to earn despite your habits. Don't just go get a job better than your last one, which you abandoned for drinking, just to prove to yourself and to the world that you can still "play the game" if you want to.

Don't just trim the charred edges off your old life so the lamp of your old life can burn bright again. If drug use has made you unemployable, don't just quit drugs long enough to get another job, which will get you enough of a paycheck to buy more drugs!

*Romans 7:24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. ...*

Fill your empty mind with Jesus Christ! Fill your heart with thanksgiving to God for the good which is threatened by your temptations! Remind yourself of what you risk losing if you cave in again. Hold the memory of the good you have in your heart. Love it. Determine to protect it.

But neither *forget* the smooth words by which temptation seeks admittance! Be ready always to answer, 1 Peter 3:15, as Jesus was, Matthew 4. Find answers in God's Word, which you may have time to read only briefly every day, but upon which you can meditate 24/7.

*Psalms 1:1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2 **But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night.** 3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water; that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.*

Overcoming temptation this thoroughly becomes a light in you, not only capable of guiding your own feet away from the pit, but of helping others. Share it, and through teaching, learn even more.

Let us return, for more spiritual lessons, to the experience of trying to lose weight.

Wanting to lose weight, while whining about how hungry we are, while eating enough to actually *gain* weight, is a degree of rebellion.

A higher degree is when we remember a determination we made earlier, to not eat for such and such a duration of time, but within that time, here we are at the cookie jar, just "automatically", before we seem to have time to remember our pledge to ourselves, "dipping into the till". As we *begin* to realize this is going on, there is a moment of consciousness where we kind of just push our memory back a bit, to delay remembering, just long enough to devour our prize. In other words, we are "hardening our heart". But not so much against God, in the case of overeating, as against our own selves.

If we can harden our hearts, consciously rebelling against our own selves, isn't that a clue, that the fact God asks of us things against which

we rebel, does not prove God wants things contrary to our own desires?

Lack of "*Self-Discipline*" is at the heart of much rebellion, against God as well as self. God says don't fornicate; we lust anyway. God says don't covet; we want anyway. We tell ourselves don't overeat (in our culture, obesity reduces opportunities to fornicate, but of course that isn't why WE want to lose weight); we overeat anyway. But sin combines lack of self-discipline with doubt. In the case of overeating, we doubt the wisdom of our very own prior commands! We had made those commands the more iron-clad, vested with the utmost gravity, knowing how poorly we had obeyed our own earlier commands. Yet here we are again, doubting their legitimacy. Doubting their necessity. Doubting whether they really are in our own interest.

We listen to an imagination with no authority, representing no real desire, which will cease to exist in the presence of remembering the good it has come to destroy.

**Wavering.** James said a man who doubts is unstable in all his ways. That so well describes the instability of anyone wavering over temptation to sin against God or self, that it may be worth our while to investigate whether this is indeed exactly what he meant.

James 1:5-8 says it is especially when we ask God for wisdom, that we should ask in faith. The King James adds, "Nothing wavering". The Greek word for "wavering", διακρινόμενος (diakrinomenos), sounds like The Spoiled Brat. "Hey, am I sure I want to fill my head with a bunch of high sounding theology that will probably just put me to sleep? This is the 21st Century. I've got TV to fill my head. I've got a job to pay the cable bill. I've got my life in a comfortable routine. I belong to the right church so I've already bought my ticket to heaven and the pastor says I can't lose it. What, I'm not wise enough already? So I should seek more wisdom, huh? Does this mean I'm promising to read the Bible or something? No way!"

The Greek word for "wavering" means (1) "to separate, distinguish, prefer". Our happiness is lost when we prefer some other course than God has mapped, so that there is a separation, or distinction, between our course, and God's course for us. Our happiness depends on our complete obedience to God.

The word for "wavering" also means (2) "to try a court case". When Conscience and God agree, and Satan whines in opposition, we are doomed if we sit there and "decide" which to follow.

Whether the issue is whether to eat a cream puff, or whether to kill an innocent human being, if you have to think about it, the battle has



already against you. Once you recognize God's guiding Hand, if you have to think about whether you really want to take it, you've already rebelled.

Not that there is no more hope for you! Our merciful God will probably put obstacles in your way to delay your wicked action, giving you more time to reconsider, for as long as He sees hope for you without you having to experience the horrible consequences of actually acting wickedly. But your choice is no longer whether to rebel. You have already rebelled. Your choice is how long you want to *continue* to rebel. Do not join those who rebel for all eternity!

The word for "wavering" also means (3) "to fight, argue, separate from another in a hostile spirit." This describes the second stage of The Spoiled Brat, the hardening of heart after the decision has been made to rebel, so now we must justify ourselves by blaming God for depriving us of what we need for our happiness.

Finally, the word for "wavering" also means (4) *to be at variance with one's self, hesitate, doubt*.

(Definitions are from an expanded Strong's Concordance on a computer program, and confirmed by *Arndt-Gingrich Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*.)

James 1:6 is traditionally thought to use only this fourth meaning of the Greek word, the thought being doubt whether it is God's will to answer our prayers. But what if it means all these other things too, including our doubt whether to trust that God's commandments (as well as His promises) are for our benefit? The fact is that if we don't *trust* God's commandments, we will *disobey* them.

The example of what to pray for, in the preceding verses, is wisdom concerning "temptations". The Greek word means "putting to proof (by experiment (of good), experience (of evil), solicitation, discipline or provocation); by implication, adversity". In other words, it is where we deliberately and consciously test ourselves by experiment, such as by timing ourselves on a track to see how fast we can run.

Another scenario of the word is where we are tested by "solicitation", such as where Satan tests our commitment to a goal by whispering of the delights of turning away from it.

Another is where we are "disciplined", by parents if we are children, or if we are adults, by employers, courts, and just plain reality.

Another is where we are tested by "provocation". This would include persecution for our commitment to God.

In all these kinds of temptations, wisdom how to overcome them, which means not only how to endure them but to stop unnecessary aspects of them, is a wise thing to pray for.

Here is the verse in context:

*James 1:2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers [diverse] temptations; 3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. 4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting [Gr: lacking] nothing. 5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. 6 **But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. 7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. 8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways. 9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted: 10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. 11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways. 12 **Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.*****

*13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Do not err, my beloved brethren. 17 **Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.***

He who doubts he can succeed is crippled from trying. He is unreliable. He is just talk, all hot air. All complaint, no action. He dotes on problems, mocks solutions. Depressed by a world full of problems, but full of excuses to justify rather than face his terror – his doubt that he can succeed.

Hebrews, chapters 3-4, is about “a Rest for the People of God”, entered by faith. “If today you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the day of the provocation.” A return to Paradise is offered. Yet even in Paradise, Adam and Eve worked: they tended their garden. What is so restful about gardening, that it could belong in the place called “rest”?

How peaceful to face a pile of problems with great hope that they can be solved through your own labor alongside God! Just like garden

work is peaceful, because you know what to do, and it isn't going to argue with you, and the weather won't argue with you if you don't argue with God. Well, you might think of the weeds as talking back to you, but you have the confidence that if you will but take the time to control them, they can't grow as fast as you can pull them. Yet the same garden will cause frenzy to one who does not spend the time, and lets weeds choke out the crop.

The Commandments of God are not the chains of an alien tyrant pushing us down into slavery for purposes other than our own. They are the key to the chains of the very nature of our own Consciousness.

*Romans 7:24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? (ISV: Who will rescue me from this body that is infected by death?) 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord....*

Romans 7:25 explains the solution, whether the problem is an annoying little unimportant habit vulnerable to just caring a little more about it, or a horrible, destructive, criminal compulsion or addiction before which the mind and heart cowers! Jesus Christ offers victory! Jesus promises to protect us from *any* challenge beyond our capacity, 1 Corinthians 10:13. We may begin with that hope, and continue with Jesus' promise in Luke 11:13 to give us the good things we ask for, specifically the Holy Spirit, whose power and guidance is mighty enough to defeat any enemy.

As Romans 7 points out, this does not mean our struggle ceases. But to the extent of our faith in God's promises, our experience of it drops from being a heart-pounding, desperate, life-and-death struggle *to being a life-fulfilling challenge*.

But does Romans 7 describe a struggle against sin over which we cannot have complete victory? Are verses 18-24 a Biblical excuse for failure? Is at least partial defeat of every Christian inevitable? Are verses 20-23 God's acknowledgment that we are destined to fail, but that's OK with God, Who is satisfied if our failure at least makes us depressed?

Or is every challenge before us like learning music: the more we study, the more we learn how much more is possible if we work hard, but also, the better we get?

*Romans 7:18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present [Gr: παρακειται (parakeitai) lies*

near; see Genesis 4:7] *with me; but how to perform* [Gr: κατεργαζεσθαι (katergazesthai) to work fully, i.e. accomplish; by implication, to finish, fashion] *that which is good I find not. 19 For the good that I would I do not:* [Gr ποιεω (poieo) to practice once. In other words, “the good that I want to do, I don’t even do ONCE.”] *but the evil* [Gr: κακον (kakon) worthlessness] *which I would not, that I do.* [Gr: πρassoω (prasso) "practice", i.e. perform repeatedly or habitually.] *20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin* [Gr: ἁμαρτια (hamartia) sin: to miss the goal] *that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: 23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?*

But if this fatalistic interpretation is correct, why does verse 24 ask who will “deliver” us, and verse 25 answer gloriously,

*Romans 7:25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord.*

But wait! that’s not the whole verse! Doesn’t the rest of it return to the theme of v. 20-23, that we are destined to fail, but that’s OK as long as we don’t *want* to fail?

*...So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

Our interpretation of these phrases must account for the fact that the “deliverance”, v. 24, by “Jesus Christ our Lord”, v. 25, is glorious enough to “thank God” for! It cannot be some mere failure made “OK” by God’s forgiveness! God does not merely offer to forgive our failure – God offers victory! In fact, Romans 8:37 calls us “MORE than conquerors”!

Notice that in verse 18, Paul did not say “even with Jesus within me, neither one of us can figure out how I can have complete victory!” No! Paul said only that “how to perform that which is good *I* (by myself, without the victory brought by Jesus in v. 25) find not.”

Notice in verse 19 that the “evil” which Paul “practices” is not necessarily a positive violation of a clear command of God, but is, in the Greek, “worthlessness”. This reminds us that in our everyday lives we experience degrees of success and failure.

A baby soils his pants, not because of what we would call “sin”, but because of simple immaturity. The more mature we become, the more “culpable”, or responsible, we become for the same actions which were excusable before.

A baby smiles with joy as he soils his pants, blissfully ignorant of anything amiss.

An adult controls himself without concern, years of successful experience “under his belt”.

It’s those months in between that cause the toddler dismay, while he is learning that soft warm feeling is not cause for pride but for embarrassment, but before he has gained complete control.

Before this interim period, a baby’s efforts cannot be regarded as “failures”, because “failure” means not reaching a goal, and the baby has no consciousness of a goal. After this interim period, there is no failure. It is only during this interim period that failure is even particularly possible. But even “failure” cannot properly be called “sin”, as we generally define it today, meaning a willful (deliberate) failure to meet a goal, or deliberate rebellion against a “law of God” which defines right and wrong.

During this interim, a very articulate baby might say,

*18 I know that the desire of my body, unrestrained, is not good. My desire to control myself lies near; but how to achieve good, I haven't yet mastered. (At least when doing good kind of hurts.) 19 The good I like, I do not; the worthless do-do I would not do, I do profusely. (Like Luke 6:38 says, “pressed down, and shaken together, and running over”.) 20 But mommy, the fact that this comes out of me against my will, proves that it isn't the part of me that is really “me”, that does it, but just the pressures to do wrong that live in my body.*

Verse 20 gives further evidence that Paul is talking about this interim period between knowledge of sin and control over it. If Paul’s will itself were the culprit – if Paul’s will “wavered”, James 1:6, sometimes wanting to be righteous and other times choosing to sin, he would not be able to write, “it is no more ‘I’ that do it”.

When we speak of one’s will consistently choosing obedience, in the face of at least occasional failure to physically obey, we must be speaking of this interim period; because it is our everyday experience – even for unbelievers – that when one consistently determines to succeed, at anything, it is only a matter of time before mastery is gained.

(Yes, even unbelievers have the experience of succeeding, when they are determined to succeed. What they can’t do, without Christ, is succeed very much, or at goals that are very important or very difficult.)

But why must we wait? Why can’t God just make us full grown adults from birth?

We may speculate: because, besides the stress to our mothers’ bodies, then our complex personalities would not be founded on our millions of choices, but upon robot-like “programming”. But the fact is, we do not begin as adults, our choices conveniently made for us. God lets us

explore and settle the frontier of our personalities a little at a time. If we had to occupy the entire frontier before building cities of choices, we would be overwhelmed by the wild animals of unresolved decisions.

*Deuteronomy 7:22 And the LORD thy God will put out those nations before thee by little and little: thou mayest not consume them at once, lest the beasts of the field increase upon thee.*

We have also God's wonderful promise that to the extent we truly keep our eyes on Jesus, and off the storms of failure raging about us, we can dramatically reduce the interim period and jump rather quickly from awareness of a command of God, to mastery over our physical resistance to it.

*Matthew 14:28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. 29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. 30 But **when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink**, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. 31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?*

Paul's only specific example of failure, in his book of Romans, is "lust".

*Romans 7:7 What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.*

Mastery over lust is very much like mastery over one's natural emissions. The knowledge that "lust" is wrong does not automatically bring, with it, the knowledge of the precise boundary between lust, and wholesome use of the eyes. After all, even the Bible acknowledges some women are more "fair" than others. Job 42:15, 1 Kings 1:1-4, Genesis 24:16, Esther 2:7, etc. Job 42:15 specifically treats this superior beauty as a reward of God to Job, the father of the "fair" women, strongly implying that appreciation of feminine beauty can be done in a wholesome way.

Perhaps the line is like visiting and admiring a grand old mansion made into a museum, without the slightest desire to live there or even stay overnight, and even gratitude to God that someone else has taken on the responsibility of caring for this fine property.

Job had discovered where the line was:

*Job 31:1 I made a covenant with mine eyes; why then should I think upon a maid? ...7 If my step hath turned out of the way, and mine heart walked after mine eyes, and if any blot hath cleaved to mine hands; 8 Then let me sow, and let another eat; yea, let my offspring be rooted out. 9 If mine heart have been deceived by a woman, or if I have laid wait at my neighbour's door; 10 Then let my wife grind unto another; and let others bow down upon her. 11 For this is an heinous crime; yea, it is an iniquity to be punished by the judges. 12 For it is a fire that consumeth to destruction, and would root out all mine increase.*

Jesus described the same thing this way:

*Mt 5:27 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29 And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.*

But praise God, though mastery over sins requiring a learning curve is not instantaneous, it is inevitable, for a Christian whose eyes are upon Jesus!

Now consider the concept of “eyes upon Jesus”, Romans 7:25 and Matthew 14:28-31, applied to the length of time it requires to lose weight. It may be thought that stopping drinking is simpler than losing weight, because in the case of drinking, one can go “cold turkey” and skip the burden of establishing how much is “too much” which remains for those who still attempt to “drink responsibly”. But in the case of overeating, we must still eat, so it can require lengthy education to establish how much is too much.

Calorie counting can be tedious and time consuming, but it cannot help but work if it is “stuck to”. In fact, most diets “work” if they are “stuck to”. But when “our eyes are on the prize” with determination so pure that it makes hunger a relatively insignificant pressure, weight drops like a lead ball, diet or no.

Romans 7:25 does not “thank God” for inevitable failure! The chapter merely describes our everyday experience that everything we want to achieve requires doing a few things we would rather not. And even when our will is strong, there is a learning curve: every goal requires time and study to master.

But thanksgiving to God is part of God's recommended strategy for us! Can we thank God for the pound we just lost, and for the delicious meal we just had? (Not to mention for having a meal at all, of which many across the world only dream!) If we can, that will help us stop feeling sorry for ourselves because we have denied ourselves the bliss of wolfing down another pie and cake.

We want to lose weight, but to do that, we have to skip a few extra helpings, which we would rather not skip.

We want to learn to play a "high C" on the trumpet; but that requires practicing even when we are not in the mood.

We want to be healthy, but that requires exercise which sometimes makes us ache, and avoidance of foods designed to tempt our tongues and scald our stomachs.

We want a college degree, but that requires study, a thing for which we are not as often in the mood as graduation requires.

We want to quit drinking and take life by the horns, or at least by the reins, but to do that, we have to deny ourselves the cowardly impulse to just quit, or lie down and die, or believe the vain promise of oblivion which competes with God's offer of Eternal LIFE.

Paul was not the first to notice the conflicts between our will and our nature which require of us self discipline. The Barnes Bible commentary reports:

*The same thing was observed and described in the writings of the heathen. Thus Xenophon, (Cyrop. vi. 1,) Araspes, the Persian, says in order to excuse his treasonable designs, "Certainly I must have two souls; for plainly it is not one and the same which is both evil and good; and at the same time wishes to do a thing and not to do it. Plainly, then, there are two souls; and when the good one prevails, then it does good; and when the evil one predominates, then it does evil." So also Epictetus (Enchirid. ii. 26) says, "He that sins does not do what he would; but what he would not, that he does." With this passage it would almost seem that Paul was familiar, and had his eye on it when he wrote. So also the well known passage from Ovid, Meta. vii. 9: "Desire prompts to one thing, but the mind persuades to another. I see the good, and approve it, and yet pursue the wrong."*

What Paul contributed to this theme was the key to victory, v. 25!

|                                                                              |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| God offers us a divorce decree from failure, so that we may remarry success. |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|



Our choice is between good and evil. By choosing good, we don't remain 100% free of doing evil, just as it is impossible for any human to never violate human requirements.

For example, it is impossible for any U.S. citizen to never violate America law. It is impossible for any child to never disobey his parents. It is impossible for any music student to never miss a note.

But whether we are trying or not really does matter. Intentions really do matter. It is what audiences consider as they listen to a young musician, it is what God judges, Romans 2:16 and 1 Corinthians 4:5, and it is in the “heart” that we obey. 1 Corinthians 4:5.

~~~~~

I'm not sure if God meant for us to read all the way to the end, but I did. But I got pretty tired by the end. It's late, after all. What a day! It wore us out, just *listening* to God! I'm ready to sleep!

# Part 5: The Fall

## Chapter 21

### Beelzebub introduces himself

Month one, day 15: Beelzebub has been watching the pair for any interest they might show in the wonderful but forbidden, for now, tree. But neither has cast a glance that way, so Beelzebub has kept his distance.

But today Beelzebub adopted a new strategy. He took up a position about 50 feet from the Tree, and just stared at it whenever he sensed Adam and Woman were near, so they would think he sat there, staring, day and night. He adorned his stares with a rapturous smile and heaved sighs.

Adam, seeing this from a distance, remarked to Woman, "There's that tree we are not to eat of. Wonder what that beast sees in it? Of course, I don't know that God has told that beast to stay away from it. But to just stare? Strange."

Woman added, "And what an ugly beast! Everything else God made is so beautiful. But something about that creature gives me the creeps."

"'Creeps'. I like that word. It describes just what I sense: some undesirable thing making very slow, but very steady, progress. I love your way with words, Sugar Plum!"

"Oh, Adam! 'Sugar Plum'! I just love the pearls that slide off your tongue!"

And so on and on they went, working themselves slowly but steadily into a state which struck me as, well, very nearly embarrassing.

At a later time as they again passed by, and saw Beelzebub, Beelzebub looked away from his precious Tree only long enough to shout "Hi!" to the pair. Then he returned to his staring and sighing.

During that brief communication, the pair saw Beelzebub smile warmly, an act which can render the ugliest creature endearing.

Wo-man saw Beelzebub's charm, and dropped her defenses a notch. But Adam's suspicion only increased. "I sense greater intelligence in that creature than I had previously expected", he explained to Wo-man. "Almost as great as ours. But if the creature has intelligence to that degree, it strikes me that God has probably told it, as well as ourselves, to stay away from

that Tree. But just look! Its obsession is unnatural.”

Woman didn't answer, but just nodded.

Still later, when Adam was alone, he came upon Beelzebub and the Tree again. This time he decided he would find out what was going on. It occurred to him that perhaps Beelzebub didn't understand the danger he contemplated. So he walked determinedly up to Beelzebub, stretched out his hand, and said “Hi. I'm Adam. Remember me, from when I named all the animals? Except that I can't quite place you. You did come that day, didn't you?”

Beelzebub smiled, and shook Adam's hand, but answered “I'm not an animal. My name is Beelzebub.”

Adam's lower jaw dropped the distance of a hen's egg. “Well if you're not an animal, what are you?”

Lucifer answered, “I am much like yourself, though I have lived much longer, and seen much more. But of all the things I have seen, nothing seems so remarkable as the Tree.” Beelzebub's wistful gaze turned from Adam to the subject of his remark.

Adam was irritated. Naturally curious, he wanted to know more about this creature, and what it knew, and yet right here at the door to new, entertaining information, the door seemed locked by the creature's obsession with some crazy Tree it probably shouldn't have been thinking about anyway.

Adam retorted, “Well, if you've been around as long as you say, you should realize that Tree is bad news. Why are you so interested in it, anyway?”

Beelzebub acted offended. “Bad news, you say? My precious Tree? This wondrous source of nourishment for body and soul?”

Adam wondered if he had judged hastily. He asked respectfully, “Has God exempted you from the warning He gave me and Woman?”

Beelzebub looked down, shook his head, and smiled. “No, God told me the same thing he told you.”

Adam was startled by Beelzebub's claim that he knew what God had told him. He didn't remember seeing anybody else present when God gave Adam the warning.

“But”, Beelzebub went on, “experience tells me otherwise.”

Adam had three new ideas to startle him.

First, the possibility of actually opposing God! Of holding an opinion contrary to God's clear statement of fact! How could anybody be so, so... Adam struggled to think of a word. “Amazing” was the best he could think of, but Beelzebub's audacity demanded something stronger!

Second, Beelzebub's statement that he not only disbelieved God, but had already actually acted upon his disbelief and “experienced” this

forbidden delicacy.

And third, that Beelzebub was still alive, though God had warned of a quick death upon eating of it!

“You mean you have eaten of this accursed Tree?” Adam scanned Beelzebub’s great body for any sign of waning health.

“Quite some time ago.” Beelzebub was amused, knowing what Adam was looking for but willing to play with him a bit before satisfying his curiosity.

“How many days ago?” Adam thought he saw a shadow behind one of Beelzebub’s tree-trunk-sized rear legs that looked unhealthy.

“Since before there were days.”

Adam forgot about looking for signs of failing health. He peered straight into Beelzebub’s grinning eyes. Beelzebub warmed to the attention. His great tail wagged a little, knocking over a couple of medium-sized trees. His wings fluttered a bit, sending a cool breeze Adam’s way. But with the fresh air was a smell. Something pungent; with a touch of rancid. Subtle, this time, but Adam sensed greater movement might stir up more. Could this be the smell of Death, Adam wondered?

Adam didn’t know how to process this new possibility: that one might say something is true which another says is not possible. How could both be right? But if Lucifer has not really lived these many days since eating of the Tree, how could he possibly *say* he has? Could there be something wrong with his mind, that he has forgotten, or does not know? The intelligence in his gaze argues otherwise. Could he deliberately say something he knows is not true? But why? How? It didn’t make any sense.

Adam tried to imagine what a mind would have to accomplish in order to deliberately affirm something known to be not true. He pictured a mind lying down and going to sleep. Thus Adam coined a new word for saying what is not true: “lying”. He thought it an appropriately humorous a word for so, uh, “amazing” an action. So, uh, is there a better word than “amazing”? Adam pressed his brain for another word. We whispered our proposal from Heaven, and finally Adam received it into his mind.

“This is STUPID!” Adam blurted out. “God said if you eat of that Tree you will die the same day! Yet you say you ate of that Tree, and you have lived many days! You could not possibly have actually eaten of that Tree, or you would be dead. Not to mention the problem of how your body could survive before there was a Planet! But how could you possibly Lie? Who are you? What are you? How can you stand there and contradict God? Are you calling God a Liar?”

Beelzebub enjoyed Adam’s frustration. Beelzebub intended to milk Adam’s challenges until Adam had no spirit left in him to doubt Beelzebub.

But Beelzebub chose not to answer Adam's questions directly, logically and honestly. Such a course would allow Adam to question his way to the Truth. Nor was Beelzebub brave enough to rashly contradict God with an utter lie. Much safer to contradict God with a half truth, a truth which, through incomplete explanation, *seemed* to contradict God.

"I am Lucifer, the Morning Star, who has lived since before the Earth evolved." Beelzebub claimed one of his names before he rebelled, a pleasant sounding name no longer appropriate. Beelzebub, meaning "Lord of the Flies", is so much more fitting.

**VerseScout:** *Isaiah 14:12 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Satan is often called "Lucifer" just as if that is Satan's other name in the Bible. But as Bible commentator John Gill observes, this single verse where the name appears in the KJV means*

*"not Satan, who is never in Scripture called Lucifer; though he was once an angel of light, and sometimes transforms himself into one, and the good angels are called morning stars, Job 38:7 and such he and his angels once were; but the king of Babylon is intended, whose royal glory and majesty, as outshining all the rest of the kings of the earth, is expressed by those names; and which perhaps were such as he took himself...."*

*Bible commentator Adam Clarke, frustrated at the common use of the name "Lucifer" to mean "Satan", says*

*"And although the context speaks explicitly concerning Nebuchadnezzar; yet this has been, I know not why, applied to the chief of the fallen angels, who is most incongruously denominated Lucifer; (the bringer of light!) an epithet as common to him as those of Satan and Devil. That the Holy Spirit by his prophets should call this arch-enemy of God and man the light-bringer, would be strange indeed. But the truth is, the text speaks nothing at all concerning Satan nor his fall, nor the occasion of that fall, which many divines have with great confidence deduced from this text. O how necessary it is to understand the literal meaning of Scripture, that preposterous comments may be prevented! Besides, I doubt much whether our translation be correct. הלל heilel, which we translate Lucifer, comes from ילל yalal, yell, howl, or shriek, and should be translated, "Howl, son of the morning;"*"

Evolved? The earth evolved? Adam wished God had said something about "evolving" to help Adam analyze this new claim. Morning Star? What

sort of 'Star' could this be, which existed before the rest of the stars were created on the Fourth Day? Beelzebub was just digging his hole deeper, Adam thought. But another part of Adam was intrigued.

"I am the leader of a race of Supermen, superior to men, who do not need planets in order to live. I created this body only after the Earth evolved, that I might move about on the Earth."

OK, outright lie number one: Beelzebub's body is the body Beelzebub asked God to create for him. Beelzebub isn't smart enough to create a blade of grass! We whispered this to Adam, but he was preoccupied.

Beelzebub continued, "I owe my great knowledge to that tree. It must be obvious to you how much knowledge I have that you do not; you have already marveled at many of my statements for which you have no explanation. As for whether I am dead, your eyes should answer that for you. As for whether God is a liar, I have not raised such an impolite question. Since it is you who have raised it, it should be you who must answer it."

Adam was as outraged as we were! "Impolite"?! To question God's honesty is merely "impolite"?! Beelzebub's gaze held steady, as if he expected Adam's reaction, assuring Adam that Beelzebub's outrageous insinuation was calculated.

Adam's suspicion was on high alert, but he was intrigued. Sure, Lucifer had said many things Adam could not explain. But that could be either because they were genuinely beyond Adam's experience, or it could be the alternative explanation: they were stupid.

But God had created within Adam a spirit of fairness: an intellectual curiosity, a hunger for all the facts before reaching conclusions. Adam had to acknowledge that although Lucifer was a long way from proving his wild claims of having eaten of the Tree and of having lived many days since, Adam was not yet able to *disprove* Beelzebub's claims. And perhaps there remained some new perspective, some context, in which Beelzebub's claims and God's claims could be resolved.

But for all Adam's intellectual curiosity, his mind also suffered from weariness at holding such heavy questions in the air before his mind. He was tiring of this conversation, and ready for an exit line.

Beelzebub made his last claim on Adam's attention count. "You, too, can acquire Superhuman Knowledge, even as I have, from this Tree. Until you are ready to share it with me, I am willing to share a sample of its Knowledge, by answering for you all the Great Questions of Existence. Just ask, and I will freely share all I Know. But when you eat, yourself, then you will Know all that I Know."

"Thanks", Adam muttered warily, suspicious of the "knowledge" he

had heard already, without the stomach for more. "Some other time. Gotta go now, though. My wife's expecting me home for dinner by now. See you later."

Beelzebub didn't answer, as if acknowledging the insincerity in Adam's polite excuses, but locked eyes with Adam, in a gaze which simply repeated Beelzebub's generous offer, as if to say "any time you're ready, I'll be here for you."

Adam told Wo-man later, "I saw Lucifer today."

~~~~~

"Lucifer?" Wo-man asked. "What is 'Lucifer'?"

"The ugly creature. It can talk. It calls itself 'Lucifer'."

Wo-man remembered Lucifer's beautiful smile, such a surprise on that strange body. "Oh?" she answered hopefully, ready for a positive report.

"Stay away from him. There's something about him that doesn't add up."

Woman noticed that Adam expected *her* to stay away from Lucifer, but it was perfectly all right for *him* to while away enough of the afternoon with him to render him late for dinner. But Woman didn't articulate this observation presently. She instead stored it up in her memory banks, to be served up later when her platter was full.

Adam recounted his conversation with Beelzebub, detailing the train of logic and the want thereof. But Woman was more interested in voice inflections, facial expressions, the clues to emotions. Adam had to struggle to answer Woman's questions; first because he had difficulty understanding their significance, and second because, not understanding their significance at the time, he had not observed them carefully.

"I don't understand how you could not notice whether Lucifer's voice rose or fell as he told you he has lived since before there were days", Woman said, making a note to herself that if she is going to properly analyze these things, she will have to observe Beelzebub for herself.

The next day Adam and Woman planned an elaborate gardening project. They had found some beautiful roses in a tangle of grass. They had visualized how beautiful the roses would be if the grass were cleared out so the roses could grow alone.

It was tedious work. They pulled grass in quite a large area. They didn't remove all the grass, but shortened it from about four feet high to a few inches high. What a pleasant difference, and pleasant to walk upon and lie upon, too!

They saw that the roses, without the support of the grass, laid limply

on the ground. "Look Adam, wouldn't they be pretty if they were up this high, so I could walk right up to them and smell them without getting on my hands and knees?"

Adam studied the problem. He picked them up, but they just fell back down again. What could hold them up permanently?

He spotted a small tree several feet away. "Maybe if I could just drag this tree over by the roses?" he suggested.

"Excellent! Then I could wrap the roses around it!"

Adam pulled the tree, but it wouldn't move. Surprised, he pulled harder. The tree, a little taller than himself, bent, but would not move. It remained firmly planted in the ground. But after much tugging and huffing, he heard and felt a crack in the wood. Stooping down, he inspected the damage he had caused to the tender trunk.

"Have I killed it?" He asked Wo-man.

"I don't think it has any purpose, if we can't move it. I think if you can keep breaking it like that, then let's just leave behind the portion that loves the ground that much, and we can use the portion which is willing to be useful."

So Adam continued working on the trunk, focusing on putting stress on the portion already damaged. He found that by pulling from another direction, he could cause a crack on another side of it. Finally it was cracked enough that he could twirl the trunk around and around, until the last wood fibers surrendered their hold.

Over by the roses, Adam and Woman pondered how to replant their prize. Adam stood it on the ground, but it fell over. He stood it up again and held it. "It won't take root. How can we make it stay?" he asked Woman. But as he asked, his body slumped for want of a reason to maintain its tension, there being nothing he could think of to do. As he slumped, his weight shifted to the sapling, driving it a couple of inches into the ground. Surprised, he stepped back, fearful of falling if he held on to the sinking tree. When he stepped back, he was astonished to see that the sapling stood!

Incredulous, Woman stepped up to it and pulled it, to see if it had taken root as firmly as it had before. Not so. It fell over in her hand. But now Adam knew what to do. He leaned on the tree with all his weight, driving it farther into the ground. He stepped on its lower branches, driving it in farther. Now it was fairly sturdy; not as much as before, but enough for roses.

"Let's wrap the roses around it now."

They began, but they decided the number of branches interfered with wrapping, plus they detracted from the beauty of the roses. So they broke most of them off.



And so the next couple of days proceeded, one idea upon another, until by the end of the week they had an arbor of four small trees placed vertically, a square of trees at the top, placed horizontally, and woven grass covering the frame to provide shade!

When they were all finished, God stopped by for a visit. That is, God manifesting in a physical body; of course we knew God was ever present, everywhere. But Adam and Woman didn't know that yet.

They talked of many things. They joked about the antics of cats and baby rabbits. Adam thanked God for the many delicious fruits upon which they had feasted. God responded by pointing out more, as they walked about, and suggesting novel ways to prepare them. They sat in the shade of the Arbor, enjoying the change from the warm sun.

God waited for Adam or Woman to talk about Beelzebub, but in vain. Adam nearly brought it up, but didn't want to trouble God. Actually there were a jumble of feelings within Adam which even he could only barely sort out, and that only if he took the trouble, which he was ill inclined to do on such a pleasant, warm, sunshiny day.

Adam told God about the eagle he watched. The eagle was watching two baboons carrying a luscious fruit into a covered nest. The eagle knew better than to *rob* the nest because even one baboon is too strong for him.

Never mind the eagle's incapacity for perceiving that the fruit "belongs" to the baboons, we thought.

But the eagle saw one of the baboons leave the nest, and went after the fruit, much to his subsequent regret!

Adam marveled. "Did the eagle think no baboon remained to guard the fruit? The eagle saw two go in, and one come out. Two minus one leaves one. Can't eagles count?"

God laughed gently. "That's like the story about the kittens you mentioned."

"Yes! The very same thing! I saw a mother cat carry her babies to a new location, one at a time. After she carried them all, she went back one more time to see if she left any behind! Was she incapable of determining that all her babies were with her, merely by counting them?"

God laughed again. "No, Adam. Animals can't reason. They cannot know facts about their world derived from reason. They cannot know what their five senses do not tell them.

"Language as we know it is meaningless to them, not because they lack the *physical* ability to make a variety of sounds, but because most language expresses concepts not perceivable to the five senses.

“Not that there is anything wrong with animals! Not that animals aren’t amazing, wonderful creations by Myself which make the Earth a place of delight! Not that animals are not incredibly complex creatures far beyond the capacity of *any soul* to create!”

There was a lesson in this that God yearned for Adam to understand. “My Son....”

***VerseScout:*** *Luke 3:38 ...Adam, which was the son of God.*

“...I gave you Freedom which no animal can imagine. I gave you Choice. You can even choose whether to believe me, when I warn you what to avoid. I gave that ability to no animal. Animals are unable either to obey or disobey. They can only behave the way I programmed them.

“Therefore, never imagine the warning I gave you, which I gave no animal, proves you are less ‘free’ than animals! Or that you can be jealous of animals because they have no commands!”

Amen! What a special blessing for Adam and Wo-man, that even just one single tree was *forbidden!*

# Chapter 22

## Preparing Adam

God stopped by the arbor the next day, still waiting for Adam to open up about Beelzebub.

One thought tumbling around in Adam's mind was that "Lucifer" did not present a problem Adam couldn't handle. God had enough problems of His own, Adam figured. Adam did not need to spoil God's day by talking about all Adam's problems. Adam could handle it.

Perceiving this thought, God responded, "Adam, whenever you feel weak, burdened with more than you can figure out, please come right to Me. In fact, even if you can handle it yourself, let me help anyway! I love you, and love helping you. I promise you, Adam, whenever you do, I will give you rest. Just keep doing the work I have given you, and let Me teach you through it, and you will find peace, not just for your body but for your soul. For the work I give you is easy. The load I give you to carry is very light."

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 11:28-30 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.*

Relieved of that excuse, Adam was about to unload on God, but thought of another reason to keep it to himself. He remembered the shameless challenge Beelzebub had made to God's honesty. Yes, that was what it was. Adam didn't want to hurt God's feelings by recounting the proud words. Indeed, Adam anticipated that the news might make God very angry, and Adam didn't look forward to being around an angry God.

Perceiving this thought, God responded, "Adam, I have made other creatures, besides you and Wo-man, with the power to choose. Not every creature I create will respond to the Love I offer. This is sad, but it does not make me so furious that I cannot Love you. On the contrary, it makes me appreciate you even more, and want to help protect you. Believe Me, at any time a Creature rejects my love, you can be sure he will also reject yours. Please let me help you! Please, Adam, stick as close to me as chicks under their mother's wing."

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest*

*the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together; even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!*

*Psalm 3:1 Lord, how are they increased that trouble me! many are they that rise up against me. 2 Many there be which say of my soul, There is no help for him in God. Selah. 3 But thou, O LORD, art a shield for me; my glory, and the lifter up of mine head. 4 I cried unto the LORD with my voice, and he heard me out of his holy hill. Selah. 5 I laid me down and slept; I awaked; for the LORD sustained me. 6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about. 7 Arise, O LORD; save me, O my God: for thou hast smitten all mine enemies upon the cheek bone; thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly. 8 Salvation belongeth unto the LORD: thy blessing is upon thy people. Selah.*

*Psalm 23 :1 The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. 2 He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. 3 He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. 4 Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. 5 Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. 6 Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever.*

Adam nearly melted with Love. He nearly opened his heart a mile wide for God to reach in and comfort him, and heal all his troubles and doubts.

But not quite. Adam began to form the narrative in his mind of what had happened, only to remember it would include some doubts he had felt about God. Adam was ashamed. He did not want to admit to God that he had doubted Him, even for an instant. Adam thought it would be wiser, before unloading on God, to go back to Beelzebub and do a better job of sticking up for God, so that at Adam's first occasion to report to God, his report might be more positive. That is, more likely to earn, for Adam, God's approval.

Perceiving this thought, God responded, "Adam, I want you to know how much I Love you and Woman. You two are the pride of all my Creation. But what you are now is nothing, in grandeur, to what I have plans for you to become as you follow Me! I say this to assure you. You need never fear disappointing Me. When you fail in some small way, you don't destroy my plans. I made you with a vision higher than what you can accomplish without work, discipline, and lots of time."

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 1:13 And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all things that are done under heaven: this sore*

[breaking us in pieces] *travail* [bowing down – acknowledging greatness above our selves] *hath God given to the sons of man to be exercised* [humbled] *therewith.*

“In fact, when your failures disappoint you, they encourage me, because your disappointment tells me you care, too, about the wonderful vision of greatness I have laid before you to grow towards! NEVER hesitate to come crying to me when you fail! It is only when you do *not* come to me with your failures, that I grieve, because then I cannot help you learn from them, and heal your wounds. May I also urge you, come to Me while your failures seem so small as to not be worth bringing before Me. Let me use them to immunize you against more serious dangers in the future.”

**VerseScout:** *1 John 1:8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.*

Adam was amazed how God’s responses had corresponded to his own thoughts. Wo-man had noticed the unusual train of God’s statements, too, without knowing Adam’s thoughts which had precipitated them. Adam was uneasy; could it be God knew his thoughts?

Adam finally broke down. He cried as he formed his question, searching for ideas that did not, *too* much, reveal the disrespectful doubts he had suffered. “What, or who, is Lucifer?”

“Before I created you, I created a race of spirit-creatures to help you. You cannot normally see them. Lucifer is such a creature, but he refuses to help you or obey me. Even in appearing to you, he disobeys Me, though I permit him, sometimes, to defy me, because I love him.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Samuel 8:4 Then all the elders of Israel gathered themselves together, and came to Samuel unto Ramah, 5 And said unto him, Behold, thou art old, and thy sons walk not in thy ways: now make us a king to judge us like all the nations. 6 But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed unto the LORD. 7 And the LORD said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them. 8 According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt even unto this day, wherewith they have forsaken me, and served other gods, so do they also unto thee. 9 Now therefore hearken unto their voice: howbeit yet protest solemnly unto them, and shew them the manner of the king that shall reign over them.*

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** *This shows how God permits us some freedom to act out our rebellion against Him. See also Job 1. 1 Samuel 8 and the following two chapters record God's sanction, not of the most righteous human leadership, but of the most righteous leader which the majority would tolerate. God honors our freedom to govern ourselves poorly, if that is the choice of the majority; although God took steps to make sure the stupid choice was at least informed.*

I didn't like the impression Adam was getting of our race! So I whispered in his ear a clarifying question for him to ask of God. Finally Adam responded: "Are the rest of the race as ugly as Lucifer?"

God said, to my utter relief, "No! When you see an obedient angel, he will seem like an entirely different race! Much more like yourself. Lucifer did not always look so horrible. But disobedience turns beauty ugly."

Adam smiled, encouraged. This wasn't going so badly as he feared. "Did Lucifer eat of the tree before You created it?" Adam chuckled as he asked, trying to imagine a sensible answer to so absurd a question, but still uneasy with the subject.

"No. Nor did he EVER eat of this tree. Nor will I permit him to! He lies. A lot! However, the knowledge the tree contains, I gave him at his creation, along with all the other angels. Yes, that is the name of their race: 'angels'. It means 'messengers'. Their name shows that their created purpose is to bring you messages from me; sometimes in words, but mostly in invisible actions."

"Then why didn't he die?" Adam asked, sincerely confused.

"Knowledge itself does not kill. Disobeying Me kills. The angels who believe me, and obey me, are still alive, healthy, and beautiful. But Lucifer, and others like him, suffer a death greater than physical death. A living, terrible death."

Woman asked, "You mean, if we eat of the tree, we won't actually die? Or, what did You say, '*physically*' die?"

God pleaded, "DON'T eat of the tree! If you do, you WILL die! Trust Me! Don't quibble over fine distinctions between kinds of death! I don't want you to have to experience death!"

Woman took God's answer at face value, as God had anticipated, which had determined the simplicity of God's answer. Woman saw no reason to analyze farther, or to compare this answer with previous statements to arrive at a more detailed understanding. Woman saw the concern in God's face, with its expressions of kindness towards her and her interests, and that was enough for her. She believed Him.

Adam, however, ever curious, wanted to know more. What meant

this distinction between “death”, and a “death greater than death”? Or, “physical” death?

Then there was the question whether the death Adam would face would be like Lucifer’s, or whether Adam would “die” in the sense of ceasing to exist?

Adam didn’t ask further, though. The questions wouldn’t quite form in his mind. Plus there was Wo-man, smiling at him so pretty, touching him so pleasantly, as if to say “Well, that’s settled, finally! Let’s go play in the roses!”

We held up our hands and waved wildly. Finally God acknowledge our unspoken request and said as Adam was about to leave, “By the way, ‘Lucifer’ was the beast’s name before he turned disobedient and ugly. That is not his true name now.”

“What *is* the beast’s name now?” Adam asked, puzzled and fascinated.

“Beelzebub.”

Adam was no novice at names, having recently named thousands of animal species! Yet as this new name rolled clumsily off his tongue and off Woman’s, they both laughed, loud and long!

Beelzebub heard it. Suspecting its cause, he boiled inside until smoke issued from both ears, dark and black.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

Time to type up my notes from our previous Q & A.

“I made My standards as high as I made human ability”, God had said. “It will take much time to meet them. In fact, reaching them will only be theoretically possible.

“Therefore, were Adam and Wo-man to eat of the Tree now, they would experience the *shame* of failure for a long time. And because they don’t know Me well enough yet to know My mercy, they would feel much *fear* of My response to so much failure.

“Knowledge of right and wrong, without faith in Me to love and justify sinners, which may require time and experience to acquire, can only provoke shame and fear.”

God had previously explained, “When Adam has a baby, who grows and takes piano lessons, what if the teacher tries to teach all twelve key signatures before the child has even learned five notes? No more music theory should be taught than enough to clarify what students already hear and can distinguish, or to prepare for the next experience.”

My hand shot up. “What is ‘piano’?” I wanted to ask, but God wasn’t taking questions.

God continued, “If suddenly Adam knows way more rules of life than he can remember or meet, he will feel shame when what I want for him is the thrill of adventure.

“Shame can heal failure very quickly. It is very useful after failure.

**VerseScout:** *Luke 18:9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: 10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. 12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. 13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*

“But failure can be reduced by keeping information about how to live only slightly beyond one’s capacity.”

I checked Beelzebub’s Buttbook page. I was unenemied so I can’t post, but he has left his posts “public”.

He wrote, today, “I have learned recently from God’s Tree of Laws that too much information, too soon, kills.

“That must be what is wrong with me, in God’s opinion. Right from the Start, God stuffed me full of rules. I’ve been gagging ever since.”

OK, heart, slow down.

I’ve been thinking all this time about God’s plans for Adam and Woman for slow but steady progress towards nearly infinite capacity, from his much simpler beginning.

But Beelzebub and I began with mature capacity.

When the humans have a baby, we have learned, the baby will not begin with even the capacity to avoid soiling his shorts. And here’s the amazing thing: everyone will accept that as perfectly normal! But after the baby grows into an adult, still soiling his shorts, not because he can’t help it but because he likes to or is too lazy to take his business where it belongs – that is a metaphor of Beelzebub, with all his maturity, complaining about meeting a few standards which he easily could!

What happiness can any adult find – what meaning in life – what reason to live – in behaving like a baby?



**VerseScout:** *Matthew 25:20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*

*Matthew 10:24 The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. 25 It is enough **for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord.** If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?*

*Matthew 5:48 **Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.***

“Souls need the faith that I will be merciful and not hold anyone responsible for more than he can do but will extend grace, crediting his intent.

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 4:5 Therefore, stop judging prematurely, before the Lord comes, for he will bring to light what is now hidden in darkness and reveal the motives of our hearts. Then each person will receive his praise from God. [ISV]*

“That is a balance he must experience over time, a step at a time. A long range goal is fine but awareness of all the details of one’s immaturity can be overwhelming.

“Men must first feast on My Love, and must grow in the strength of Trust in Me. When their love and trust in Me is secure, obeying my laws will delight them. They will know My Laws are written for their own protection and happiness. Knowing that My Laws are for their benefit will help them, as they interpret and apply My Laws, to bless each other.

“If they do not – if, not trusting My Love or Grace, and forsaking My Love, they see in My Standards only judgment without mercy of themselves – how much more will they see My Laws as a cruel tool for judging and oppressing others?! Pray this will never be, but Beelzebub demonstrates the possibility.”

The dark warning sent us to prayer.

For us, and for all angels before Beelzebub became so “amazing”, goals as high as we can see provide the thrill of adventure. But that is because we know God’s love for us. We know God will leave no goal impossible for us, walking with Him. And we know God will wait patiently for us to climb, encouraging us all the way up.

“I want souls to grow and become more like Me!”

***VerseScout:*** *Matthew 5:48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

# Chapter 23

## Bad things for good people

“Why do bad things happen to good angels?” Stinky demanded in a billboard just outside Paradise – so placed because God wouldn’t let him put it up where the humans could see.

Well, duh, two points: no angel is completely “good”, and what God allows to happen to all of us, and does directly to each of us, aren’t “bad” things.

***VerseScout:** Mark 10:18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God.*

*Romans 8:28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*

My thoughts were interrupted by an incredibly foul stench. It smelled like a diarrhea epidemic in a herd of elephants, visited by a herd of giraffes who came and threw up on it, the fecal feast being eaten by maggots, all roasted by the summer sun.

Sure enough, I looked up, and there was Beelzebub flying by, checking on the billboard.

I’ve just got to talk to him. But when? What will I say? Has he seriously become confused enough for the billboard’s question to even interest him?

I sat down to my A-pod, to compose an email.

“Lord, give me your words”, I prayed.

“Dear Beelzebub,” I started.

Two days passed.

One for each word.

Finally, on the third day, I thought of three words: “May we meet?” I pressed “send”.

Days passed. No answer.

“Beelzebub must be having as much trouble thinking of what to say as I had”, I flattered myself. “Maybe in 100 days he will send me 100 words.”

While waiting, I flew back to Eden. I happened across Adam, Woman, and some roses.

Adam put a rose in Woman's hair. Her hair was already beautiful. The rose only accented its beauty. Adam admired the effect, while Woman blushed, her cheeks matching the rose. How sweet.

Woman reciprocated by putting roses on Adam. He didn't have that much hair, to hold a hair ornament, so her idea was to weave a nice *necklace* of roses.

He relished her attention, right up until the point where she laid it over his shoulders, and then pulled the loop tight so it would stay on.

"Ow!" Adam complained, revealing to Woman the most unpleasant demeanor she had observed since she was created.

"Those thorns hurt!" Adam accused, as blood trickled down his chest and back.

"Oh, I'm so sorry", Woman responded. But with her words came a demeanor as astonishing as any I had ever experienced.

How do I describe it? Like a frown and a smile at the same time?

She was apologetic. She was terrified at what she had done. Repentance was written all over her face. So how, into that, did she manage to insert a smile?

More astonishing: how did Adam, seeing that smile, manage to correctly understand it did not express happiness at causing him pain, but sorrow?

What beauty is painted on a woman by her smile! Adam, relishing it, felt compensated for his pain and hugged his wife, thanking her for her intentions.

I immediately called a conference to analyze what just happened.

Our Dream Team puzzled over it for hours, and finally voted to arrange for a dream to clarify what we discussed. Not that Woman wanted to know, or even remembered what happened. But we just wanted to help them both mature.

So that night, as Woman fell asleep in Adam's grateful arms, she dreamed.

She dreamed that she and Adam built a huge arbor of roses. Taller than two giraffes riding each other piggy back. And wider than three giraffes stretched out end to end taking a nap.

She and Adam stood at opposite corners of the arbor, admiring it. As they stood, she heard a bird loudly chirping. I played the part of the bird. She looked around to see what alarmed the bird, but all she saw was a friendly snake coming towards her.

She smiled back at the snake, and then turned again towards Adam and the roses to enjoy all that beauty. She felt a snake climbing up her back and into the arbor. But she didn't feel alarmed, because the

snake was friendly. The angel playing the snake asked me not to put his name in my Diary.

While in the arbor, the snake grew and grew, until finally it was a great dragon who came down roaring and breathing fire towards Adam, sending Adam running away as fast as a triceratops.

Woman wasn't smiling! She was too terrified to smile! There wasn't anyone to see it anyway. In fact she was so terrified, that *she woke up!*

Without waking him, she snuggled closer to Adam. She committed the dream to memory, troubled by it, wondering if she should be, wondering what it might mean.

But she found out Adam was already awake and wide-eyed. Woman said "I just had a very strange dream."

Adam said, "what did you dream?"

Woman searched her memory in vain. "I can't remember."

What a coincidence, Adam thought! He said "I had the same dream."

Without remembering why, all they could remember is how much they needed and loved each other. They snuggled closer and went back to sleep.

We let them sleep.

While they slept, we flew around Eden's perimeter.

Another billboard was going up!

# Chapter 24

## Sin Lieth at the Door

Month three -- Adam and Woman have done such a nice job of tending the Garden. It's so nice to see their personalities emerging in their re-formation of the raw beauty provided them by God.

It's been an exhilarating three months, and neither Adam nor Woman have given a thought to that evil (for them, for now) tree.

Beelzebub has been given permission by God to move about freely upon the earth: in the air, on land, or even in the sea. To enable Lucifer to interact with all life wherever he goes, God allowed him the most versatile of all bodies: that of a dragon. It can fly, run on land, or swim in water. In the sea, it can swim on the surface, and yet it can survive the great pressures deep under water. Beelzebub sought a modification to his body which God even approved: a bit of Hell fire which he can blow out his mouth. **Lucifer** said he wanted it to torment men. God said He approved it so men would clearly understand where Beelzebub is coming from.

***VerseScout:** How did Satan appear to Adam and Eve? Revelation 12:9 And the great dragon [Gr: δράκων drak'-own dragon, great serpent; a name for Satan] was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.*

*Genesis 3:14 And the LORD God said unto the serpent, [Heb: נָחַשׁ naw-khawsh' to hiss; to whisper a magic spell; a snake, from its hiss] Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:*

*Job 41:1 Canst thou draw out leviathan [Heb: לִוְיָתָן liv-yaw-thawn' a wreathed (coiled, twisting) animal, such as a serpent] with an hook? or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down?... 14 Who can open the doors of his face? his **teeth are terrible** round about. 15 His **scales** are his pride, shut up together as with a close seal. 16 One is so near to another, that no air can come between them. 17 They are joined one to another, they stick together, that they cannot be sundered. 18 By his neesings [sneezing] a light doth shine, and his eyes are like the eyelids of the morning. 19 **Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out.** 20 Out of his nostrils goeth smoke, as out of a seething pot or caldron. 21 His breath kindleth coals, and **a flame goeth out of his mouth.** 22 In his neck remaineth strength, and sorrow is turned into joy before him. 23 The flakes of his flesh are joined together: they are firm in themselves; they cannot be moved. 24 His heart is*

as firm as a stone; yea, as hard as a piece of the nether millstone. 25 When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid: by reason of breakings they purify themselves. 26 **The sword of him that layeth at him cannot hold: the spear, the dart, nor the habergeon.** 27 **He esteemeth iron as straw, and brass as rotten wood.** 28 **The arrow cannot make him flee: slingstones are turned with him into stubble.** 29 **Darts are counted as stubble: he laugheth at the shaking of a spear.** 30 Sharp stones are under him: he spreadeth sharp pointed things upon the mire. 31 He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the sea like a pot of ointment. 32 He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary. 33 Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. 34 He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Where could such details come from, but from men who lived with dinosaurs? Some translations say this is a crocodile, but South African crocodiles are [hunted](#) with bow and arrows. a man can even wrestle a crocodile. On land a man can outrun a crocodile. In water, even small boats are safe from them. American alligators are also hunted with [bow and arrows](#).

Yet this creature is the most fearsome of land animals, verse 33 implies, which crocs certainly are not. It is a creature as powerful on land as in the sea, with scales that no spear or arrow can penetrate, with powerful teeth, a huge neck, a limber body that can coil like a snake, and according to v. 25, large enough that the turbulence of the water it creates terrifies ship captains! Even without the detail about breathing fire, no creature less mighty than a dinosaur meets this description. For more details, see Appendix A, How did Satan Appear to Adam and Eve?

“Beowulf” is the title of the earliest literature in English that exists. It is the 5<sup>th</sup> to 8<sup>th</sup> century AD story of how a man slew three kinds of dinosaurs: the details given of the creatures and of how they were overcome in battle are consistent with what we know of the ferocious tyrannosaurus rex, the sea-going plesiosaur, and the flying, dragon-like pterodactyl. Where did the author come up with these details, unless these creatures actually existed that late in human history?

The souls in Hell deny what a Gift of Grace such a body was! They claim Lucifer can go anywhere he likes on earth anyway, without any permission or assistance from God! As if Beelzebub’s heart could even drum out one more beat without permission from God! We showed them pictures of Beelzebub standing in line to ask God’s permission for that body, and to ask God any time he wanted to go anywhere or do anything, but they were unfazed.

**VerseScout:** Job 1:6 Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them. 7 And the LORD said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. 8 And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and

*escheweth evil? 9 Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? 10 Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. 11 But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. 12 And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.*

We were surprised whenever God gave Beelzebub permission to come near Adam and Woman. We asked Him about it. He said Beelzebub's presence or words would put Adam and Wo-man at no greater risk than they already faced from their own wills. Will has the capacity to sin all by itself, without the prod of some outside voice.

**VerseScout:** *James 1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.*

What could Beelzebub suggest to them that they couldn't already think of, God asked rhetorically? There was only one thing Adam and Woman were told not to do, so there was only one harmful thing Beelzebub could suggest doing. And that one possibility surely would not take very long to form in their minds, with or without Beelzebub.

But aside from the sorrow-stained affection God still held for Beelzebub, and the desire God still had to allow even Beelzebub as much freedom as was possible without harm to others, there was something good that would come out of creation's experience with sin, God explained.

God looked around at all our anxious, incredulous faces. "Just look at yourselves! You have actually allowed yourselves to *worry*, haven't you? You can't imagine how anything good can follow sin!

"Perhaps that is harsh. Perhaps it would be fairer to say you seek reassurance. Or that you yearn for my answer to your question.

"You saw me create the Earth and the Heavens. You saw me fill them with life, as I had previously made you live. You saw me create Will.

"Yet after all that, your incapacity to understand how I will harvest Good from sin causes you to yearn for understanding, with an intensity of yearning that borders on anxiety.

"So perhaps the clearest way to answer this for you is to let history



begin to unfold. Instead of waiting for Adam and Woman to, on their own, face the choice whether to trust Me or test Me, we'll let Beelzebub present this choice to them as early as he can find an opening in their minds.

"Perhaps you have noticed that Adam and Woman have begun to share your fear. They know I am almighty, but they do not know how much I love them. It has begun to cross their minds that if they don't tend their Garden to my satisfaction, I might love them less.

"As if I were their little baby, and their garden is my milk, and if they are not careful I will be hungry and cry. As if the reason I take delight in their work is something more self-serving than that I take delight in them, and love to watch them grow."

**VerseScout:** *Job 35:3 For thou saidst, What advantage will it be unto thee? and, What profit shall I have, if I be cleansed from my sin? 4 I will answer thee, and thy companions with thee. 5 Look unto the heavens, and see; and behold the clouds which are higher than thou. 6 If thou sinnest, what doest thou against him? or if thy transgressions be multiplied, what doest thou unto him? 7 If thou be righteous, what givest thou him? or what receiveth he of thine hand? 8 Thy wickedness may hurt a man as thou art; and thy righteousness may profit the son of man.*

"They fear they are not 'worthy' of my love. They think they can never *deserve* my love."

God laughed at the thought of "deserving" love! As if any "love" that is given only when it is "deserved" could still be called "love"! That is the way an animal "loves", merely reacting, merely returning love that is offered, and the rest of the time, responding with disinterest, if not fleeing.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 5:43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour; and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

"Fear is death itself. It is the worst of Beelzebub's torments. No fire can rival the terror of his burden of paranoia. No reason can survive it."

**VerseScout:** *1 John 4:16 And we have known and believed the love that*

*God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. 17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world. 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because **fear hath torment**. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.*

“But you can see that Lucifer is not the only cause of fear, because fear has crept here before Lucifer. Lucifer has no power to actually deceive anybody. Deception begins inside the will. It begins with the desire to be deceived.

“Satan has little more power than to lie, which has no power over anyone with faith in Me, since Lucifer's first lie is always that I, God, am the liar! The lies which Lucifer attributes to me are no larger than his victim's doubt, but as doubt grows, the lies grow – until Satan's victim has chosen never to receive My Love again, but to prefer Hell!”

**VerseScout:** *James 1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Do not err; my beloved brethren. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.*

“The fear in Adam and Wo-man is very slight, but if not cured it will grow. It has begun only because their faith has lost vigor. They doubt My love.

“I will use Beelzebub to cure their fear!”

We were astounded! Not that we had any doubt God could make anything operate contrary to its nature, but by definition, miracles are never what you expect. We would have expected God would use one of *us*, or *all* of us, to bring about such a cure. The majesty of God, in planning the most difficult task possible, working with the most unimaginably difficult tool possible, awed us! We also marveled at the mercy of God towards Lucifer, in allowing him the freedom to do that very thing which he most longed to do, in order to test his vain hope that satisfaction will result.

“Lucifer is glad to help clarify the choice for Adam and Wo-man, between faith and fear. You will make sure Adam is never given any test without also being given more than enough strength to pass it.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 10:12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. 13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.*

“We have good reason to hope Adam will overcome, with our help”, God continued. “And if he does, then he will be far happier than now, because he will have conquered that possibility of failure which he so greatly fears.”

**VerseScout:** *Job 3:25 For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me. 26 I was not in safety, neither had I rest, neither was I quiet; yet trouble came.*

*Job 1:8 And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? 9 Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? 10 Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. 11 But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Job is confessing that even when he was the richest, the most influential man in the world, a world political leader (chapter 29), he was terrified that this very thing which happened to him would happen! All the time he swam in God’s blessings, he seethed in fear; apparently, of the scenario that Satan articulated: that if Job were tested, he would fail.*

*How ironic, and how majestic, that fear is Satan’s greatest victory, and yet God used Satan to release Job from fear, and let Satan think it was his idea! How merciful even to Lucifer, to let him accomplish nearly every wicked thing he imagines, so that he can see for himself their emptiness! So that he is not able to say “if only I could have \_\_\_\_\_, then I would be happy!”*

*Why did Job imagine God would bring such suffering? The only logical scenario provided is the one Satan articulated in chapter 1. If Satan’s accusation accurately articulated Job’s fear, then we see Job was terrified that the only reason he was righteous was because God had made it easy for him to be righteous by making him rich, famous, and powerful. He was afraid that if calamities came, he would not have the moral strength to remain righteous!*

*The scene in chapter one, where the Sons of God come before God, and Satan comes among them, can be interpreted in two ways: either as a singularity, (it happened only that one time in all the history of the universe), a parade which no other place in the Bible confirms, or it is merely a graphic way of describing what happens all the time, every day. Don’t the Sons of God appear before God every day, in prayer? And doesn’t Satan come among them, in the form of our doubt? If this is what Job 1 describes, then Job was simply praying, and thanking God for his blessings, but also expressing fear for his own weakness, should he face serious*

trials. How about you? Have you ever feared that you might “backslide”? Has your fear ever gone beyond mere healthy vigilance, to persistent terror that robs your peace, making you want to do invent new rituals beyond what God asks, in order to appease Him, like Job did, Job 1:5?

*It really is important to God that our faith be far greater than it is, and fear is the direct converse of faith. To the extent we are afraid of something, we don't have faith that God will bridle that thing for good.*

“But even if Adam fails, and sins – his worst fear, he will have the opportunity to experience My Love and Mercy in proportion to his sin. He will have the opportunity to learn that even in the tossings and turnings of his worst nightmare, I am there, and there is nothing to fear, ever, except his own hate, because mature love casts out all fear.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 8:23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him. 24 And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. 25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. 26 And he saith unto them, **Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith?** Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm. 27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Jesus allowed His apostles to experience the worst storm of their worst nightmares, so Jesus could show them they were safe with Jesus even there. Similarly, God let Job experience what he most feared, so God could show him that God can turn even that into the greatest blessing Job could imagine. In the worst of that nightmare, God gave Job the gift of his dreams – the gift Job longed for throughout the book of Job: a face to face conversation with God!*

Heaven broke forth with shouts and rejoicing! Angels clapped, jumped, flew, and gave glory to God who alone has a Plan that can turn the worst possible failure into a song of joy!

God continued, “ Beelzebub came before me to ask my permission for him to torment Adam. I gave it. I might even help Beelzebub stay on track if he falters.”

**VerseScout: When God Takes Us Over.** *Romans 9:17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. 18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth. 19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Pharaoh's heart was hardened by God*

six times. Exodus 8:15, 19, 32, 9:7, 34, 35. But before that, Pharaoh hardened his own heart nine times, Exodus 7:13, 14, 22, 9:12, 10:1, 20, 27, 11:10, 14:8. God held Pharaoh responsible for the nine times he intended to harden his heart.

Why? Why did God do that to Pharaoh? Why didn't God let Pharaoh repent and stop the plagues? God explained that it was "...that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth." Romans 9:17.

In hindsight we see that more plagues were needed to give the Jews faith enough to follow God out of slavery, and even all those miracles were just barely enough! Their faith was so weak that they still didn't make it to the Promised Land for fear that God had lost His ability to protect them from their enemies! God waited until their children were old enough, and took them in.

Presumably the Egyptian masses still needed more signs, too, to set them free from their demonic, cruel pagan religions.

Who made Job suffer? Chapter 1 says Satan brought these calamities upon Job, but 42:11 says God brought them. This is not a contradiction when we consider that the general who gives orders is held more responsible for them than the private who merely obeys them. Since God authorized Satan to act, God is more responsible than Satan. Satan is still responsible for the harm he intends, while God deserves the glory for turning Satan's intended evil into good for those Satan meant to harm.

I was flabbergasted! "You mean you might cause Beelzebub to do even more evil than he intends?"

God answered, "What the consciousness of men and angels intends, and what their souls do, is very often not the same. In other words, failure is very common for consciousness that is not infinite. I use your failure. Sometimes I even increase it, when that will benefit others. But it is your intent that I weigh, when that differs from what you do, as I measure your compatibility with Heaven.

"I will work within men and angels to allow you to come to the edge of disaster, to warn you when your ignorance or carelessness endangers you, but then to save you from that disaster when you trust Me. But if warnings do not scare you into being more careful I will let you experience as much disaster as it takes to make you care."

Brother Clumsy, among the last to enter a conversation, spoke: "Do you mean You make us fools in front of everybody, when that is useful to others, beyond our own innate foolishness? Am I, then, the most useful angel you have? Is there no one else you would rather use?" Clumsy's eyes rested on me, making me shiver.

God chuckled. "You are as valuable to me as every other angel. I use all of you, for the benefit of each of you. Don't think that Comunicus over there lacks his share of stupid failures, just because you don't read about

them in his Diary.”

(Note to myself: I would prefer to leave that out of this Diary, but I know no one will ever forget it anyway, and if I leave it out, everyone will talk about me leaving it out, which will fix it even more securely in their memories.)

**VerseScout:** *Romans 9:20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? 21 Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? [For example, toilets are made out of porcelain, which is a fine clay. In other words, doesn't the potter have the right to make out of one lump of clay, a beautiful pitcher, and out of another lump, a toilet? Don't we need toilets? Doesn't God have the right to assign you to serve as a toilet?] 22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: 23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, 24 Even us, whom he hath called, ...*

*Hebrews 4:12 For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is **a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.** 13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.*

*Luke 12:47 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God holds us responsible for our intentions. 1 Corinthians 4:5 and Luke 12:47-48. After all, it is our intentions which tell God whether we would feel at home in Heaven. That doesn't mean we are completely innocent when we do greater evil than we intended, through ignorance or carelessness or inability. Because it is our intentions that control how informed, careful, and able we become.*

*Deliberate harmfulness, which includes deliberate laziness which harms through carelessness, God judges us for.*

“The reason I gave Beelzebub my OK is because Adam's testing at Beelzebub's hands will be less than his own testing from his own nagging doubts. By experiencing that which he fears, he will learn that the sweet consolation of My love is there even in the midst of that which he fears. Thus he will be set free from fear, and set at peace.

“When he learns that even that which he fears most is nothing to fear, then he will fear nothing!

“So for you and them, we shall let history proceed, so that all may

know *love doesn't merely endure sin, but conquers.*"

God paused, while we absorbed His Words. God stood, as if He had no more to say and would "leave". But instead the warmest of joyful smiles lighted His face as He came towards us and embraced us.

**VerseScout: God's Body** Genesis 3:8 *And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day:*

*Exodus 33:13 [Moses speaking] Now therefore, I pray thee, if I have found grace in thy sight, shew me now thy way, that I may know thee, that I may find grace in thy sight: and consider that this nation is thy people. 14 And he [God] said, My presence shall go with thee, and I will give thee rest. 15 And he [Moses] said unto him, If thy presence go not with me, carry us not up hence. 16 For wherein shall it be known here that I and thy people have found grace in thy sight? is it not in that thou goest with us? so shall we be separated [distinguished], I and thy people, from all the people that are upon the face of the earth. 17 And the LORD said unto Moses, I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken: for thou hast found grace in my sight, and I know thee by name. 18 And he [Moses] said, I beseech thee, shew me thy glory. 19 And he [God] said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the LORD before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy. 20 And he said, **Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see me, and live.** 21 And the LORD said, Behold, there is a place by me, and thou shalt stand upon a rock: 22 And it shall come to pass, while my glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a clift of the rock, and will cover thee with my hand while I pass by: 23 And I will take away mine hand, and **thou shalt see my back parts: but my face shall not be seen.***

*Psalm 91:4 **He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust:** his truth shall be thy shield and buckler.*

*Matthew 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, **how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!***

*Isa 49:15 **Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee.** 16 Behold, I have graven thee upon the **palms of my hands;** thy walls are continually before me.*

God spoke again, softly: "There is another important reason to allow Lucifer to do his cruel work.

"Do you remember the moment your brothers rebelled, and the moment before that, when Lucifer's ideas had infected so many of you that you couldn't tell which of you would choose to remain with Me?"

We remembered, all right. We remembered shame, at how close some of us had come to joining our brothers in hell.

“Do you remember, along with your grief for those who fell, your gratitude for everyone who remained?”

We remembered, and looked at each other again with tears of joy! Yes, that had been a moment of rejoicing!

“How many of you noticed how much more appreciative you were of your holy brothers *after* the rest fell, than you were *before*?”

Yes, we had all noticed it. But we weren't sure we had noticed the particular significance of it which God appeared ready to explain.

“This is a characteristic of Consciousness, to give more attention to a good thing, to regard it as more precious and worthy of our protection, after it is known to be rare or fragile. *I share this characteristic with you.*”

Hallelujahs poured out of our throats to surround the throne! What a wonderful new clue into God's nature, which we are encouraged to understand by searching within ourselves! But we didn't understand it very well in ourselves, either, so we quickly quieted down to listen to God's explanation.

“You know that dark spots form in yourselves from time to time, which you cannot see, but I can, and My Light immediately attacks the darkness and saves you. Sometimes you are able to sense a trace of struggle in yourselves, or in a brother: a hesitation about permitting My Light in. You share my rejoicing when your brother overcomes his hesitation and gratefully accepts full healing.

“You have noticed that, for the duration of any hesitation you sense, your prayers are focused more on that brother than on all your perfectly healthy brothers. You have noticed that when the hesitation is overcome, you rejoice more over that deliverance than over the health of your healthy brothers!”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance. 8 Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. 10 Likewise, I say unto you, **there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.***



Tears came to our eyes at the recollection of personal struggles and glorious victories among us. We called it “repentance”. We thought of the angels of Hell. None had repented, yet. Might they, some day? Dared we hope still? Is it possible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, if they fall away, to renew them again unto repentance?

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 6:4-6 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.*

God continued, “Now of course that doesn’t mean it is wonderful to yield to temptation because it leads us to rejoice more than had there been no yielding! And it doesn’t mean we love those more inclined to yield more than we love those less inclined! In fact, even when one repents and returns home, there remain the eternal consequences of having yielded.”

**VerseScout:** *Luke 15:11 And he said, A certain man had two sons: 12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. 13 And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. 14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. 15 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. 16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. 17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, 19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. 22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: 23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: 24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. 25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. 26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. 27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. 28 And he*

was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. 29 And he answering said to his father; Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: 30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. 31 And he said unto him, **Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.** 32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Verse 31 is the verse which describes the eternal consequences of sin, even after repentance. The “prodigal son” squandered his earthly inheritance, and can never have it back. He lives now as a beloved guest of his father, but not as the owner of his own things. In the same way, prodigal humans squander their earthly time, and can never have it back. They can still use whatever earthly time remains, and when they return Home they can live as a beloved guest of Our Father. But that precious time on Earth can never be regained!

We were lost. We didn’t understand, were our fallen brethren to repent and be received back with us, what eternal consequences there could be from an angel’s former fall, once he were back Home.

God went on: “There are different shades of love. The rejoicing that follows repentance is love colored by relief. It is the more passionate, emotional love. But the love for one whose faithfulness has endured many tests yet who has never seriously failed is the more comfortable, homey, trust-washed, secure love. To such we entrust great responsibilities. Rebels who repent may be immediately forgiven, but they must earn back the trust they had previously squandered.”

**VerseScout:** Acts 9:1 And **Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord**, went unto the high priest, 2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, **that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.** 3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: 4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? 5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. [Gr: thorns, or an ox goad – a sharp stick used to keep oxen moving.] 6 And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do. 7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man. 8 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. 9 And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink. 10 And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him

said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord. 11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prayeth, 12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight. 13 Then Ananias answered, **Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:** 14 **And here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on thy name.** 15 **But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel:** 16 **For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.**

2 Corinthians 11:24 *Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. 25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep; 26 In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; 27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. 28 Beside those things [persecutions] that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Paul earned his squandered trust so much that 13 or 14 of the 27 books of the New Testament were written by him! (Depending on whether Hebrews is counted as authored by him.) But earning it back was costly.

God continued, “Although the experience of sin’s consequences sometimes gives a rebel more appreciation of My Love than those who never rebel have.”

**VerseScout:** Luke 7:42 *And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? 43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.*

A new and terrible thought occurred to me. Could it be God was talking about Adam and Woman? Was God not only preparing for the *possibility* that man would sin, but declaring its *certainty*?

God continued: “Now consider what we are working with: will. The ability to choose. I have created man with this ability, as I have created you with it, in the Image of My Own such ability. This ability can only exist, of course, to the extent the soul possessing it can discern at least two things to choose between.

“So I have made man, as I have you, capable of distinguishing between what already exists and what may be caused. capacity

“Of what exists, you are capable of distinguishing between a true report about reality – Truth, and a Lie – a false report designed to deceive, or to please those who will not tolerate Truth. (The latter lie is called ‘Political Reality’.”

“Of what one may cause, you are capable of distinguishing between what will bless all souls, called Love and Righteousness, and what will temporarily please only one dark part of one’s own soul, called Emptiness and Sin.”

Yes, God was speaking of Adam and Woman! Come on, mind: get in gear. This means my heartfelt questions about the future of our fallen brothers must remain unanswered, for now. Now it is time to learn about Mankind.

God continued, “Another way of describing the ability to choose, is the ability to hold the mind, or to concentrate, on what I have designed you to hold your mind upon. You know that requires effort. It will require effort for man, too.

“I’m not talking, of course, about intense concentration on a narrow range of objects offering too little interest to hold the mind’s attention easily. It is *lust* which does that! It is *lust* which focuses the mind on a narrow range of objects, whose obsession actually blocks out the *wide* range of activities I create to fill men’s lives and give them meaning. How boring is the life of sin! How ‘simple’!

“One reason the narrow, wicked range of objects of attention, so narrow as to actually make life boring and meaningless, will hold an attraction is their very unreliability. Men will be tempted to wicked opportunities by being betrayed by those very opportunities!”

Had an angel made such a statement we would have shaken our heads and called a repairman. But God was saying it, so we knew He was telling us something beyond our comprehension in order to drag our comprehension enough further to encompass it. We waited and listened submissively.

God did not disappoint us: “You have already seen how your fallen brothers reject My Love because it is so freely given, and prefer Lucifer’s rude, cruel contempt – because of the tremendous challenge it presents to ‘earn’ his love, the goal by which they measure their ‘worth’.”

We had. It was a great mystery. We wondered if men could, some day, sink so low as to prefer the fellowship of the cruel to the comforts and healing corrections of Love.

“You must be prepared for the possibilities I foresee.

“You must be prepared, should, one day, the children of Adam reject the rock-solid love of family and friends, in their pursuit of heartbreak and

betrayal from strangers who call 'sin' 'pleasure', and who call 'pleasure' 'love', and who then offer this redefined, dark 'love'.

"You must be prepared, should, one day, they be attracted to the flattery of those who have contempt for them, while actually contemptuous of those who genuinely love them! You cannot allow yourselves to be paralyzed with astonishment should, one day, they love the hateful and hate the loving."

I started feeling faint. But I anticipated an explanation, of course. God would surely not describe something so "amazing" without explaining it.

"You must be prepared, should, one day, they adopt the witless reasoning that since they do not 'deserve' anyone's love, therefore, anyone who loves them must *not* have very high standards; while anyone who loathes them probably does so *because* they have high standards!

"Such sorry reasoning inspires them, if they aspire to high standards themselves, to strive to win the approval of arrogant enemies, and spurn the kindness of merciful friends, such as Me!"

We laughed heartily. God was kidding us again! What a sense of humor!

## Chapter 25

### Woe! Woe!

Month seven, day seven, morning: Woe! Woe! Would this day had never dawned! Adam and Wo-man have chosen to die!

It started with Wo-man. Her eye fell on the forbidden tree. She quite forgot about Lucifer, or God's most recent warning. She didn't really need to think about them anyway, she pointed out to herself, since she wasn't planning to actually eat anything anyway. Even though the books looked very tasty. As sweet as honey, she thought. Her mind rested for a moment on the pleasure which eating one of them would surely give her.

Where did she get that idea? God never said it would give her pleasure! God only said don't do it! Pleasure?! If Hell is pleasure, I suppose eating one of those fruity books would be, at Eve's stage of development!

Is it possible for a frog, caught in a whirlpool, to concentrate on the exhilarating rush of currents so intensely that it doesn't notice its own struggle to breathe?

Is it possible for a man, jumping off a cliff, to enjoy the feeling of weightlessness by blocking out of his mind the cruel end of his experiment in a few seconds?

If that is possible, then it is just as possible for a human to concentrate so much on some physical aspect of the ordeal of doubting God which, in isolation, out of that context, might be seen as pleasant!

Perhaps, then, it is possible to doubt God without thinking about pushing God away, and with Him, all that makes life worth living!

Perhaps then, it is possible to forget the flames of God's consuming love being transformed from a Friend, protecting one from the dreaded Darkness, into a Ruthless Enemy, savagely burning away the now beloved Darkness, whose pain has been named the agony of "Guilt" or "Conscience"!

And that's just the pain and suffering resulting from knowingly doubting God! That's not counting the natural consequences of taking that God-forbidden action for which Wo-man lusted.

Adam had told her God's command that they could "freely eat" of every other tree in the whole garden, but just not that one. Now she began to wonder why the exception.

*VerseScout: Genesis 2:16 And the LORD God commanded the man,*

*saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

Then she began to minimize the *quantity* of the danger by thinking about the pleasure that would be hers if she ate “just one. In fact, just one bite. Just one page. Why, I could even tear out a page or two and put the book back on the tree shelf and no one, walking by, could even see the difference!”

But wickedness, even diluted, is still deadly, she reminded herself. So she might as well stop thinking about it.

But Lucifer by that time had stepped into her view. With his still-beautiful, though only on the exterior, smile, he said “Hello, Wo-man.” And then turned to stare with a smile of longing at the tree.

This made Wo-man follow his gaze and again look at the tree. Longing welled up again for a moment, but she put it back down and turned back to Lucifer, half peeved that he would command her attention only to ignore her while turning away to stare at something else.

She was about to express her annoyance, but he spoke first. Still staring at the tree, he said “Forgive me. I just happened to walk by and see you, and was struck by your beauty, and your beauty reminded me of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.”

He turned to face Woman, still smiling. “There is only one picture that could be more lovely than a picture of you, or of that tree. And that would be a picture of the two of you together.”

Woman smiled, which made her even more beautiful. On her exterior, that is. But inside, an ugly dark spot began to spread and blur her dazzling radiance.

Even Beelzebub agrees that pride makes another soul look ugly and pitiful. I can see it in the contempt he feels for souls stricken by it, even though he thinks his own pride makes him beautiful! But he is drawn to such souls because he loves to use their pride to hurt them.

Woman said “The tree may be beautiful, but I’d better not go near it. It looks so delicious, that I might not be able to hold my hand from reaching out and eating of it, which I had better not do, since God, who made the tree and the pleasure it offers, doesn’t want me to enjoy it, because He made it deadly.”

Woman concluded her complaint with a meaningful look, and Beelzebub easily understood its meaning: that it didn’t make sense for God to make good things and then expect her to disregard them – unless God just wanted to get her in trouble.

As if it were God's fault that Woman chose to imagine that a danger offers pleasure!

As if it were possible for God to make Woman *capable* of choosing it, without the danger that she might *choose* it!

Beelzebub feigned shock: "You can't mean it!" He caught his head with his two hands as if to keep it from rolling off his shoulders and down the hill. "Are you trying to tell me that the Great and Loving God has forbidden you from enjoying every tree in the Garden?"

Woman was sympathetic with the unhappy effect this sad news was now having on Lucifer, but she felt obligated to correct Lucifer's overstatement of God's harshness: "Well, like I said, God said we can eat – freely eat – of every tree in the garden *except just this one*."

Lucifer gave Woman a look that made her feel stupid for arguing with him over such a technical, unimportant detail, when such a very important issue – this unexplainable command of God – was before them. In penance, she added, "Just this one tree. The tree *right out in the middle of the garden* staring us in the face every time we go anywhere. Adam told me if we eat of it, we will die, according to God."

Lucifer looked appeased, and a little pleased. He watched Woman's face for any further signs of a festering imagination. He had not long to wait: "We can't even TOUCH it or we'll die!"

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:1 Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? 2 And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: 3 But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.*

Inside, Lucifer roared with laughter, which was echoed by the hosts of hell! But his exterior feigned outrage at God's excess, and sympathy for the scars of Emotional Abuse Woman had suffered at God's cruel hands. "That's not true at all!" he began.

Woman experienced her first pang of conscience as she realized her emotion had carried her words beyond the boundaries of accuracy. No, Lucifer was right. God had said nothing about *touching* the books. At this, Woman felt her first hot flush of embarrassment as her blood stained her lovely cheeks red. She began to look down.

Lucifer loved his job! He loved seeing Woman realize she was a liar, and then wish harder that she had not been discovered, than that she could find the words to confess her lie and reestablish the truth.

But that was just a little side trip to get her soul loosened up so he



could wrap his claws around it. He was going to offer her an escape, through a double meaning, from the frying pan into hell fire: "That's not true at all, what *God* said!" Lucifer teased. Woman looked up, startled. What a relief! She hadn't been caught after all! It's *God* who was caught in a lie, apparently, which was much easier to endure than the thought of *herself* being caught!

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 2:16 And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: **for in the day that thou eatest thereof** thou shalt surely die. ....25 And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed. 3:1 Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? 2 And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: 3 But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, **Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it**, lest ye die.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *How could Eve sin before she ate of the tree that introduced sin into the world? The same way she could be "naked" before she knew there was anything wrong with it. The same way Paul could "lust" before he knew the Law, and yet remain "alive", before he learned the law and "died", Romans 7:6-12, see notes in Chapter 9.*

The word "sin" in the New Testament is most often translated from a Greek word meaning "to miss the mark". Before a "mark", or "target", or "goal", or "vision" is identified, it is not possible to "miss" or "fall short of" it.

Romans 14:22-23 explains it is doing what you know is wrong that is the definition of "sin". It's the same with a baby who doesn't know he should not go to the toilet in his pants. The parent does not even tell him it is "wrong", knowing the baby has no capacity to "obey". It is only after a baby has capacity both to understand and obey, that it is possible to "disobey". Thus we say a baby is "innocent", even though he is far from "mature" or "perfect".

"You will not 'surely' die!" he said.

Woman did a mental double take. Well, no, God never said she would die if she merely *touched* the books. But did Beelzebub mean –

"You will not 'surely' die' if you *eat* those books!" he continued. "And God knows it!"

Woman's eyes widened in astonishment, and with a bit of fear. Pretty strong language! God, a bald-faced liar?! Woman tried to imagine God's reaction if He heard Beelzebub talking like this. She tried to imagine what God would think of her listening to these serious charges without sticking up for Him. If God stormed through the underbrush and had it out with Beelzebub, who would win, she wondered?

She tried to remember the exact words God had said, and whatever that analysis was that Adam had tried to interest her in afterwards. But all she could remember was God's look of compassion and kindness. But Lucifer looked compassionate too! If they both look equally kind, how is one to know who is right?

Lucifer continued: "God knows very well that the day you eat one of those books, you will be a God yourself, deciding for yourself what is right and wrong, just like God does!"

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:4 And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: 5 For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.*

This was a new thought for Woman. But not half so new for her as it was for me!

What a commentary on Beelzebub's hypocrisy! Here he is telling Woman she can be like God, and sincerely admiring that goal, when Beelzebub doesn't want anything to do with God! And doesn't like anything about God! And gives, for reasons to sin, accusations that portray God as someone whom no one would want to emulate!

What a commentary on the lust-blinded gullibility of Woman, to risk grave danger in order to be like someone you don't respect! Woman is losing respect for God for forbidding this fruit, at the same time she is biting on Lucifer's promise that she will be *like* this God whom she is liking less and less, if she eats what God forbids!

Woman's very lack of respect for God is becoming her reason for courage to defy Him so she can be like Him!

And what a picture of a worm claiming to be a Tyrannosaurus Rex!

Listen to Beelzebub, claiming the Tree offers Woman power to do a thing which not only will that Tree never give, but which God doesn't even do! To decide for herself what is right and wrong!

God did *not* create, in that tree, the capacity to confer the ability to make one thing right and another wrong, or one thing good and another evil, by mere *decision*! Not even God does that! God makes things, ideas, and possibilities whose *inherent natures* are right, wrong, good, or evil. He then identifies, for the rest of sentient creation, the inherent nature of what He has just created.

For example, God creates berries that nourish birds but are poison for humans, and then tells the humans that they are poison, even though they are beautiful to look at. No human has the power to *decide* they are healthy: or rather, such a "decision" has no power to lessen the danger in

the berries!

Yet now Woman is taking this lie in, and looking forward to the ability to study a thing, idea, statement, etc., and “decide for herself” – that is, without regard for what God has already said about it – whether it is good or evil! As if her “decision” then has the power to change its nature to conform with her decision! Talk about being out of touch with reality!

Now if Woman wants to create things or living beings whose personalities and characteristics, not to mention intricacies of production, are beyond our comprehension, like God does, and then accurately apprise us of their inherent nature, then maybe she will be like God. But she won't earn that right just by eating one of those fruity books!

She reminds me of the day we watched a blind dog chase a rabbit through a rock garden. We decided the dog had been well educated, and we called that garden an Institution of Higher Learning, which we dubbed The School of Hard Knocks. That is what Woman is doing: taking an Entrance Examination for the School of Hard Knocks. Rather than trust God's warning that this forbidden thing is really evil, she wants to experience, for herself, whether it is so. She is ready to play God, deciding for herself which things are good for her, and which evil!

Now that she has passed the entrance exam, it is time for her to sign up for courses. She just had to agree with Lucifer that the tree looked as beautiful as herself; that the books looked delicious – the aroma was irresistible; and the books would obviously make her as wise as – as – dared she think it? – Beelzebub himself! Why, if she could become a God that easily, and Beelzebub already knew how, then he must already be one too!

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:6 And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, ...*

This was the genesis of cooking skills in women. The fact that Eve came up with a recipe that made something out of *that* shows God gave her tremendous culinary instincts.

Hell smiled, and heaven grimaced, as Woman tore out a page and gulped it down. Then another, and another, until the last chapter was devoured. Then the epilogue. And even the appendixes, footnotes, and index! *No one devours the indexes!* But Woman did!

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:6 And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

Satan is obsessed with doubt, and loves to share it.

His first step in sharing is to nurture within his victim a temptation. That is, a desire for something which God has said will hurt him. Or even a desire for something which will block his own goals, as a warm-up for wanting what God has forbidden.

His second step is to cajole, flatter, and trick his victim into giving in to his dark desire.

His third step is to show his victim how to rebel against the annoyance of conscience by sharing the sin – becoming an evangelist of it, so that justifying the sin will become a community project.

Beelzebub knows the alternative to questioning God is trusting Him. Doubt is the opposite of faith.

It wasn't long before Adam happened along, and Woman even more quickly sold Adam into sin than Lucifer had sold Woman.

Actually Adam sinned for a different reason than had Woman. Woman had sinned because she was deceived: Adam sinned because he wanted to please Woman.

***VerseScout: 1 Timothy 2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.***

*1 Corinthians 7:32 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: 33 But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife. 34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband. 35 And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.*

Not that Woman was totally unconscious of the fact that she was doing wrong. She knew she was disobeying God. But she was truly deceived into believing her disobedience was at least a little bit justified, because she was forced to choose between two good things: obedience to God, and that wonderful, educational fruit.

Adam was not deceived. He knew he was disobeying God, and he didn't believe that was justified. He wanted to please Woman anyway.

Not that Adam was fully conscious that Lucifer's promises were a pack of lies; but rather, Adam was not motivated by any belief that Lucifer was telling the truth. He just wanted to please this pretty Woman he so loved. His eyes were so full of her flattering ways, her smile that would make

an angel gasp in ecstasy, that he was too busy to think about the precipice of Hell she was just now stepping over, from which it might not be too late to save her!

In fact, Adam even made a modest effort to save her and himself. But Woman responded with just a glimpse of the emotional beast *beneath* her winsome smile and flattering eyes. Clearly, her favorite means of persuasion was not dispassionate logic, as was Adam's. She was not of the temperament to win the debate with a cogent analysis of the merits of this approach as against that, as was Adam. No! She was slugging it out with raw emotional power! For which Adam had little heart.

Adam offered his logical reason for resisting temptation. Woman acted as if logic, in so critical a decision as this, were irrelevant. She did not address the points Adam set forth. She did not attempt to analyze Adam's logic to expose flaws in his reasoning. There are more important things to think about, than to "just argue", she explained. Didn't he love her? Because if he did, he would do what she wanted! Woman ate the fruit because "it feels so right", and "it is important for you to understand how I *feel*, Adam. Because you always argue", she informed him.

Poor, disoriented Adam responded to this accusation with rational analysis! He offered evidences why it was an overstatement at best. It had yet to be proven that Adam had *ever* argued, so Woman's insistence that he had *always* argued was, at best, unpersuasive, he pointed out to her.

"See, you're doing it again! Arguing!"

She was winning, and she knew it. She knew that "arguing" is the opposite of "agreeing". So when he isn't "agreeing" with her, he is "arguing". "Discussing" isn't "agreeing", so it is "arguing". "Seeking the truth" is perfectly acceptable, so long as it results in "agreeing". If it doesn't, then it is "arguing". Adam just didn't get it.

As a corollary to these principles, "criticizing" her recommendation is "yelling", regardless of how acoustically quiet the criticism is. Yes, of course, "yelling" is defined as saying something way too loud. But if "criticism" is audible, it is way too loud; hence it is "yelling".

Faced with these challenges to reason, Adam got angry and really yelled. But it didn't have the effect he hoped. She just cried, and seemed to take every hot word and fashion it into an arrow and shoot it right back.

She was much more eloquent than Adam because Adam would stop and think about exactly what the truth was, and with what words to express it. Woman was less concerned with articulating the truth than with articulating how she felt, which took much less thought to comprehend and describe. So while Adam's tongue hesitated, stammering, Woman's was agile and busy. Which only made Adam the more furious and frustrated.

Adam's choice was fairly simple. He could “give in” to please Woman. Or he could lead her away from danger, which would definitely not please her, for the time being. *Leading* Woman, so that she would step away from greater danger *willingly*, was not a likely option. Woman was not responding to reason, and were Adam to oppose Woman with emotions, there would only be frustrated shouting.

Were Adam to choose to lead, his only tool was decisive action. Action without verbal justification. Action subject only later to rational discussion, should Woman at some later time want to engage in it, but meanwhile, action without apology.

Adam was not deceived. He knew better. But would he do what he knew was right?

If he does, God will be able to take into account, in dealing with Woman, that she was not fully accountable, being partly deceived; and that even though she may be gullible in the future, she has a strong husband who will keep her out of trouble.

But if Adam doesn't do what is right, he will be more guilty than she: because his eyes will have been wide open as he sinned; and God will have to take into account, in creating future conditions for them, that neither one of them has the self discipline to stay away from that Tree.

Lead, or cave? Which would it be? Human history was riding on his choice.

We did our best. But Adam made his choice. Adam chose to be the first cave-man.

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 2:8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting. 9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness [Gr: “modesty”] and sobriety [Gr: “self control”]; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; 10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works. 11 Let the woman learn in silence [see Gr. definition of “silence” in v. 12] with all subjection. 12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to **usurp authority over** [Gr: this is a very strong term which means anything from being an “absolute master” to being a murderer! It is such strong language that it may express sarcasm, and may correspond to the English idioms “henpeck” or “browbeat”] the man, but to be in silence [Gr: “quietness; description of the life of one who stays at home doing his own work, and does not officiously meddle with the affairs of others”. In other words, it is like the English idiom, “mind her own business”. The woman is told not to be a “meddler”, or to be a “gossip”.] 13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve. 14 **And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. 15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety** [Gr: “self control”].*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** Should women today have no authority over men because Eve was “deceived”, not Adam?

*These verses are interpreted by several churches as completely censoring all female speech and leadership around men, in church, if not everywhere, for every woman's entire life. Women "should be seen and not heard" around men, as was once common to say of children.*

*The rationale for so sweeping a restriction, said to be implied by these verses, is that men are more rational and women more emotional. This stereotype has been invoked in many churches in support of interpreting 1 Timothy 2 to prohibit women having any authority over men, ever. Verse 12 is traditionally understood to forbid any women from ever teaching any man anything, at least in church, if not everywhere else also.*

*This reasoning is based on the dubious assumptions that (1) this chapter is about rules for church, and (2) the "man" (singular) to which women ought to be in "subjection" is not just one "man", (God wrote it in the singular), but any and every man (plural).*

*Thus women are not allowed to teach any man anything in many churches in the past, and in a few churches to this day. In many hearts the rule that no woman should ever be allowed any authority over any man is extended to business and politics, so that it is considered a sin, or as missing God's best for us, when a woman owns a business or holds political office.*

*But the context of the command for women to be "seen and not heard" ("learn in silence", v. 11) is not a church meeting, but the woman's whole life. Fortunately the Greek word translated "silence" doesn't mean physical, literal, acoustical silence – not one sound, ever. Because if it did, these verses would be saying no woman may ever speak to a man! The women who spoke to Jesus were in sin!*

*The setting of verse 8 is not church but "everywhere". Verses 9 and 10 have advice which surely is meant to apply everywhere. Verses 11 and 12 use the word "silence", KJV, which in Greek does not describe a public setting but someone who "stays at home doing their own work" or "minds her own business" as opposed to a meddler in other homes.*

*Also, verse 12 renders "man" singular both in Greek and in the KJV. If the scenario were church, and the restriction were to be applied to prohibit women from teaching any of the men, it would surely be plural.*

*The fact that "man" is singular indicates this chapter is about husband-wife relationships, and has nothing to do with other men. The Bible is not asking women to be "subject" to anyone but their husbands. Similarly, 1 Corinthians 14:34, a passage likewise interpreted as not allowing women to speak in church, ever, alludes to Numbers 30 which gives veto power over a contract signed by a woman only to a husband, or a father. Not to any other man. A single woman is not restricted by these verses, and the principle of Numbers 30 grants all power to wives which their husbands permit. (For a study on these verses see "[Did God write 'For Men Only' on the Pulpit?](#)" at [www.Saltshaker.US](http://www.Saltshaker.US) under "Bible Study".)*

*Women are not told these things to shame them! To the contrary, the suffering of childbirth probably accounts for the general perception around the world that women have greater capacity to love than men.*

*Does Scripture support that perception? Well, it tells husbands to love*

*their wives twice as many times, (as if they are more in need of being told), Ephesians 5:25 & Colossians 3:19, as it tells wives to love their husbands, Titus 2:4. Does that count?*

*On the other hand, when Titus 2:4 mentions the need wives have to be taught to love their husbands, we find they also need to be taught to love their children. The temptation fathers need to guard against is provoking their children to wrath, Ephesians 6:4, while the temptation of wives is to not love their children.*

*These clues counter the idiom “a mother’s love” as a picture of absolute love, but they are consistent with our abortion rate, and the specter of abandoned and “sacrificed” babies and children in pagan societies. On the other hand, here in the U.S., mothers receive plenty of pressure from boyfriends and parents to murder their babies, while pastors look the other way while their own congregations vote to support the business.*

*As pointed out in Chapter 16 under #10, (“Both Eve and Paul were deceived”), the best of men can be more gullible, and less rational, than women. Paul himself was. If there is a general tendency, it does not hold in every case. Any ban on communication can’t be right in every situation.*

*Even churches which think literal physical silence is commanded for women in church have exceptions in situations where strict enforcement would make no sense even to them. They allow women to sing, read announcements, and visit with friends as much as the men are allowed. John Robinson, pastor of the Separatists (Pilgrims) set forth the Scriptures which created Freedom of Speech and Religion, and a vote for all, for the first settlement in the United States that left descendants. Although he, too, thought these verses command silence and submission for women, reason forced him to articulate eight obvious exceptions not specified in Scripture:*

*And for women, they are debarred [“excluded”] by their sex, as from ordinary prophesying, so from any other dealing wherein they take authority over the man, 1 Cor. xiv. 34, 35; 1 Tim. ii. 11, 12, yet not simply from speaking: they make profession of faith, or confession of sin, say amen to the church's prayers, sing psalms vocally, accuse a brother of sin, witness an accusation, or defend themselves being accused, yea, in a case extraordinary, namely where no man will, I see not but a woman may reprove the church, rather than suffer it to go on in apparent wickedness, and communicate with it therein. (Supposed Mischiefs of Authority being solely in the Church. The Works of John Robinson, Pastor of the Pilgrim Fathers, with a Memoir and Annotations by Robert Ashton, 3 vols (London: John Snow, 1851). Vol. 2. About page 133.)*

### *Stereotypes Rooted in these Verses.*

*Whether or not the setting of these verses is everywhere or just in church, verse 14 says the diminished authority of women, compared with men, was*



*necessitated by Eve being the more easily deceived; as if relative gullibility is part of the nature of women in general.*

*Even though these verses don't support differences between men and women absolute enough to justify censorship of all female speech and leadership, they do seem to imply tendencies at least a little more common to women than to men. The fiction to this point has had fun with the stereotypes about husbands and wives that seem reflected in these verses. Some of the connections are pointed out below.*

*FLIRTING. Verse 9 tells women they should be modest and should exercise self control. (Verse 15 reinforces the command to exercise self control.) The fact that women are told this, and not men, implies that women, more than men, need to be told this.*

*In other words, the fact that God tells them to be modest implies it is the nature of women, more so than of men, to persuade by flirting. The fact that God tells them to exercise self control implies women, more than men, tend to act on their feelings.*

*This does not mean there is no man who tries to get his way by flirting! This does not mean there is no man who does whatever he feels like doing! But it is less natural for a man to behave that way, so that there is less need for him to be told. Others, men and women, are more likely to share God's burden of correcting a man who acts unmanly, so it is less urgent for God to correct him.*

*For example, it is common for a woman to justify her decisions on the basis of what she feels is right, but men seem a bit odd who do that; men will more typically justify their decisions with reasons.*

*It will be helpful, in obeying these verses today, to understand what Eve did, and what women today naturally tend to do, that necessitates these lessons.*

*We can start with the obvious: Eve lacked self control. Which explains why verses 9 and 15 tell women today to exercise it.*

*Did Eve persuade Adam by flirting – a method other than clear reasoning? That is the implication of verse 9 which calls for modesty, one of the reasons women should not teach men, a rule whose logic is supported by Eve's behavior. What else could a call for modesty correct? Today modesty means putting on more clothes. But that wasn't Paul's concern. Eve was naked, but that was not her sin.*

*GOSSIP. Verse 11 tells women not to be meddlers in other people's business; not to be gossips: as if one of Eve's downfalls was trying to "talk about God behind His back". Which of course she did, by exaggerating His restrictions.*

*Verse 11 also tells women to let men lead them, implying Eve made it hard for Adam to lead her. As if supervision by a husband protects a wife from trouble.*

*BROWBEATING. Verse 12 implies that Eve "browbeat" Adam; that she was emotionally aggressive. It also implies that she attempted to talk down to Adam, as if he were a child, "teaching" him by means of "didactic discourse" according to the Greek definition. This describes a very typical argument between a husband and wife.*

**"But God," I asked, "exactly how will letting Beelzebub loose benefit**

man? How is *that* the solution to the problems you have explained?"

"Without Beelzebub, Adam and Woman will still think of the same things, eventually. So let Beelzebub show them how pathetic he has become as a result of those things! Give them a peek through hell's door! Remember that I have made their souls like frogs: as you have observed, frogs are cold blooded, so that if they are swimming in water which becomes increasingly heated, they will not notice, and will boil to death. Only if they jump in very hot water will they notice the instant change and jump back out. Let Adam and Woman be shocked now, by observing the final stages of sin! Let them meet Beelzebub! Let them be saved!"

We saw how this could work to advantage, but we also saw risk. "Would another solution be to make man wiser, wise enough to avoid the foolish path of rejecting You and Heaven?" someone asked.

"Have you so quickly forgotten," God answered, "that Beelzebub was the wisest among you? Wisdom has nothing to do with it. It is the power of will itself, whose essence is the power to choose a wish over the truth – Hell over Heaven.

"What we want now is souls who will willingly join us in heaven and share our love. But we don't ever again want the possibility of anyone coming here and later deciding to leave, and leaving behind a trail of broken hearts!

"But that means, doesn't it, that souls have to taste hell and heaven both, on earth, if they are going to be able to make an informed choice between the two for all eternity?

"That doesn't mean they have to actually sin and be *in* hell; but they need to experience temptation, which is a peek through the door."

An angel behind me asked, "But if we deliberately place temptation before Adam and Woman, then if they succumb, it won't be entirely their fault, will it? Won't it be partly our fault?"

"You use the word 'temptation' to describe what we put before them. I use the word 'choice'. When I put before man the choice between good and evil, and urge him to choose good, how is it my 'fault' if he chooses evil?

"You will see that I have not merely planned a way to contain the damage of sin, but have planned a way to turn this curse into an opportunity to completely manifest My Love. Such an opportunity will only be possible after there have been many sins."

God will *completely* manifest His love, He just said! Unrestrained joy filled heaven again! That will be an event worth waiting for! (But what did He mean, by saying this could happen only after there have been many sins?)

Until now we have experienced God's Love as boundless, reaching

farther than any of us could comprehend. Is it possible that there are limits to God's Love, and that we will one day see them? Or more likely, that there are no limits to God's Love, which reaches to infinity, but that one day, something God does will require Infinite Love?

But then a soberness came over our joy as we reflected upon what costly action could possibly require such Infinite Love! The test of love is its readiness for self sacrifice, isn't it? What sacrifice would it take to test Infinite Love?

"I will die for you and for all souls I create", God revealed.

We were horrified. Part of us wanted to say "Not so, God! This isn't for you!" But none of us felt there was anything we could tell God that He hadn't already weighed.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 16:21 From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. 22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. 23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. 24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*

Our grief did not dampen our joy, but only elevated it into greater love for God. There is no greater joy than love, of course, since joy can still be focused on self, while love is focused upon others.

## Chapter 26

### In the Mouth, Sweet as Honey

*Like a tree denuded of leaves in winter, we see the gnarled, beaten shapes which were always there; but the life has retreated deep down to build power for later growth and strength.*

*Our eyes are now open to our sin, to immaturity within us. Our immaturity, before the opening of our eyes, was not sin. The immaturity of a child is not sin; it is commonly regarded as the opposite: as “innocence”. But as our eyes open, continuing in that same immaturity is evil.*

*It is, therefore, not wicked actions or beliefs or attitudes alone, by which God judges, but all these in relation to each soul’s openness of eyes to his wickedness.*

*When a toddler runs outside, naked, we correct, but do not condemn. It is an “innocent mistake” which we laugh about afterwards, after the toddler is safely inside and clothed. But the very same error, committed by the very same child a few years later, after his eyes have been opened to its wrong, is a sin to be, not just corrected, but condemned and punished.*

*-- Justinus, note added to margin, added several centuries later*

We supposed one of the first things Adam and Wo-man would realize, upon eating of the Tree, would be the health benefits of sanitizing, and afterwards keeping covered, their waste-emitting orifices.

Another benefit we saw of such coverings was that half of these same orifices served additionally as sources of great pleasure during procreation. It would be beneficial to enhance the pleasure of the sight of them during this activity, and there is no better way to enhance a pleasure than to make it available only rarely.

A few of us had discussed these ideas after staying up late one night reading the Books. We perceived that any pleasure, too abundant, makes the pleasure-seeker jaded. The pleasure can become taken for granted, unappreciated. In fact, fault can even be found with it! No matter how perfect is God’s blessing, a jaded soul can covet “more”! We concluded: *all pleasures are most fully enjoyed in moderation.*

We saw an example in food: too much spice, and a little spice cannot be tasted; one must have ever more just to taste it.

Too much food, and the tongue is no longer satisfied with

nourishment sufficient for the body. When pleasure from eating beyond that needed for nourishment is sought, the pleasure of eating is eventually canceled by the declining health of the body, and even then the tongue demands more! More!

In all these things, the error is to find satisfaction in Creation rather than in the Creator. Ironically, yet obviously, self denial, to the extent of moderation, is the key to the greatest satisfaction! Of anything!

***VerseScout:** Luke 17:33 Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.*

*Matthew 16:24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?*

Moderation is, therefore, the key to the maximum enjoyment of a pleasure. Moderation is when a pleasure is enjoyed as fully as possible without impeding more important goals.

The ability to enjoy is a gift of God. It is a skill that can be learned through trusting and serving God.

***VerseScout:** Proverbs 25:16 Hast thou found honey? eat so much as is sufficient for thee, lest thou be filled therewith, and vomit it.*

*Proverbs 25:27 It is not good to eat much honey: so for men to search their own glory is not glory.*

*Ecclesiastes 7:16 Be not righteous over much; neither make thyself over wise: why shouldest thou destroy thyself? 17 Be not over much wicked, neither be thou foolish: why shouldest thou die before thy time?*

*Ecclesiastes 3:11 He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end. 12 I know that there is no good in them, but for a man to rejoice, and to do good in his life. 13 And also that every man should eat and drink, and **enjoy the good of all his labour, it is the gift of God.***

*Ecclesiastes 5:18 Behold that which I have seen: it is good and comely for one to eat and to drink, and to enjoy the good of all his labour that he taketh under the sun all the days of his life, which God giveth him: for it is his portion. **19 Every man also to whom God hath given riches and wealth, and hath given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labour; this is the gift of God.***

*Philippians 4:11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.*

Unfortunately, clothes weren't the first need to occur to Adam and

Woman. They were one of the last. Far ahead of real needs, on their new list of priorities, were imaginary needs.

"You're right!" Adam told Woman. "I already feel much wiser!"

They hadn't previously even thought about how wise they were. But as they started taking inventory of all the things they knew, they were sincerely impressed! Had they known these things before and just not noticed, or was there really a difference, attributable to those delicious books?

They tried to discuss it. They couldn't reach a solid conclusion, but they had a compelling sense that it was the books. Which undermined their trust in God. Maybe Beelzebub was right, and God had lied to them, to deny them pleasures which it was in their own interest to enjoy, because God was motivated by jealousy. God just didn't want anyone else to be as smart as He is!

"I'm starting to wonder about God", Woman ventured.

"Me too", Adam agreed. "I've been thinking."

Adam took a deep breath, because he had a great backlog of words waiting to blow out. "God made us with desires, right?"

"Right."

"And by 'desires', I mean not just the physical things like eating and drinking and being fruitful. I mean everything we want in life, that makes our lives worth living. Like loving life, loving you, loving God, and filling our lives with wonderful things to do, like making the garden beautiful for you."

"I love you", Woman answered dreamily, admiring the new furrows of self-importance arching over Adam's brow.

Adam drank up the appreciation and swallowed it, but offered none in return. He assumed it was given because he deserved it, not because she was generous. He droned on:

"If we define 'desire' to include every longing we have, or in other words everything we have an *orientation towards doing, feeling, experiencing, or acquiring*, then it is fair to say that our desires are important to us. In fact, by that definition, *our desires are the only thing that can ever be important to us.*"

Adam paused for emphasis. He leaned towards Woman to look in her eyes, to make sure of her attention to what he was about to say. Woman was enjoying this. She didn't necessarily follow just every detail of Adam's train of thought, but nothing had offended her so far, of what she understood, and she really liked Adam's new assertiveness. She had loved him as a man; how much more she loved him now, as a god!

"And that fact would not change," Adam breathed, "even if God

wanted something else for us besides the satisfaction of our desires.”

Woman was startled by the words, and unnerved by the bold defiance. It wasn't that she disagreed; she didn't even particularly follow Adam's reasoning, nor did she terribly care about it. She just thought that it was one thing to disobey God behind His back; it seemed another to challenge God to a duel!

Adam leaned away and looked into some giant flowers, reflecting on the next point of his reasoning. “Of course, if God wills, for us, the satisfaction of our desires, then He is in a position to greatly help us.”

Woman was surprised by the back-and-forth opinion of God. But now that God's potential helpfulness was on the table, an old thought came rushing back: if God could be helpful to us, maybe we shouldn't have done the one thing likely to make Him mad!

“Actually we may desire things – that is, we may have an emotional orientation towards getting things, or doing things – which will not satisfy us. Like eating poison berries, or swimming over a waterfall.”

Or like eating the fruit of that Tree, I wanted to scream!

“So God may be able to help us understand, better than we are capable of understanding by ourselves, what will truly give us satisfaction. It is possible that we do not yet understand everything, so that what we think important to us, will not actually satisfy us; while we are ignorant of other things which would *actually* satisfy, so they are *not* important to us. It may be that God has the ability to educate us.

“Besides educating us, God is of course still able to give us those good things which satisfy.”

Woman relaxed a little, and decided maybe she had better begin listening.

“By definition, *the satisfaction of our desires is the only thing that is important to us*, and that cannot be changed, whether we find out that God's will is our satisfaction, or whether we find out God will never allow us to be satisfied.”

Adam turned to her again, oblivious of the emotional roller coaster ride registering on her face. “But that's the real issue, isn't it? Is God on our side? We need to determine that. Because if He isn't and we mistakenly think He is, we will allow God to trick us into a life of slavery to an existence unsuited to us.”

Adam leaned back in the soft grass and gazed at the sky whose glowing cloud cover swam with all the vivid colors of the flowers at his side. “On the other hand, if God is on our side and we mistakenly think he isn't, we cut ourselves off from a wonderful source of help, and may fall into terrible dilemmas.” Adam reflected. “So we can't just guess and be content

with that. We have to determine this for certain.”

Too late, I moaned. Too late, Adam! Great questions, but much tragedy could have been averted had you been curious about them earlier! Or had you earlier taken seriously the available evidence which makes the answers to such questions obvious.

Woman was more impressed with Adam's fairness than I was. What an impartial, unbiased seeker of Truth, she told herself!

It didn't seem to occur to her that fairness should require some memory of the perfect beauty and pleasure of every single thing created by God, including this fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil which Adam now thinks the most beneficial thing on the planet. How can he question whether God is on his side, when God created this thing which he finds so wonderful? Who else does he think created it?

Fairness should also, I would think, require some credit for the absolute happiness and love which had filled their lives every moment between their creation and the moment they rebelled.

And while we're at it, some memory of the absolute power of God, and their absolute dependence on Him for their very next heartbeat!

Is it logical for a famished baby bird to engage in an internal philosophical debate whether the worm offered by its mother is truly to its liking, or ought to be rejected and a finer worm demanded?! Then how was Adam in any more logical a position to even consider rejecting the sustenance which had brought him into being and nourished him every moment?!

What an ungrateful hypothesis, that God's will might be that he would never be satisfied – after an existence of nothing but pure satisfaction! Such an imagination, flying in the face of all evidence, deserves not such a dignified appellation as “hypothesis”, but would much better have been named “babbling”.

Let's give Adam's logic the benefit of the doubt. Suppose Adam had meant it might be God's will that 99% of Adam's *true* desires be satisfied, but that *not all* Adam's *true* desires (that is, whose fulfillment would bring him *true* satisfaction) be satisfied.

*In that situation, utterly without any counterpart in reality, what would be the smart thing for Adam to do? In view of Adam's utter dependence on God, for whatever desires God DOES want to satisfy, wouldn't Adam be smart to remain perfectly obedient to Him anyway? Hmmm?*

As we watched, from heaven, the spreading of the stain of doubt across their countenances, we anticipated that Adam's hypothetical complaint would inevitably sprout into a rationale for something to really complain



about. Dissatisfaction began to spread like a blanket over Adam's mind.

**VerseScout:** *James 1:5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. 6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. 7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. 8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways. 9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted: 10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. 11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways. 12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Do not err, my beloved brethren. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *This is how Adam and Eve should have proceeded, if they really wanted Wisdom. God would have given it to them, v. 5, had they asked in faith, v. 6. Faith in God, of course; not faith in Satan, which Adam and Eve had. Actually "faith in Satan" is an oxymoron, since Satan's "faith" consists simply of questioning, or doubting, God. God will honor faith that is consistent, v. 6, not up and down with changing moods and circumstances. Such up-and-down "faith" is not honored by God, v. 7, any more than a parent honors the begging of a child who goes back and forth between sycophantic pleading to tantrums for being denied, in an effort to manipulate the parent by wearing him down.*

*Such a child, or such a child of God, v. 8, has no stability – you might even say no personality of his own which you can lay your finger on. Your happiness, or worth, is not related to what you possess, whether money or wisdom, anyway. (It is what you do with what you possess, Ecc 2:24, 3:13, 5:18, 8:15, 9:7, Luke 12:15-34, Mat 6:25-34) If only Adam and Eve had understood the transient nature of wisdom itself, what a shadow it is of what God has for us! (1 Corinthians 13:8-12)*

*You think you are "disadvantaged"? Whoever you are, in whatever time, place, or conditions, you have all the opportunity you need, v. 9. You think you are blessed above other men? You have no more opportunity, no more hope of true satisfaction or of meaning in life, than other men, v. 10, Exodus 16:17-18.*

*All the so-called "advantages", that we think people have, rise and fall, along life's journey, like the flowers of the field, v. 11.*

*If you want greatness, don't look for it in the trinkets of life which come and go, but in your steady faith in God through all life's ups and downs, v. 12.*

*God gives you Life, which consists of choice. You can choose God, or*

trinkets.

*Adam and Eve could choose God, or intellectualism, which is good in its time, Ecclesiastes 3:1-8, but that wasn't the time! If you covet something before its time, or something God made for another at his time, don't blame God for the consequences! v. 13. Blame your own lust, v. 14.*

*Your desires will incubate, if you allow them, until they give birth to sin, which will ravish you until you are dead, v. 15.*

*Don't misunderstand, v. 16. Everything God gives is good, and dependable, v. 17. As God formed Adam and Eve, so He gave second birth to us through Truth, not just the intellectualism that Adam and Eve coveted.*

*All God offered Adam and Eve, God now offers us: not just that we might be descendants, but that we might be, in the only sense that really matters, the first men and women, v. 18.*

As he and Wo-man looked at the variegated clouds, they wondered if a different pattern of colors might have been more pleasing but had been withheld from them by God!

**VerseScout:** *Numbers 11:1 And when the people complained, it displeased the LORD: and the LORD heard it; and his anger was kindled; and the fire of the LORD burnt among them, and consumed them that were in the uttermost parts of the camp. 2 And the people cried unto Moses; and when Moses prayed unto the LORD, the fire was quenched. 3 And he called the name of the place Taberah: because the fire of the LORD burnt among them. 4 And the mixt multitude that was among them fell a lusting: and the children of Israel also wept again, and said, Who shall give us flesh to eat? 5 We remember the fish, which we did eat in Egypt freely; the cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlick: 6 But now our soul is dried away: there is nothing at all, beside this manna, before our eyes.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The people of God were so restless in God's company that they imagined they were happier with the bread of slavery than with Bread from Heaven!*

*The complaint of the Israelites is shown as especially childish when we remember it wasn't even true that all they had to eat was angel food, as Psalm 78:25 describes it. They had flocks of sheep and herds of bullocks, goats and doves. All these were animals offered regularly, during the next 40 years in the desert, in sacrifice, and by no means did God ever ask anyone to sacrifice all they had!*

*Like Esau selling his inheritance for a meal, Genesis 25:33, the Israelites brought upon themselves a plague of judgment over food. Just like Adam and Eve, throwing away Paradise for the fruit of the Tree! How about the temptations for which you risk God's fellowship? Are they any more worth such tragic risk?*

*Bible commentators Keil and Delitzsch observe:*

*...this sweet bread of heaven wanted "the sharp and sour, which are required to give a stimulating flavour to the food of man, on account of*

*his sinful, restless desires, and the incessant changes of his earthly life.” In this respect the manna resembled the spiritual food supplied by the word of God, of which the sinful heart of man may also speedily become weary, and turn to the more piquant productions of the spirit of the world.*

As they watched the frolicking of the animals (whom God had personally created out of the dust of the ground before Adam's very eyes, so Adam could learn and name them at his convenience without having to walk around the Continent to find the millions of varieties), they discussed whether some of their features might have been “mistakes” with no useful function!

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 3:1 To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven:*

In all this talk, we watched them grow hard, and dark. The beautiful smiles which had previously radiated across the earth now retreated behind stiff, cynical shells of smiles reminiscent of the hellish laughter of the Self-Damned.

The youthful, erect, alert, playful posture which had marked their previous existence gave way to something that looked worn out, tired, without enthusiasm.

**VerseScout:** *Psalms 32:1 A Psalm of David, Maschil. Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. 2 Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile. 3 When I kept silence, my bones waxed old through my roaring all the day long. 4 For day and night thy hand was heavy upon me: my moisture is turned into the drought of summer. Selah. 5 I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah. 6 For this shall every one that is godly pray unto thee in a time when thou mayest be found: surely in the floods of great waters they shall not come nigh unto him.*

These changes were actually appreciated by Adam and Wo-man in each other, at first. They savored the fellowship of mutual rebellion. Already committed to that death-drenched path, they were grateful for companionship on it.

But we knew where it was leading. Our hosts surrounded them, the same way we surrounded participants in a sports contest such as halo throwing, shouting to each other about what we saw coming next. There was no question about it.

It was inevitable that, in that complaining state of mind, they would eventually turn their cruel scrutiny upon even that which had given them their greatest ecstasy: each other!

At first some thought otherwise. “How could they even complain about *that?*” they asked. But as we watched their complaints progress, and saw their inevitable destination, we better understood the nature of doubt.

By “doubt”, we do not mean mere concern whether God is able and willing to provide good, combined with determination to honestly evaluate the evidence as quickly as possible.

By “doubt”, we mean speculation whether God indeed *is* able and willing to provide good, combined with *little interest* in honestly evaluating the evidence. This is what we call “The Spirit of Doubt”.

In fact, I once shouted at the two, “If you question whether God exists, Loves, and controls, you may yet live. But combine your questions with zero urgency about honestly evaluating the evidence, and you are already dead!”

***VerseScout:** Heb 11:11 Now faith is the substance of things hoped for; the evidence of things not seen.*

But they were already too dead to heed my voice. They perceived it as the buzzing of a tiny annoying mosquito crying out to be slapped away. Mosquitos? They weren’t even created yet! Yet this apparition of consequences to come wasn’t enough to sober drunken Adam. He flicked at it with his hand and droned on.

***VerseScout Relevance Report:** The following passages show the nature of our “conscience”: it is a way God (sometimes through angels?) speaks to us, and we must obey. There are limits to its usefulness in judging others. Our immature doctrines can cause us to misinterpret another saint’s actions as endorsing what we think is wrong. The more we sin, the less clear conscience becomes.*

***VerseScout:** John 8:9 And they which heard it, **being convicted by their own conscience**, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.*

*1 Timothy 4:2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy; **having their conscience seared with a hot iron**;*

*Titus 1:15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; **but even their mind and conscience is defiled.***

*Romans 13:5 **Wherefore ye must needs be subject**, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.*

*1 Corinthians 8:7 **Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge**: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto*

*an idol; and their conscience being weak is defiled.... 10 For if any man **see thee which hast knowledge** sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; ....12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, **and wound their weak conscience**, ye sin against Christ.*

*1 Corinthians 10:29 Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?*

The Spirit of Doubt swims in a sea of evidence against it. It is not possible for anyone who sincerely examines the evidence to doubt God, because there is *no evidence* proving God is unable or unwilling to provide the greatest imaginable good for every creature!

Beelzebub couldn't prove God was wrong. Beelzebub was so unable to disprove God that he didn't even try.

Nor do we anticipate he will ever dare even try to disprove God in any forum where all the evidence is permitted. Beelzebub knows he will be believable only where evidence of God is censored.

At the moment, it is the minds of Adam and Woman which conspire with Beelzebub to censor evidence of God. In only such a forum does Beelzebub dare operate.

Beelzebub didn't even pretend to offer evidence to Woman, to back up what he told her. He rightly calculated that was not necessary, because Woman didn't *demand* any evidence! She listened to Beelzebub tell her what God was really scheming, and she *chose* to believe Satan over God!

Why? The Host conducted many debates over that topic. Woman knew God created the Heavens and the Earth, and all that in them is. She even watched leisurely as God recreated samples of all the animals, for her and Adam's convenience. She correctly assumed Beelzebub, too, was created by God. She knew that everything God created was very good, while she knew of nothing created by Beelzebub at all.

In other words, all the evidence was on God's side. There was overwhelming evidence that good naturally emanated from God's nature, and also that God had far greater understanding than any creature, including Beelzebub.

Why, Beelzebub even admitted God created him – that he didn't create God! (However, we sense reluctance in Beelzebub to admit this the next time the subject comes up.)

The very most Adam and Woman could have “proved”, had they even tried, was that God was “guilty” of doing things, *the good of which they could not understand*.

So why, in the face of all that evidence, did Woman choose to believe Beelzebub rather than God?

We marveled at the power of Woman to *forget* all this evidence with which she was so familiar, as she pondered her wicked choice.

**VerseScout:** Deuteronomy 4:9 *Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou **forget** the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons; ...23 Take heed unto yourselves, lest ye **forget** the covenant of the LORD your God, which he made with you,...*

Deuteronomy 6:10 *And it shall be, when the LORD thy God shall have brought thee into the land which he sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give thee great and goodly cities, which thou buildedst not, 11 And houses full of all good things, which thou filledst not, and wells digged, which thou diggedst not, vineyards and olive trees, which thou plantedst not; when thou shalt have eaten and be full; 12 Then beware lest thou **forget** the LORD, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.*

Deuteronomy 8:10 *When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the LORD thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. 11 Beware that thou **forget** not the LORD thy God, in not keeping his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day: 12 Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; 13 And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied; 14 Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the LORD thy God, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage; 15 Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water; who brought thee forth water out of the rock of flint; 16 Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna, which thy fathers knew not, that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end; 17 And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. 18 But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. 19 And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the LORD thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. 20 As the nations which the LORD destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the LORD your God.*

Deuteronomy 9:7 *Remember, and **forget** not, how thou provokedst the LORD thy God to wrath in the wilderness: from the day that thou didst depart out of the land of Egypt, until ye came unto this place, ye have been rebellious against the LORD.*

2 Kings 17:38 *And the covenant that I have made with you ye shall not **forget**; neither shall ye fear other gods.*

Job 8:11 *Can the rush grow up without mire? can the flag grow without water? 12 Whilst it is yet in his greenness, and not cut down, it withereth before any other herb. 13 So are the paths of all that **forget** God; and the hypocrite's hope*

shall perish:

*Psalm 9:17 The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that **forget** God.*

*Psalm 103:1 A Psalm of David. Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name. 2 Bless the LORD, O my soul, and **forget** not all his benefits:*

*Psalm 119:16 I will delight myself in thy statutes: I will not **forget** thy word. ...83 For I am become like a bottle in the smoke; yet do I not **forget** thy statutes. ...93 I will never **forget** thy precepts: for with them thou hast quickened me. ...109 My soul is continually in my hand: yet do I not **forget** thy law. ...141 I am small and despised: yet do not I **forget** thy precepts. ...153 RESH. Consider mine affliction, and deliver me: for I do not **forget** thy law. ...176 I have gone astray like a lost sheep; seek thy servant; for I do not **forget** thy commandments.*

*Proverbs 3:1 My son, **forget** not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: 2 For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee.*

*Proverbs 4:5 Get wisdom, get understanding: **forget** it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth. 6 Forsake her not, and she shall preserve thee: love her, and she shall keep thee.*

*Proverbs 31:4 It is not for kings, O Lemuel, it is not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink: 5 Lest they drink, and **forget** the law, and pervert the judgment of any of the afflicted.*

*Jeremiah 2:32 Can a maid **forget** her ornaments, or a bride her attire? yet my people have **forgotten** me days without number.*

*Jeremiah 23:26 How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; 27 Which think to cause my people to **forget** my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have **forgotten** my name for Baal.*

*Hosea 4:6 My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast **forgotten** the law of thy God, I will also **forget** thy children.*

*Hebrews 4:16 But to do good and to communicate **forget** not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.*

*Psalm 59:10 The God of my mercy shall prevent me: God shall let me see my desire upon mine enemies. 11 Slay them not, lest my people **forget**: scatter them by thy power; and bring them down, O Lord our shield. 12 For the sin of their mouth and the words of their lips let them even be taken in their pride: and for cursing and lying which they speak. 13 Consume them in wrath, consume them, that they may not be: and let them know that God ruleth in Jacob unto the ends of the earth. Selah. 14 And at evening let them return; and let them make a noise like a dog, and go round about the city. 15 Let them wander up and down for meat, and grudge if they be not satisfied. 16 But I will sing of thy power; yea, I will sing aloud of thy mercy in the morning: for thou hast been my defence and refuge in the day of my trouble. 17 Unto thee, O my strength, will I sing: for God is my defence, and the God of my mercy.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** David asks, in the previous paragraph, that

*Saul and his men, who have made themselves David's enemies, NOT be instantly slain, because then the people of Israel would too soon forget the face of wickedness! Instead, David prayed that his enemies would be "scattered" (made to wander), and "brought down" (from their dominance over the land) and "consumed", but not so thoroughly that they may not return, so that everyone may still hear their barking, howling and yapping, and remember.*

**VerseScout:** Exodus 13:3 And Moses said unto the people, **Remember** this day, in which ye came out from Egypt, out of the house of bondage; for by strength of hand the LORD brought you out from this place: there shall no leavened bread be eaten.

Numbers 15:39 And it shall be unto you for a fringe, that ye may look upon it, and **remember** all the commandments of the LORD, and do them; and that ye seek not after your own heart and your own eyes, after which ye use to go a whoring: 40 That ye may remember, and do all my commandments, and be holy unto your God.

("Remember" appears 144 times in the King James Version. "Forget" appears 51 times.)

She honestly didn't think about the wonders God had made for her, as she considered Beelzebub's unsupported statement. Her mind emptied itself of its memory of the joy of God's very voice. It was as if memory itself required effort, to the point of feeling like a "sacrifice". And while Women wasn't yet willing to declare war on God, she was not inspired at the moment to sacrifice for Him.

Beelzebub's evil speculations filled her thoughts the way a pool which waits under a waterfall is filled with it. She saved no room for God's thoughts, just as a pool under a waterfall saves no room for the waters of another spring.

Unlike a waterfall, Woman had free will. She could *choose* which ideas to concentrate on. Woman had the *capacity* to recall the evidence for God and against Beelzebub, and to compare that evidence with Beelzebub's claims.

But that would have required *mental exertion*. It vaguely occurred to Woman that maybe she should make that sacrifice, but that seemed too much to ask. She just wanted a simple life. She didn't want to have to think that hard. Whatever she decided wasn't going to hurt anybody, she told herself, so why cause herself such discomfort as deep thought requires?

Heavy concentration like that has a cost: it closes you off to the sights and sounds around you. It cuts you off from Life. There are so many pleasures to stimulate you every moment, which you separate yourself from, by concentrating on problems which may not even exist.

**VerseScout:** Ecclesiastes 1:18 For in **much wisdom** is much grief: and he



*that increaseth knowledge **increaseth sorrow.***

*Proverbs 8:22 The **LORD possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old.** 23 I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. 24 When there were no depths, I was brought forth; when there were no fountains abounding with water. 25 Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth: 26 While as yet he had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world. 27 **When he prepared the heavens, I was there:** when he set a compass upon the face of the depth: 28 When he established the clouds above: when he strengthened the fountains of the deep:*

*Proverbs 3:19 The **LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth;** by understanding hath he established the heavens. 20 By his knowledge the depths are broken up, and the clouds drop down the dew.*

*Isaiah 53:3 He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.*

*Proverbs 4:5 Get wisdom, get understanding: forget it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth. 6 Forsake her not, and she shall preserve thee: love her, and she shall keep thee. 7 **Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding.** 8 Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her. 9 She shall give to thine head an ornament of grace: a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** “Wisdom” is described in Proverbs 3 and 8 the way John 1:1-5 and Hebrews 1:1-5 describe Jesus. Ecclesiastes says in much wisdom is much sorrow, and Isaiah describes Jesus as a man of sorrows. Proverbs 4 warns: never mind how little escapist entertainment you find in acquiring wisdom: **GET IT!**

Thus “wisdom”, in the Bible, sometimes means what dictionaries mean by wisdom, and other times means Jesus, the Source of Wisdom.

Eve was right. All that heavy concentration, which is required to acquire wisdom, is costly. It is grievous. Americans today are right to look at heavy thinking, and weighty writing, as a chore.

*But look at the tremendous cost of not doing it! The loss of Paradise!*

*Human beings have to make choices, whether they think very deeply about them or not! Some choices made without serious thought are the formula for catastrophe!*

This seemed to us, as we discussed what we were observing, nearly the heart of the problem of Doubt. God had given Adam and Wo-man the capacity to Pray: to visualize what did not already exist, to desire it, and to ask God for it.

Such visualization indeed requires deep concentration. What a model of such Concentration we had seen in God during those awesome Six Days! It was not a time of relaxation for God. It was hard work. God operated at

His capacity! Once God set His hand to Creation, He did it with all His might!

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 9:10 Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.*

*Ecclesiastes 2:24 There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God.*

*Matthew 25:14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. 16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. 17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. 18 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. 19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. 20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: **thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.** 22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. 23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: 25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. 26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: 27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. 29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. 30 **And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.***

*1 Peter 2:21 For even hereunto were ye called: because **Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example**, that ye should follow his steps:*

*Lu 2:52 And **Jesus increased in wisdom** and stature, and in favour with God and man.*

**VerseScout:** *In many ways, on many levels Christ is our example. Christ calls us to grow to the extent of doubling our talents, work to our capacity, and find joy in what we create. If these are qualities prized by God for us, which Jesus models for us, it is reasonable to presume they are qualities in God.*

God loved what He created. We know that because the process caused Him sorrow, which we discerned on His face at times as He calculated His preparations for the future. The determination of God to continue was a measure of His love.

But Woman did not want to even *think* hard, let alone *work* hard. She did not want to operate at her mental capacity. She did not love those who might be affected by her decision, enough to plan as carefully as she could how she might avoid hurting them, and even benefit them.

A dark stain was already spreading across creation in consequence of her unwillingness to think. Paradise had already receded from the experience of Adam and Woman. Instead they were experiencing a world filled with a mixture of good and evil, whose evils they did not understand, and for which they blamed God, sealing off their access to pure joy.

When we looked in the direction the stain was spreading, in order to prepare for the future, we saw that if God allowed humans to live and breed, their future generations would look back on the present tragic moment and say that, by comparison with their diminished minds, Woman has so much greater mental capacity that her disinterest in using it will seem like infinite laziness.

We foresaw a time when Beelzebub could find many men willing to represent him; a time when the rest of mankind could obey their orders as thoughtlessly as Woman obeyed Beelzebub. We knew Beelzebub well enough to shudder at where that might lead! We knew Beelzebub would lead men to the most cruel imaginable actions against one another!

But in Adam we saw even greater reason for concern. God had given Adam a greater love for deep thought, so that he was not deceived by Woman's sinful offer to share her evil fruit. He knew it was God's plan that he and Woman have many children, which would fill the earth as herds and flocks of animals already had. He was aware that there would be consequences, for himself and his descendants. He *chose* not to think clearly about what they were. He *chose* to shut his mind to the images which were making us cry. He chose rather, out of his infatuation with Woman, to do what would seem to please her at the moment.

Would Adam's future male descendants, we wondered, likewise do what they know is really stupid, for women?

**VerseScout:** *1 Timothy 2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.*

Woman's sin, therefore, was aversion to deep thought. But that

problem would have been overcome, in God's design, by her respect for Adam's leadership, through the "helpmate" role in which God had placed her. Therefore Adam's sin was the more ominous: *a lack of empathy with others who would be affected; an aversion to deep love.*

Specifically, Adam's love failed on two counts: he lacked love for God from whom all good came, and he lacked love for his future human neighbors on this wondrous planet.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 22:36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law? 37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and great commandment. 39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.*

Woman didn't think deeply about the consequences, not because she was incapable of deep thinking, but because she did not comprehend the *importance* of deep thinking.

She could think deeply if she knew a reason for it. But without understanding a reason, abstract thought for no known practical purpose held little delight for her.

Adam didn't think deeply about the consequences, even though deep thinking was, for him, a delight, because his love was not great enough to move him to sacrifice the pleasure of Woman's momentary affection for the sake of saving her life.

Woman didn't think deeply about the consequences because she couldn't imagine they were worth thinking about. Adam didn't think deeply about the consequences because he *knew* they were serious, and was determined to do what he wanted *despite* them.

The more you know about what you should do, and what will happen if you don't, the more responsible you feel to do it. If you are determined not to do it, then you will determine to avoid the Truth.

The very existence of doubt, in a field of ignored evidence, proves the commitment of the doubter to call "good" "evil". As this spirit of doubt wanders, it falsely accuses all good. No good is good enough to shame this spirit into acknowledging that it is good. This spirit owes its existence, not to a natural response to reality, but to a choice. Once awakened, it sees *everything* through the same darkened glass. *Even itself.* It cannot spread disease all over the universe and remain, itself, uninfected!

We also call it "The Spirit of Judgment". This vile spirit loves to blaspheme the Spirit of God, one of Whose functions is to teach by showing evidence.

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 12:31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy [Gr: slander] against the Holy Ghost [Gr: "pneuma", or spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men. 32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Jesus applied his insight, about Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, to the Pharisees accusing Him of casting out demons by the power of Satan. Even if Jesus hadn't explained the absurdity of such a charge, it was already so absurd, on its face, that it was surely seen by the people as a desperate attempt to deny the obvious.*

*How does one slander Spirit? How were the Pharisees guilty of slandering Spirit? What is it about slandering Spirit that makes it less forgivable than slandering Jesus, the Creator of the Universe?*

*The Spirit leads, Matthew 4:1, teaches, John 14:26, gives truth so true it has authority, 1 Corinthians 7:40, even helps articulate unexpressed prayers, Romans 8:26.*

*All these functions presume the Holy Spirit's communications must be fairly clear and self evident. Therefore, to blaspheme them, is to not only deny, but to curse, the obvious.*

**VerseScout:** *John 16:7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. 8 And when he is come, **he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:** 9 Of sin, because they believe not on me; 10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; 11 Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged. 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 Howbeit **when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.***

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *John 16:7-13 shows not only that the Holy Spirit teaches us, but also the whole "world". We see the Spirit as our "guide" because we willingly follow, but the world sees itself as being reproved by the Spirit.*

*Why doesn't Jesus say the Holy Spirit will come to teach us how to reprove the world? Perhaps because the Holy Spirit is the Person of God who teaches us, which is another way of saying: who presents facts and evidence to us, which means that those who reject its evidence reject not just God or Jesus but evidence.*

*(See more analysis of this passage in the later chapter, "Travail Within the Trinity".)*

Adam had not shown honesty in his evaluation of the evidence! To give him the benefit of the doubt, he really did not have the maturity to conduct scientific scrutiny of the question as thoroughly as an angel –

although his capacity will far exceed that of his descendants whom he is so callously crippling! So errors in his conclusions are to be expected. But part of honesty is admitting when a question is beyond your capacity, through lack of intelligence or time, to investigate thoroughly.

It is not intellectually honest to forbear obeying God until you get your questions answered, when you know very well you lack the commitment or intelligence to answer them!

## Chapter 27

### In the Belly, Bitter

The ultimate folly of Adam and Woman did not keep us waiting long. They had already been questioning everything else, wondering what better life forms God was withholding from them, and imagining ulterior motives for everything God said.

The thought occurred first to Adam. He mentioned absently, half looking at Woman, “God told us to be fruitful and multiply, didn’t He?”

Woman looked at Adam’s body. “That’s right! I wonder what ulterior motive God might have had?”

Adam looked around them. “You know, this Garden is just the perfect size for just the two of us. If we bear children like these animals around us, it would start to get pretty crowded, wouldn’t it? There wouldn’t be enough food for everybody, would there? We would have to find some way to remove excess eaters!”

Adam looked at Woman. He thought about the very unpleasant waste that came out of both their bodies, precisely out of the same places God told them to use to be fruitful. The irony was rather overpowering. Based on God’s design of these places, God wasn’t even trying very hard to conceal His *own* revulsion for what He was telling Adam and Woman to do! Why was God making them suffer such humiliation?

Woman seemed less beautiful than he remembered. No, that wasn’t it: it’s just that he hadn’t noticed, before, some of the imperfections in her body. Of course he hadn’t! It had never even occurred to him, before, to be *discriminating*! Only now had his eyes been opened so he could recognize, around him, that which was unsatisfactory.

As Adam ranted on the Host went into deep prayer. Imagine, the very thing threatening his soul: this wonderful “discrimination” which he thought such a remarkable asset!

While he was working so hard to enjoy this wonderful “discrimination” of his, he was working just as hard *not* to enjoy the blessings God gave him, the most wonderful blessings possible.

We wondered if Adam’s descendants would be the same way, exercising their minds with all their might to not appreciate the circumstances and opportunities into which God will place them!

Of course, we were not Adam’s inferiors in discrimination! But we

used it in Love, to identify potential to bless others, in the opportunities God places before us.

Pow! The thought hit Adam between the eyes! He slammed his palm against his forehead as it did so, to keep it from bouncing back away: *there was imperfection all around him, wasn't there? Even the weather* had variations, which itself proves that even if some of the weather could be considered perfect, it couldn't be perfect when it was different than that, could it? *And yet God had said it was all Good! Did God Himself lack discrimination?*

This was too much for the Heavenly Host! We were rolling on the Streets of Gold, joking about where all this would lead! We joked that men of the future would probably complain how bad it was when it rained because it was no longer sunny, and then when it didn't rain, complain because the sun was drying up their food!

We weren't really insulting the intelligence of future men, as if we actually expected future men to be *this* absurd in their desperation for something to complain about. We knew of course that future men, though below Adam in brightness, would not become *that* ridiculous.

Our use of sarcasm was only to *exaggerate* what we were seeing, putting a magnifying glass over it in order to enlarge the absurdity before us, so we can analyze it more clearly.

Meanwhile Adam was still babbling: *Did God Himself lack discrimination?*

*Or was God simply covering something up?*

*Was God lying?*

Woman was actually relieved when Adam shared that thought, because just before it, she had felt an indistinct moment of terror when Adam had looked at her with that – that *look*. Woman was relieved to have Adam's discrimination focused outside herself again! Even invoking the wrath of God seemed to her a reprieve from that – that *look*.

But then Adam looked too long at her, again, without smiling, and without articulating his thoughts. His eyes scanned every curve of her still stunning body. But instead of reveling at the sight, his countenance fell.

"Adam, what are you *doing*?"

Adam didn't answer, but continued looking – no, a new word: *staring*, came to her mind. He seemed to be analyzing something about her body, without sharing his intense thoughts with her soul.

Woman had never heard of terror before, but she knew all about it now! She backed away, repeating, "Adam! Adam!"

*[Editor's note: Dear Seventh Millennium reader: before you read farther, you should know the following report is difficult to read. It is not that*



*it is more obscene than what you watch on television every night without stirring your conscience: but the opposite. It reviews the same themes you watch regularly, but reveals how and why they are sin. Thus what makes this uncomfortable reading is that it exposes the shame of what you routinely tolerate as “entertainment”, if not what you make the subject of your fantasies, which the Bible calls “covetousness”. Of all the material in the Angel Diaries, these details may find the least Biblical confirmation in relation to their power to provoke. I have included them anyway because they help explain a common modern phenomenon in great need of being understood and healed.]*

Woman cowered, pleading, “Adam?”

Adam finally responded with a smile and a “Hey, c'mon.” His tense body approached her.

But there was something different about Adam that caused Woman to continue backing away.

Adam had been imagining how God could have made Woman more beautiful.

More beautiful?! Yes, it is my sad duty to report this is exactly what Adam was imagining.

We have analyzed it. We understand it intellectually. We shake our heads over it as we roll our eyes at each other. But none of us can honestly say we comprehend it.

How is it possible for a man to imagine the most beautiful possible human female body is not beautiful enough for him? What callousness, what lack of appreciation, could enable a man to stop being perpetually thrilled?

But at least we finally understand God's reason for the endless variations on Woman's beauty which we have observed will be the eventual product of the blending of her genetic codes with Adam's. We now understand that God has provided, in advance, that future men will have even more reason to appreciate their wives than Adam, because their range of choice will be infinite. Will future men, after this provision, invent new reasons not to be satisfied?

In their genetic codes, we discern endless variations in every part of the beautiful human body. Every part of the body is beautiful, of course; but with the potential future variations, both in shape and size, of every part, how will any man have any excuse to complain? He will need but decide which of the infinite possibilities pleases him, and if he can do that, then to wait for God to bring it to him, and then once he has his Paradise, then to not become bored with it and desire something *other* than Paradise.

We are glad that God has at least taken this precaution to ensure that no future man will *ever* look at his own wife with displeasure, as Adam now

stares at Woman!

But enough of angelic prescience. To the problem at hand – well, after just two more points.

Of course, the thing that would have made Woman so much more beautiful – as beautiful as she had been before she descended from God into Time and began to “age” – would be perfect trust in God: a return to God, which would arrest her “aging” process.

But can Adam complain about this, when it is Adam’s very suspicion that God has not provided him the best, that allows him to imagine there could be something better?

The final point, from our view, is that Adam is acting as if he doesn’t even understand feminine beauty. He is acting as if it is the sight of Woman’s *physical* body which makes her, in his eyes, beautiful! Can he not analyze his own thoughts?

Can he not compare the effect on himself of her appearance when she is bored or impatient, with when she is appreciative, or sacrificing her own interests for him, or taking some other action or stand that he admires?

Can he not remember that the sight of the same physical body produces in him such opposite effects? Can he not therefore conclude that the physical body is not the seat of beauty, but the soul, of which the body is an expression? And once that is realized, can he not find much beauty to admire in a soul – even a crippled or dying soul? And can he not comprehend the power his own appreciation has to revive her soul and restore her beauty?

Apparently not. Adam isn’t looking very beautiful at the moment himself. In fact, it is getting very hard to look at him at all. He is still trying to imagine how God could have made Woman more beautiful!

Finally Adam’s imagination made its selection, among the candidates his imagination proposed, of a body superior to Woman’s, and it imposed its new image over the optic image before him. The image excited Adam, and made Adam move towards Woman.

Adam’s effort to replace the real Woman with the imaginary Woman required intense concentration. Such deep concentration placed great demands on his energy.

The energy demand annoyed him, but he couldn’t think about it or his Image would go away and he would not be able to do what he intended.

When Wo-man didn’t respond to him in her usual manner, but began instead appealing to his conscience, his conscience began putting demands on his concentration which he could not meet and still maintain his Image. But he found a way to block out the demands of conscience, by letting his Image emulate, dreamlike, Woman’s movements, and imagining his Image

saying things to him which were vaguely similar to Woman's actual words but which did not scandalize his conscience.

Adam caught Woman and laid his hands on her.

Woman screamed in terror, but the Image screamed in ecstasy.

Woman struggled in fear, but the Image writhed in appreciative passion.

Woman kicked and beat him, but the Image playfully tested whether he really liked her.

When the image played a little too hard, obviously driven by anticipation of ecstasy, Adam raised his hand to slap the Image to help It just lay back and enjoy the happiness he offered It.

Crash! A tree fell nearly on top of them, some of the smaller branches lashing Adam like a whip, knocking him away from Woman.

We couldn't help it. We couldn't stand by and let this go on. We had to stop it.

It was over.

Adam relaxed his aching mind.

He stopped concentrating. His Image disappeared, and in her stead laid Woman, her dishonored body convulsing with sobs, her eyes fastened with loathing on his body, her words spewing contempt between her sobs.

Adam was ashamed. He had never heard of shame before. God had never mentioned it. Beelzebub had never mentioned it. But he was completely filled with it.

He felt it all over, and wanted to hide from it. But the thing he most wanted to hide was what Woman kept staring at and cursing.

Woman had been ashamed since just before the Image had first been created by Adam. She wanted to hide. Even now, she could see Adam was still frowning as he scanned her body again. But at least that eerie sense, that someone else lay between them, was gone.

Now that Adam was defeated, she made her escape. She tentatively crawled, then walked, looking backwards to see whether Adam would allow her to leave, then ran until the sound of her sobs was matched by her gasps for breath.

She looked for something to cover her body, especially those portions Adam had so sought to misuse. The best the garden appeared to offer her was leaves. She selected the largest, sturdiest leaves she could find, and tried to think of a way to wrap herself in them.

She found vines. She broke them into short strings, and tied the leaves together, to cover herself.

She felt a little safer now. She relaxed, and found something to eat.

But as her terror cooled, her resentment boiled.

*"Why have you done this to me?" She screamed at God. "What have I done to deserve this?"*

From the edge of her mind came the memory of her sin, in the face of God's warning that the result of sin is death. But when the memory came within reach, she pushed it back to the edge again.

Well, of course she wasn't perfect, she reminded God; after all, she was *only human*. It was neither realistic nor reasonable of God to impose a death penalty for one single sin out of a whole lifetime, she reasoned!

None of us were capable of explaining to her undeveloped consciousness how her disobedience, even one single sin, led *naturally* to all the evil she had already experienced, and would now continue to lead all the way to physical death. We could never have explained to her immature mind why there is no other way God could have created her so as to have shielded her from danger; how that even for angels, even a single sin of deliberate conscious disobedience leads inexorably to death! We could not make her understand that this condition has nothing to do with circumstances, planetary environment, or the composition of one's body. What creates these conditions is the very creation of an autonomous personality – that is, a being with *free will*. For any being with free will, a single act of disobedience to God is a step down the path to death.

No, she wasn't perfect; as she put it, she was *only human*. And she could never have comprehended why the inevitable consequence of her one sin was death. After all, she was *only human*.

Too bad she didn't think about how *human* she was when she faced the choice whether to place greater trust in her own wisdom or in God's wisdom! Had she remembered, then, that she was *only human*, in contrast to God, maybe she wouldn't have sinned!

**But the only time Woman liked to think about how *human* she was, was when she faced the *consequences* of her choice. Not when she faced her *choice*.**

She didn't know, of course, that we were recording every word, every gesture, every thought, in the Book of Life. She didn't even know God was watching and listening. She meant only to express her resentment to the trees; she did not mean to express them *to God*. She still feared God too much to say such things to His face. But we knew that if her doubt grew much greater, no fear would restrain her foolishness.

In time the focus of her resentment turned back to Adam. She told herself she didn't care if she ever saw Adam again. But she assumed she would. She yearned for his fellowship again, as an alternative to God's fellowship. But she trembled at the memory of his cruelty.

Neither looked for the other. But a few hours later they happened

upon one another again. Adam wore leaves too!

Until that moment each was afraid of facing the other. But when their eyes met, and they saw that their shame was at least shared, they ran to each other and embraced. They did love each other. They hoped the solution of the leaves would prevent the same terror from hurting them again. And they remembered that the fellowship they shared was theirs alone; they no longer shared it with God. All they had was each other. It was them against God.

Not very much time passed before they began itching. But they couldn't seem to scratch themselves without tearing the leaves that covered them. They also began to notice the leaves wilting.

Between the wilting and tearing, their new clothes soon had great gaps, ever widening from continued wilting and scratching.

## Chapter 28

# God Stops the Charade

It was into this scene that God entered. Now of course He had been there all along, and had watched from the beginning.

God had not only heard every word, but every thought.

He had observed not only every facial gesture, but every white corpuscle offering its life for theirs.

But God took on the form of a body in order to communicate with them, and it was this body whose footsteps through the trees they heard.

They tried to hide. But God just walked up to them, looked their direction as if thick foliage were not between them, and called, while looking right at them, "Where are you?"

Adam gave up, and poked his head out from behind his vegetable cover. "Uh, right over here, God. Uh, I'd come on out but I just don't have a decent thing to wear."

"Where did you get the idea that you needed to wear something?"

"I, uh, er..." Adam tried to remember. The picture of Woman staring at his body with cursing and loathing filled his mind. The solution of clothes had suggested itself, but why? And what was this terrible emotion, this shame, that he felt? And what had made Woman so afraid? Memories began to flood his mind, but he couldn't fit the pieces together.

We had to laugh as we watched Adam's evasiveness. We thought of baby animals playing with their mothers' tails, imagining themselves sneaking up on their mothers from secret hiding places. But that was innocent. This was not.

"Did you eat of the tree whereof I commanded you not to eat?"

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:8 And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden. 9 And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? 10 And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. 11 And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?*

Caught! But how did God know? What did Adam's need for clothes

have to do with the fruit of that delicious, but now suspect, tree?

But there was something new in God's voice. Judgment! Then terror seized Adam at another memory: God's voice saying "in the day that you eat thereof you shall surely die"!

Adam had never seen anything die, so the threat had seemed unreal to him. But here, standing before God, hearing the judgment in His voice and seeing it on His face, his understanding of the term, previously only technical, became very real and frightening.

He knew he was guilty, and he knew he was worthy of death! But he didn't want to die! He wanted to live! There had to be some escape! Maybe he could talk his way out of this somehow. Maybe the blame was elsewhere. Yes! That was it!

"Woman..." Yes! "Woman gave me a book, and I ate it."

Whew! That was close! Maybe that will do the job. Hey, wait just a cotton picking minute! Why, that wasn't where all the trouble started, nosiree! Why, just who should be blaming whom here?!

"Woman, the same Woman, you know, whom YOU gave me, God! You see what a mistake that was? Why, if you hadn't given her to me, this whole thing wouldn't have happened!"

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:12 And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.*

God groaned in sorrow at Adam's defiant unrepentance.

The demons of Hell cackled, "See, Adam repented! Why is God still judging him? Isn't he obviously sorry? What more does God want?"

Did these taunts deserve an answer? Was any sincere curiosity behind them? It required of us great patience to hope there might be. But we mustered it, and answered the obvious: "Adam shows that he is sorry he faces judgment.

"He has not admitted that anything he has thought or done grieves him.

"He has not indicated that he longs to learn how to behave differently.

"He has not confessed his fault to God and opened the door to his heart, so that God might come in and remold him into a new creature.

"He won't even admit the truth! He even hides his crime from God, and of all places to hide, has chosen a woman's skirt!"

God turned for the moment to Woman. Seeing that, Adam rejoiced in his soul! He had beaten the rap! He had talked his way out of it! Poor Woman. But after all, it was her fault, you know. He would miss her, since

she had to die now. But at least Adam would live! Maybe God would even make another Woman out of another rib. Hmmm. Maybe God would make the replacement Woman in the shape of his Image, if he asked God.

Woman was visibly shaking in fear of God, and in shock at Adam's betrayal. She was about to run, but God was looking directly towards her, and God was bigger and faster. It was no use.

"What have you done?"

Woman noticed with surprise and relief that God was asking her, rather than automatically trusting Adam. Maybe there was hope. But she found little refuge in the truth! What to do? She took a cue from Adam.

"The devil made me do it!"

***VerseScout:** Genesis Gen 3:13 And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.*

God turned to Beelzebub, who had been laughing to himself behind another thicket, assuming himself to have been well concealed from God as well as from Adam and Woman. Lucifer gulped. Woman was astonished how quickly God turned His attention from her. Was He that easily diverted?

Beelzebub opened his mouth and took a breath to speak, but God didn't bother giving Beelzebub a chance to formulate an excuse. God had invited Adam and Woman to speak in order to give them one last chance to confess their sins and repent, not to learn what had happened. But Beelzebub wouldn't have benefited from another chance to repent. Beelzebub's words had been on a steady course to harm; God saw in his heart no new inclination to confess and repent.

"You have possessed the most majestic of all animals! I have allowed you wings to fly among the clouds! I have allowed you strong legs and arms to outrace the fastest animals! I have allowed you a great, strong body to give you power in the counsels of the animals! I have created for you a keen mind!

"And this is what you have done with it!

"Therefore even the cattle shall stand taller than you, as I bend up your legs so that you may not walk on them – you may still swim with them – but on the ground you will slither like a common snake! You will slide along on your belly. But to show my kindness for you, I am going to give you what you want, and more!"

Beelzebub withered under that promise of a gift to come, rightly discerning it to be sarcastic.

"You sought to devour the man and Woman I created by leading



them to the Death of which I warned them. Well, I will allow you to devour the stuff they are made of! Is that close enough for you, Serpent?

“You have vowed to yourself that you are going to have Adam and Woman for breakfast, which shows that you have developed quite a taste for the dust of the Earth. So I’ll give you better than what you want! You can have the dust of the Earth *itself* for breakfast, every remaining day of your rebellious life! And for lunch and supper too!

“You think you are god? Fine! Create your *own* man and woman for your breakfast! I’ll even give you all the dust you need, to make them out of!”

Thump! Lucifer’s legs shot out sideways and upwards. His belly slammed the ground. His head jolted against a pile of dirt Adam had dug up for Woman. One of his fangs jammed deep into the dirt. For a moment his head was stuck fast.

*VerseScout: Genesis 3:14 And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:*

With a great effort and a furious growl he wrenched his fang free, spat out a mouthful of dirt, burned a grove of apple trees into apple crisp with an angry blast of his fiery breath, and was about to curse, when he saw God standing there with more to say. He stopped his tongue in fear.

God leaned forward and said in an angry voice, but softer, so that the man and Woman could not hear, “I will deliver them from you, and from Death.

“You thought to make Woman your fellow conspirator. You thought to make her feel wise just to be fellowshipping with you. So I will protect her from you by making her afraid of the mere sight of you. In fact, I will make her so afraid of the very sight of the smallest of creatures that remotely resemble you – snakes and lizards – that it will cause her to scream, and flail her arms, and just generally make herself look ridiculous!

“And if she ever regains her presence of mind, she will try to stomp on the heads of such tiny creatures or beat them to death with a baseball bat. They will have the power to strike little higher than her toes, although their poison, if she turns not to Me for protection, will reach to her forehead and consume her.

“Which is a small picture of the war between her descendant, My Son, and your descendant, your Kingdom of Sin.

“Your Kingdom of Sin will never be able to strike higher than His

toes, and will only be able to strike *that* high because I will sometimes *let* you. But on a day I have already marked on My Calendar, He will crush your head.”

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.*

How far Lucifer has fallen!

Exposed before Adam and Woman as having no power to create anything more out of the dust of the earth than his breakfast!

Wincing with pain at his bruised belly with its cracked ribs, and quaking with terror at every Word of Judgment!

Yet the moment God's face appeared to turn away towards Woman, Beelzebub's face filled with rage at God, and his mouth opened to spew cursings, just like a dog who slinks away when you face him but roars and charges when you turn your back.

But no words proceeded from Beelzebub's mouth, that Adam or Woman could hear. God prevented that, removing Beelzebub's very power of physical speech.

But God heard the words, along with the rest of us.

Beelzebub blamed God for all his problems in his sad life, which seemed ludicrous in the face of his resistance to giving up control of his life!

Beelzebub, the one who had introduced evil into Paradise, questioned how a God of Love could allow evil in the world! Yet at the same time he attributed his afflictions (which he called “evil”, but which were the limits God had placed on his spread of evil) to natural causes rather than to God's judgment for sin!

His self-contradiction caused quite some laughter in heaven!

In effect, he complained, “God, look how much you let me screw up my life! If you loved me you wouldn't let that happen! But you won't help me unless I *let* you! You don't love me enough to let me have my own freedom from the consequences of my stupidity – my own space!

“If you loved me you wouldn't give the souls you gave me the freedom to hurt the freedom to hurt me back! You would stop them!

“And don't think you can get off the hook by having your religious fanatic apologists call *natural disasters* acts of your judgment. Why, it wouldn't make sense to call those *natural disasters* actions of judgment, because judgment strikes only those who *deserve* it, and those natural disasters we are talking about have struck *me*! The only thing we have here that is divine is a divine screw-up. And if you really loved me you wouldn't

let that happen!”

And so on, and so on, talking in a circle as he slithered in a circle.

Adam and Woman had been relieved to see how easily God had turned His attention from them to the next fellow down the Blame Line. But their concern arose again as they observed God’s judgment on Beelzebub. God was definitely more in control of things than Beelzebub. God was definitely able to carry out any threat that He made.

They were frightened also by the immature response of Beelzebub. They had staked their very lives on their trust in his wisdom, and now he was acting foolish beyond their comprehension.

They thought of God’s threat that they would die the same day they ate the books. It was nearly sunset.

But what was it that God had said about Woman’s *descendant*? Had God contradicted Himself? If so, what a welcome contradiction! But they recalled how God had taken a rib from Adam and made Woman. They realized God could easily take a rib from either of them and create a descendant, and then kill them both, before the sun sank in the West. They were afraid. But now they had at least a spark of hope.

Finally God turned his face away from Beelzebub and towards Woman.

Woman froze in fear.

Adam trembled at the danger which was beginning to turn back in his direction.

“I will...” God began. The terrified Woman knew the rest of the sentence as she watched the sun touch the tops of the distant trees: “kill you now!” She cringed, waiting for the words and the attendant cessation of her own life. She saw the pain Beelzebub appeared to suffer as his great body was reduced to so degraded a thing, not likely to live much longer if his body took any more hits. She wondered how much pain would attend her own death.

Her life had been good and evil, truly. It now passed before her. Tender moments with Adam, the euphoria of the touch of God’s Love, the trust God had placed in her, the beauty God had created all around her, the pleasure God had created for her from everything she saw, felt, and ate, and her union with Adam.

Then she thought of the evil. She marveled at how Paradise had turned into Hell, without itself changing a single atom! The change had been only in her own attitude! Yet the change could not have been more real, or more terrible! Or more deadly!

Doubt. Doubt was behind the change. Her doubt about God. Doubt, alone, had transformed the Beautiful and Perfect into the unsatisfying and

questionable, before she had even altered a single action. But then her doubt had gone on to bear fruit in her actions, to cause her to do really stupid, self-destructive things.

She peered through the memories to see God still there, with judgment, yes, on His face, but also disappointment, and, was it really still there? Yes, *that same familiar love*.

Woman forgot all about her fear, because she was convulsed with shame. She had betrayed God, who had been nothing but Good for her, and no judgment could be too severe. She was ready to submit to whatever punishment He rendered.

All these memories and thoughts flashed by before God finished the first sentence of His Sentence.

God continued, "I will greatly multiply your sorrow, and your childbearing."

God will multiply my childbearing? Woman thought. Hope! God isn't going to kill me today! God will allow me to bear children! *MANY* children! He will *multiply* my childbearing!

Woman was so thrilled and grateful that she barely *heard* the word "sorrow"! What did that matter? She was going to *live*!

"You will bear children in your womb, your earthen vessel, the vessel I have carved out of the earth. It will be hard work for you. It will require self-sacrificial commitment because of the pain it entails, which you will call 'labor'."

What a blessing! Pain! I never would have thought of such an ingenious solution! Woman had slammed shut every other door by which wisdom might enter, but it is pretty hard to shut out pain! It is pretty hard not to learn from pain! Very much of it tends to produce a strong desire to learn how to avoid its continuation!

But beyond that, pain makes more valuable whatever is acquired only through it. Woman had become so hard-hearted that there was valid concern whether she would love her own child enough to lay aside whatever personal impulses stood in the way of her commitment to raise her child to maturity. And as doubt festers in Woman's offspring, there has been concern in Heaven whether women in the future might one day actually reach the lowest possible human spiritual condition: the capacity to kill their own children!

**VerseScout:** *Jeremiah 19:5 They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind:*

*Jeremiah 32:35 And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the*

valley of the son of Hinnom, **to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech**; which I commanded them not, **neither came it into my mind**, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** How low is abortion on God's Abomination Meter? Killing your own children, and calling it "legal", is lower than God could even imagine any human being sinking, the KJV implies! Of no other sin does God make so dramatic a statement!

Actually the Hebrew doesn't go so far as to say God could not even foresee men sinking so low. "Mind" translates the Hebrew "leb", [לב] which in Jeremiah 7:31 is translated "heart" in the KJV. It means seat of the emotions, the will, and the intellect. In other words, God says He never wanted anyone to do such a thing. However, the fact that God foresaw it doesn't rescue it from a list of humanly unimaginable cruelties.

But now that women will know they must suffer pain in the process of acquiring the most precious Gift God could give them, thus giving women a sense of having invested a lot into their little bundles of joy, surely such a thing will never be possible!

(God just told me He likes my phrase, "little bundle of joy"! He said He wouldn't put it in His book but He will put it in the language of Adam and Woman!)

God continued, "If you are capable of doubting *me*, it will certainly be easy for you to doubt your *husband*! You will often imagine your desires are incompatible with his – that it's your desires against his desires. You will work your way up a creek without a paddle, hating, more than anyone else on earth, the one person you had selected to love more than anyone else on earth!

"But he will have the ability to tow you back to reality if you allow him. And together, you can work it out, and love each other again."

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:16 Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.*

God turned to Adam.

"Is that all?" Woman wondered! Woman was humbled, but grateful for God's mercy. How understated had been God's judgment!

She knew God was right about her. Truly, her imagination was pretty vivid. Maybe she did need Adam's help keeping it under control.

She didn't look forward to pain, especially as the price of the one treasure without which she could not imagine living. But for the moment,

pain sure beat death!

**VerseScout:** *Psalm 119:67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy word. ... 71 It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn thy statutes. ... 73 JOD. Thy hands have made me and fashioned me: give me understanding, that I may learn thy commandments. 74 They that fear thee will be glad when they see me; because I have hoped in thy word. 75 I know, O LORD, that thy judgments are right, and that thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me. 76 Let, I pray thee, thy merciful kindness be for my comfort, according to thy word unto thy servant. 77 Let thy tender mercies come unto me, that I may live: for thy law is my delight.*

Now it was Adam's turn to wilt under God's gaze. He had not known if God would have any judgment left for him after His judgment for Woman, but when God turned to him and he realized God had some left, he accepted this fact with gratitude mixed with trembling.

He was grateful that God was not going to physically kill him that day, even though Adam certainly felt he deserved it.

Actually Adam understood the difference between ceasing to exist, and the Death greater than Death.

Before the Fall, the difference had seemed abstract. He hadn't been sure, then, which fate would be his.

Now he understood it was the worse fate, at least right now. He understood, and felt vividly, that he was already spiritually dead! He understood that his soul was already a shriveled, dried up, stinking corpse.

But a spark of hope occurred to him as he observed God's unexpected love and fairness: might he live again? Was it possible to be "born again"?

**VerseScout:** *John 3:3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. 8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.*

God's promise, that Woman would bear children – plural – Adam clutched to his heart, weeping with love for his Merciful God. With the promise of not just physical life but mercy came a whisper of assurance that

God would not forgive a body unless it contained a soul which God loves!

**VerseScout:** *Luke 10:17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. 18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. 19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. 20 Notwithstanding in this **rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.***

Adam knew that meant he had at least a year to live, and he did not know but what God's mercy, once bestowed, might extend to many more.

But Adam also felt the unbearable weight of his sins. So great that – forget about God killing him; the very knowledge of them made life, in the presence of the One he had betrayed, unbearable! When Adam thought he would cease to exist, he had resolved that God's judgment of death would be welcome. The longer he waited for it, the sweeter seemed its release from his burden.

Not for his own selfish peace of mind did Adam regard the thought of his own death as a welcome solution. He regarded God as just, and so he regarded his death as the appropriate demand of a just God. Adam's reason, for not being able to bear continued life in the presence of the One he had betrayed, was his knowledge that God, being just, could not bear to look upon wicked Adam; so that it was *God's* peace of mind that required, for *Adam's* own peace of mind, that Adam die at the Hand of God.

Adam hadn't previously thought of the possibility of being forgiven, and thus remaining able to enjoy a full life even in the presence of the One he had betrayed. So when he realized he had been forgiven, he realized God had granted him the release from his burden for which he had longed, without requiring his death!

For all the *wicked* things he had previously found himself capable of imagining, he could not, try as he might, imagine so *good* a thing, as God forgiving him and sparing his life!

But he did not have the appetite to strain his concentration very much for such a feat. The only act for which he had the heart was to bow down on his knees and clutch God's pardon to his heart, and weep.

God's grace had been so generous that the thought of God's judgment ending with Eve actually disappointed him. He longed to hear God's Just and Merciful Voice addressing him again.

Thus it was with gratitude, though with trembling at uncertainty whether God's mercy could endure much longer the presence of himself, that Adam looked up to see God addressing him again.

"If you are so easily distracted from the dangers of the real world, that a few sweet words from your comely wife are enough to numb your brain to...

...the *maximum imaginable* danger,

...from which danger your protection from it requires the *minimum* effort,

...against which danger you have been warned with the *greatest possible* clarity,

...and the existence of which danger has been certified by the *most trustworthy* of witnesses,..."

*Adam felt like a fool. God was describing what had happened with precision, without exaggeration. And with a clarity that helped Adam understand, more clearly than he had been able heretofore, the folly of what he had done.*

But the more Adam felt his own foolishness, the harder he wept at the realization that God still loved him enough to continue talking to him and enough to allow him to continue living a blessed life.

"...because you have demonstrated your ability to do this, I fear for your safety among dangers *less* supreme, which require *greater* effort to avoid, which require *greater* discernment to detect, and whose existence requires *intelligence* to document.

"The job I gave you was to keep a garden. But I made food available to you all the time, so that if you neglected your garden, it would not hurt you. I wanted your gardening to be just part time so I could get you started on some really exciting work. Now I'm concerned how easily you are distracted from what you know is right, so I'm scaling back to 'Plan B', a safer, more conservative expectation of you.

"I'm going to stop giving you food all the time.

"I'm going to make your food dependent on how well you keep your garden, which will now require full time work.

"I am going to help you stay on your toes: with pain. I will no longer leave fruit on trees all year long which you need but reach out and consume to nourish your body and please your palate. I perceive that you have shown yourself capable, were I to do that, of *laying aside* the work which I have tailored to your talents, without which paradise degenerates to mere existence.

"I don't want your life to be a mere existence! So I will put pain into your life which will grow if you fail to do the work for which I have formed you. If you do not till, sow, and harvest the ground, and weed out the thorns and thistles I will plant there for your sake, you will starve: a very painful physical death, but slow enough to give you opportunity to repent of your



laziness and avoid it by gathering food.

"The same hard labor which I have given Woman to bond to her children, I now give to you to bond you to your work. By hard work shall you eat bread...."

Bread? What is "bread?" We wondered along with Adam. Does it grow on trees? *[Translator's note: "bread" in Hebrew means both literal bread, and food in general.]*

"...for the rest of your life. And yes, not today, but in time, your body will die, as your soul did when you betrayed me. Your body will return to the dust from which I formed it. However, if you Love Me, and Trust my Commandments, your soul shall always live."

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 3:17 And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground **for thy sake**; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; 18 Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** "Cursed is the ground 'for thy sake'; in other words, "for your benefit".

God gave the lowly, ugly, dirty oyster the capacity to fashion the iridescent, light-refracting pearl, the most precious of gems from the sea. But unprovoked, the oyster has no inclination to use its great talent. So, in order to bring out of the oyster the beauty it was created to share, God forces a little grain of sand into the oyster's safe, comfortable shell. Oysters HATE little grains of sand. It probably feels, to the oyster, about the same as a grain of sand feels in our eyes. In order to get as far away from that cursed grain of sand as it can, the oyster covers it with a paste that hardens into a smooth case around the jagged edges of the grain of sand. But that doesn't completely solve the problem, because that case isn't in the oyster's plans, either; so out comes more paste, and more and more, until it produces a pearl.

A woman spoke on radio about spousal abuse. Off the air, she was given a compliment for her spectacular hair. She answered in bitterness that the reason she makes her hair reach across her face in swirls where hair normally never goes, was to cover two ugly scars on her face left by her ex-husband.

Were it not for the scars, she would not have been motivated to be so creative with her hair; and she would have looked ordinary. But God knew how much beauty was in her; so He used the very curse which she most resented, because it had made her ugly, to make her stunningly beautiful. She never even caught on! She may die in her resentment for the curse which God turned into a gift.

God cursed the ground for our sakes. As civilization has grown beyond just agriculture, the curse follows us in all that we do. Things break down. We

*have to do things not just once, but several times, before we get them just right, things stop going wrong, and there are more successes than accidents. Hard work is required for success at anything worthwhile. But the courage, diligence, intelligence, humor, and creativity we show as we work and succeed, is what makes human beings noble.*

*The oyster could have made the pearl without the sand, but it wouldn't have.*

*The woman could have brought out such beauty in her hair without the scars, but she wouldn't have.*

*Adam could have developed the nobility of hard work without the curse, but he chose to listen to Satan. He declined to work as God directed.*

*So God gave mankind a little grain of sand, to restore mankind to the glory which Adam and Eve discarded.*

The Garden was quiet. Adam wiped his tears so he could see if God were finished. He saw that God was smiling, appearing to have nothing further to say. Beelzebub had slithered off. Woman was meditating on what had happened.

Adam ran to God's arms, crying again and saying over and over again, "I'm sorry. Thank you. I love you. Help me never to do anything like that again!"

Woman was startled at Adam's boldness, then surprised at God's tenderness towards Adam. Towards Adam, but not towards herself. But what could she expect? It was her sin that started the whole problem! It wasn't Adam's fault! He tried to resist, but she wouldn't let him! She was the only one to blame, she silently screamed at herself!

Woman was devastated with sorrow that she would never again hear God's sweet words of affection for her, nor ever again feel Adam's tender caress upon her young body, after what she had done to betray them both!

She began to bawl, ready to release a river of tears. But she quickly stopped herself, seeing how inappropriate it would be for so worthless a creature as herself to disturb the moments of love between God and Adam. She choked down the sound of wailing, but the tears began to pour.

But through the blur, she thought she saw Adam turning towards her. How furious with her he must be! He began towards her. To beat her, surely, for her rebellion! Her fear choking off her tears, she quickly wiped her eyes to see what he would do.

He was smiling! Why? What was happening?

When Adam turned to Woman, he imagined her with child – with children, plural – the children promised by God! He smiled happily, and walked to her, and said, "From now on I will call you Eve, because you will not die until you have become the mother of all who will ever live!"

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.*

Adam embraced Eve! In that embrace, all her fear, all her sorrow, all her heartbreak melted! Only Peace remained. She silently crooned to herself, "He said I will not die, and that makes him happy!" She clutched the realization to her heart.

But what pounding of heart, what high blood pressure, was instantly returned to normal! The release of tension was too great, too fast. She swooned.

Adam, surprised at this reaction to his joyous proclamation, holding her limp body to keep it from falling, looked at God with a question in his expression: "Should I be alarmed?"

God just shook His head and laughed, as if to say, "this is normal with this species."

Eve returned to Earth from she knew not where. She saw and felt Adam holding her, looking worried for her.

"Oh, Adam!" she cooed, as her legs regained strength.

She reached her arms around him and squeezed as hard as she could, for a long, long time. Adam looked at God, who was smiling. He looked down again at Eve. He felt her now perfectly beautiful body against his, thrilling to the touch, loving her more than he had ever imagined was possible.

But even more delightful to him was remembering his earlier question whether it might be possible to be "born again", and feeling hopeful.

Adam reflected on how Eve had just moments ago been crying her eyes out, and now – such peace, such passion, such Love! "Eve seems awfully emotional", he thought, looking quizzically at God.

"She just noticed a few things you didn't", God answered in Adam's mind. "You really do need each other."

Adam thought as long as her hugs are this wonderful, her tears are worth waiting through!

The joy of the moment was broken by terrible screams. Adam and Eve spun towards the sound. God was killing several small animals!

Horried, they watched the slaughter, watched the grotesque spilling of blood, and then watched God peel off their mutilated skins and clean them.

Then God stretched them over the rose arbor to dry. God invited Adam and Eve to observe the process and participate occasionally in it. The

following day when the skins were dry in the sun, God showed them how to smoke the skins to make them unpalatable to bugs. After that God showed them how to sew the skins together.

When they realized God was fashioning objects which matched the contours of their own bodies, and which were capable of covering their nakedness, they realized that the physical death, on this day, which they had initially assumed God meant, had not been avoided after all. It had merely been transferred from them to innocent, perfect animals.

They reflected on their own capacity for doubt which had, and might again, enable them to perceive intimate beauty as ugliness. They admitted to themselves that sturdy coverings were probably still a good idea. They compared the strength of the skins with their wilted, torn leaves. They grieved anew for the suffering of others which their foolishness had necessitated.

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:21 Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.*

During the smoking, God had explained another reason for “clothes” besides prevention of the cruelty of judging one another as “ugly”. If humans are capable of disobeying God, men would, later, after there are many men and women, be tempted by the beauty of others to procreate with others besides their spouses.

“Normally your clothes should cover your arms and cover from your neck to below your knees.

“And your clothes need to hang loosely over your body. Both for comfort, and to avoid de facto nakedness.”

***VerseScout:** Genesis 3:21 Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make **coats** of skins, and clothed them.*

*Exodus 28:3 And thou shalt speak unto all that are wise hearted, whom I have filled with the spirit of wisdom, that they may make Aaron's garments to consecrate him, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. 4 And these are the garments which they shall make; a breastplate, and an ephod, and a robe, and a broidered **coat**, a mitre, and a girdle: and they shall make holy garments for Aaron thy brother, and his sons, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office.*

*John 19:23 Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also his **coat**: now the **coat** was without seam, woven from the top throughout.*

*Luke 3:11 He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two **coats**, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.*

*Luke 9:3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither*

staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two **coats** apiece.

Revelation 6:11 And white **robes** [Greek: “long clothing”] were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** The “coats” made by God for Adam, worn by priests following Moses’ laws, worn by Jesus, and the “robes” worn by saints in Heaven, covered bodies from the neck to the wrists and ankles. God’s approval of any shorter clothes is not found in the Bible.

Definitions of these terms from several Hebrew and Greek dictionaries are assembled in the book “Christian Modesty and the Public Undressing of America”, by Jeff Pollard, (The Vision Forum, Inc.: San Antonio, Texas) p. 25-26:

*This shirt-like garment usually had **long sleeves**, and **extended down to the ankles when worn as a dress coat**. ‘**Hard-working men**, slaves, and prisoners wore them **more abbreviated – sometimes even to their knees, and without sleeves --**.” (Zondervan Pictorial Bible Dictionary, s.v. “Dress,” by Frederick Owen and Steven Barabas.) Several well known lexicons echo that it was “[the] principal ordinary garment of man and woman, worn next to the skin (The New Brown-Driver-Briggs-Gesenius Hebrew-English Lexicon, [Peabody, Massachusetts: Hendrickson Publishers, 1979])...a long shirt-like garment usually of linen (James Strong, Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible, [Nashville: Abingdon, 1890])...Adam’s was made of fur.” (Theological Wordbook of the Old Testament, Vol 1, s.v. “Kuttonet” by Gleason J. Archer, Jr.) The kuttonet resembled the Roman ‘tunic’ corresponding most nearly to our ‘long shirt,’ reaching below the knees always, and, in case it was designed for dress occasions, reaching almost to the ground; (The International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia, Vol. 2, s.v. “Dress,” by George B. Eager.) while the simplest kind was sleeveless, reaching only to the knees. (Wycliffe Bible Encyclopedia, Vol. 1, s.v. “Dress” by Edgar C. James.) Another description tells us that it was made of linen or wool and reached down to the knees or to the ankles. (New Bible Dictionary, s.v. “Dress,” by C. de Wit.) **All these sources agree regarding the kuttonet: it covered the body from at least the neck to the knees, while sometimes reaching mid-calf or all the way to the feet.***

Public nudity and divorce rise together. Coincidence?

**Number of Marriages and Divorces per 1000 population**

| Year | Marriage Rate | Divorce Rate |
|------|---------------|--------------|
| 1900 | 9.3           | 0.7          |
| 1910 | 10.3          | 0.9          |
| 1920 | 12.0          | 1.6          |
| 1930 | 9.2           | 1.6          |
| 1940 | 12.1*         | 2.0          |
| 1950 | 11.1          | 2.6          |
| 1960 | 8.5           | 2.2          |
| 1970 | 10.6          | 3.5          |
| 1980 | 10.6          | 5.2*         |
| 1990 | 9.8           | 4.7          |
| 1998 | 8.4           | 3.5          |

*1900's: women's arms were bared.*

*1920's: women's legs and backs were progressively bared.*

*1930's: the tops of women's breasts were bared. Public modesty laws were challenged and overturned by courts. Men bared chests – previously illegal. Fabrics were invented which clung more tightly to the body. Women's overskirts were jettisoned on the beach. The first two-piece women's bathing suits appeared in a fashion magazine in 1935, showing a few inches of the stomach.*

*1940-1960: The two pieces got skimpier, revealing more and more. Skin-tight elasticated knits were "clinging" to bosoms and waistlines. Shoulders were bared as straps were stripped off.*

*1970-2000: navels were exposed, suits rose above the leg, thongs showed breasts and butts.*

Adam and Eve slipped off the remnants of their wilted leaves, donned the coats of skins, and submitted to the humbling acknowledgment of their sins which were so black as to require, for their covering, the innocent blood of others.

God must have heard questions in Adam's mind, and answered. "Yes, the cost of your sin was the blood of the innocent. But no, blood was not shed for you, to keep you from dying. You died! Blood was shed for you to restore you to Life, that you may be Born Again!"

Adam instantly went from half smiling, half sorry, to bawling harder than Eve had wanted to cry a little earlier. What was wrong with Adam, Eve wondered? Was it something God had said? What was this strange "born again" idea that had set Adam off? Was it that terrible? Eve hoped someone would explain it to her, and not take too long doing it!

Or was it just that Adam is very, very emotional?

Adam turned to Eve, and held her almost as closely as she had held him. Now he started doing a very strange thing. In between crying uncontrollably, he would stop just for a moment and give her a wonderful smile, and then go back to crying! At least Eve sensed what ever was wrong was not a bad thing after all, and that Adam still loved her very much, and would surely explain it when he could.

God continued.

"I have made your souls eternal. They will not 'die' in the sense of ceasing to exist. The death a soul is capable of suffering is far more terrible: it is to be cut off from the root which makes it function, which gives it joy and meaning! You died the instant you ate of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. But now, for the moment, your faith in Me has overcome the Law which you ingested, and you live.

"Your body, however, will now need to die. Not for many years, if you obey Me, but eventually. Physical death will deliver you from this body of Sin. But your faith in me will, after that time, deliver you from Death!"

**VerseScout:** *Romans 7:24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin. 8:1 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.*

"The deaths of your bodies would not have been necessary, had you not eaten of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil."

Adam and Eve bowed their heads in shame.

"But now that you have both been infected with the Spirit of Judgment – now that you understand the choice between obedience and sin, between life and death, between Heaven and Hell – you will continually face it, as long as you remain in these limited bodies. It would be too great a burden, for you to remain in such bodies forever. After you have chosen Life, and Heaven, and Love, and Me, again and again, and you are very, very, very certain of your choice, I will give you wonderful bodies which can never be harmed. To enter them you will have to leave the bodies you now have. Which you will call physical death."

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 15:51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? 56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

"Meanwhile I will protect you from the Tree of Life, which would

cause your bodies to live forever and cause you unbearable sorrow. I am afraid you will not have the self control to refrain from the Tree of Life, were I to leave you here. You will now leave the Garden of Eden.”

Adam and Eve wept as they departed. God, too, wept. Adam and Eve were still glad they were alive, and they were awed at the eternal destiny God had offered them. But now they were tasting the fruit of their disobedience, and it was very sour. They were comforted by God’s love, but afraid to trust themselves again.

God rejoiced over that “fear”! God knew it meant they would allow Him to lead them!

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 3:5 Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. 6 In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths.*

*Proverbs 9:10 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.*

*Genesis 3:22 And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: 23 Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. 24 So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*



## Chapter 29

# Angel Tears

As God rejoiced, a wail rose from all the hosts of Heaven. God stopped us with the question, "Why are you sad?"

I said, "Because You have created the most wonderful place on Earth for man, a perfect duplicate of Heaven, except made out of molecules, and now after less than a year it must be closed so that no man might ever enter again to bask in the blessings you had once created! No man will ever again see such blessings while on the earth!"

God laughed! We were crying, and God was laughing! God was not mocking us, of course; just His warm, kind laughter after which birdsongs were copied with all the artistry possible on the canvass of molecules. But the contrast between Him laughing, and the rest of us crying our hearts out, was so comical that pretty soon the rest of us were rolling in the streets. The worst part of it was, none of us could *remember* why! No, rather, none of us ever knew why in the first place. Finally there was only one of us still left not laughing. He wiped his tears, looked around quizzically, and asked "What's so funny?" The rest of us rolled! We didn't know!

God answered with the Truth in His Heart which, against the contrast of our tears, had allowed Him to laugh: "Every man will begin his life in Paradise, and will be allowed to remain as long as he trusts My warnings enough to obey them.

***VerseScout Relevance Report:*** *God appears to refer to the difference between childhood and adulthood. The following Scriptures acknowledge this difference, and give some clues about it.*

*Jesus said there is some quality of childhood which adults must capture in order to enter Heaven. Paul said this difference is not in understanding; in understanding we ought to be men. It is in "malice" that we ought to be children. [Gr: "ill will", or "wickedness that is not ashamed to break laws".] Proverbs says children are "foolish", and Paul said children are blown about by every wind of doctrine; just as Adam and Eve were foolish, blown about by every lie of Satan. Several more verses indicate the natural immaturity of children is so significant that children are not "accountable" for their sins at the same level as adults.*

*Do these verses tell us whether babies who die, before or after birth, automatically go to Heaven? David took comfort in believing he would be reunited with his dead baby, despite the fact that he believed he himself was a sinner from conception.*

**VerseScout:** Psalm 25:7 Remember not the sins of my youth [Heb: "childhood"], nor my transgressions: according to thy mercy remember thou me for thy goodness' sake, O LORD.

Job 13:26 For thou writest bitter things against me, and makest me to possess the iniquities of my youth. (Job is asking God "Tell me what I have done so wrong, to deserve such judgment? Are you punishing me for my mistakes when I was a baby?"

Proverbs 22:15 Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him. (Adam and Eve were foolish before they ate.)

Ephesians 4:14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

1 Corinthians 13:11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

1 Corinthians 14:20 Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

Matthew 19:13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. 14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

Mark 10:13 And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. 14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. 15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. 16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

2 Samuel 12:21 Then his servants said to him, "What is this thing that you have done? You fasted and wept for the child while he was alive; but when the child died, you arose and ate food." 22 He said, "While the child was still alive, I fasted and wept, for I said, 'Who knows whether the Lord will be gracious to me, that the child may live?' 23 But now he is dead. Why should I fast? Can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he will not return to me."

Psalm 51:5 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me. [Bible Commentator John Gill: "Nor is the sin he speaks of any actual sin of his own, and therefore he does not call it, as before, "my" iniquity and "my" sin; though it was so, he having sinned in Adam, and this being in his nature; but "iniquity" and "sin", it being common to him with all mankind. Hence we learn the earliness of the corruption of nature; it is as soon as man is conceived and shapen; and that it is propagated from one to another by natural generation; and that it is the case of all men: for if this was the case of David, who was born of religious parents, was famous for his early piety, and from whose seed the Messiah sprung, it may well be concluded to be the case of all. "]

God continued, "And if a man's faith falters, but later he repents and longs to return, he may!

"Oh, the luxurious vegetation here may not be so rich in every place men will live, and the fruits may not fall year-round in every place in every future time, but I will create far more beauty, everywhere, than any man will have the patience to absorb!

"Even the conditions I created for Adam, that he will have to work just to feed himself, because he was unwilling to work at my direction, even that limitation will evaporate for any man who returns to work, in faith, at my direction. I created Paradise once, so I know how to create it again, any time, any place, for anyone. My ability does not depend on this piece of ground."

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The following passages show God's willingness to compensate any man working for Him, so that he will not have to also work for his own physical needs. But notice the verses making this gracious promise are interspersed with verses indicating the magnitude of the commitment God expects: to the extent of boldly confronting even an oppressive government.*

**VerseScout:** *Luke 12:1 In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all,*

*Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known. 3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.*

*4 And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. 5 But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.*

*6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? 7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

*8 Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: 9 But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. 10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.*

*11 And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: 12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.*

*13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother; that he divide the inheritance with me. 14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? 15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. 16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain*

*rich man brought forth plentifully: 17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? 18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. 19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. 20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? 21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.*

*22 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. 23 The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment.*

*24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls? 25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? 26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?*

*27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 28 If then God so clothe the grass, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven; how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?*

*29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. 30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 31 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.*

*32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.*

*33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. 34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.*

*35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning; 36 And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him*

One of us asked God, "Are they like us, through having known Good and Evil? Was there a grain of truth in what Beelzebub said?"

"Well, I made them in Our Image, didn't I? So they were like Us before they ever knew anything about Good and Evil."

"And really, they knew the difference between right and wrong as soon as I told them about that tree. They didn't have to eat anything to know that.

"But before they ate, they knew only by hearing. They knew only by faith. Now they know by experience. They know independently of Me telling them.

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 4:1 And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the LORD. (See also Genesis 4:17, 38:26, Judges 11:39, 19:25, 1 Samuel 1:19, Matthew 1:25.)*

*Matthew 7:23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Hebrew for “know” means “to know by seeing”. In other words, to know by experience. Several passages use the same word to indicate sex between a husband and wife; in other words, ultimate intimacy. But not just intimacy, but that intimacy which bears fruit.*

*When Adam and Eve “knew” each other, they produced a child. When they “knew” good and evil, they bore the fruit of sin. When Christians don’t “bear fruit”, Jesus will say He never “knew” them.*

God continued, “Of course, they may choose not to hold this memory close to their hearts. They may prefer to forget. But I have made them capable of remembering, and if they choose to remember, they will always know that what I advise them to do is truly *good* for them, (in their own best interests), and what I warn them not to do is truly evil for them (not even in *their own* interests).

**VerseScout:** *Deuteronomy 4:9 Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons;*

*Proverbs 3:1 My son, forget not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: 2 For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee.*

"In that narrow sense, yes, their eating of the Tree has made them like us, knowing by experience that obedience is good and disobedience evil.

"But I know the difference between what is good and evil for them because I designed them. I designed what is good for them. I designed what is evil for them. I even designed their capacity to choose between good and evil. *They* know the difference because they chose evil, and *suffered* the consequences."

We asked, "You said if Adam and Eve repent, they can return to Paradise, although not to the Garden of Eden. Does this mean they can undo these curses and return to the beginning and start over?"

"Almost. It will be far more difficult for them to absolutely repent of sin after tasting its 'sweetness', than to choose not to sin, had they never tasted its initial 'sweetness'."

**VerseScout:** *Hebrews 6:4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The “sweet taste” of sin is difficult to absolutely, perfectly exorcise from all desire. Likewise the “taste” of Heaven, to the extent it is truly experienced, is so addictive that to then reject it is evidence of conscious, deliberate choice to rebel against God.*

"Not that there is anything sweet about sin.

"The Books of Knowledge tasted no sweeter, nor better, than any other fruit.

"The adultery which future men will commit will be no more delightful than delight in their own wives.

"Communication with demons, enabled by substances future men will imbibe, is no more joyful than communication with Me!

"Quite the opposite! But there is something about a taste of *anything* which is addictive. And that is the inertia I have built into the minds of men. Had Adam and Eve obeyed Me a little longer, it would have become easier and easier to obey Me, until they would have had no taste for sin. I could have eventually brought them to Heaven in their same bodies, without the necessity of Death, and with no concern that they would ever lust after Hell!

**VerseScout:** *Genesis 5:24 And Enoch walked with God: and he was not; for God took him.*

*2 Kings 2:11 And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *These two instances of righteous men not dying, but being received directly into Heaven, show that it is not necessary, even after The Fall, for a human being to die! How much more would it not have been necessary, had there been no Fall!*

"I have made their wills like a mountain stream cutting a channel. When it is first forming, it has many choices. But when its water finally is released in one direction, the flow of water cuts the channel deeper and deeper, until it slices even through rocks. It is possible to block the flow, forcing the water to cut a new channel. But the deeper the old channel, the greater the force required to block it; and the harder the water will have to cut into the new channel before it can carry the energy carried by the old.

"So it is with Sin. Adam and Eve cut a deep channel carrying the

course of their lives through Sin. I threw a great Stone into the channel, blocking it, and forcing the course of their lives to begin choosing a new path.”

**VerseScout:** *1 Peter 2:5 Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. 6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. 7 Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner; 8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *Jesus is called a “chief...stone...of offence...a stone of stumbling”. A “stumbling stone” means a rock in the path over which travelers stumble, and especially which so blocks the path as to force the traveler to a detour, to a different path. Some Scriptures say it is terrible to be cause others to “stumble”, if they are on the right path. Romans 14. Other Scriptures say it is wonderful to cause others to 'stumble', if they are on the wrong path. 1 Cor 1:23-4, Gal 5:11, Mat 13:57, etc.*

God continued, “I gave them a fresh start. But even if they now choose Righteousness, the old channel remains. They have the Taste of Sin. I have given them the power to choose to dislodge my Stone and resume their old course. But if they remain committed to righteousness, my Stone will become firmly silted in and their new course will become comfortable and secure. There is always the possibility of changing course, but it always diminishes with time.

“It is in that way that a taste of anything is addictive. A taste of a particular food creates a strong desire to consume the remainder of the helping, a desire which was much weaker before the taste.”

**VerseScout:** *Matthew 13:12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *The Greek for “hath” means “holds or esteems”. Gr: “taken away” means “to pull up the anchor of”. The analogy is of a ship at a dock, whereupon men load upon it men, food, and products. For as long as the vessel remains anchored to the dock, men are able to load more and more upon it. But when its anchor is raised and it floats away aimlessly, it will eventually lose even what it started with. See also Matthew 25:29, Mark 4:25, and Luke 8:18.*

*See also the analogy of a tiny spark igniting a great fire, or the tiny tongue creating great sins, in James 3; and in Matthew 13:31-32 the analogy of how the Kingdom of Heaven takes root and grows in a man's heart in the same way the*

*tinest of seeds, the Mustard seed, grows to become the largest of herbs.*

"That is why it is so important for men to resist even the taste of sin. And that is why, once Adam and Eve chose to taste it, it became nearly impossible for them ever afterward to be perfect."

I asked, "You said every future man will begin in Paradise. I assume you mean the childhood of future humans will be an experience like Adam and Eve had before they ate of the Tree? Will it be possible for future parents to save their children from ever tasting of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil?"

God answered, "Bless you for that question! Yes, every child will grow in Paradise! Not with all the comforts of Adam and Eve: some children will suffer pain. Some will be murdered. Some tortured. Some forgotten, left alone. Physically, the bodies of children will not experience the Garden of Eden.

"But spiritually, the souls of children will indeed soar in Paradise! Adults will marvel that even suffering children remain somehow free from malice!"

**VerseScout:** *1 Corinthians 14:20 Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.*

*Luke 18:17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.*

*Matthew 18:4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *We are not supposed to try to be like children intellectually, but in not being motivated to hurt others, or imagine ourselves more "important" than others*

*"Malice" is defined as "malignity, malice, ill-will, desire to injure, wickedness, depravity, wickedness that is not ashamed to break laws, evil, trouble".*

*It may surprise some that Scripture indicates children are objectively freer of these qualities than adults. But there is a difference.*

*Yes, children are capable of deliberate cruelty to each other! But not in the way adults are. When children are mean, it doesn't run deep. It doesn't last for years. There is no "bridge burning" commitment to do evil and to be evil; there is hardly any ability to even distinguish between what various adults whom they know call "evil", and what is truly, objectively evil.*

*When very young children are mean, it is sometimes because they are imitating adult behavior they have seen, without understanding the wrongness of it, or the consequences of it, or even without feeling the hatred that an adult must feel to do it!*



*When very young children are cruel, it is sometimes because they are clumsily reacting in self defense to a perceived cruelty against them, without knowing how to determine whether the perceived “cruelty” may have been justified, or whether their own response can be justified.*

*Even American law acknowledges an inability of children to take responsibility for their actions in the sense an adult can. Children can kill on very rare occasions, but the very thought of accusing a very young child of “premeditated murder” strikes us as out of touch with reality. A very young child who kills is said to have done so by accident. Very young children cannot even grasp death, let alone a series of calculated choices designed to bring it about. The “age of consent” in most states is 14; meaning a child who has sexual intercourse with an adult before that age is assumed to have done so by manipulation, not by any meaningful “choice”. Thus the law defines that as “rape” even if the child appears to “consent” to sex, on the theory that a child’s “consent” to sex cannot possibly be an “informed consent” because of the child’s immaturity, or in legal terms, “mental incompetency”.*

*It is not that children are harmless. It is not that children never lie, or try to hurt cats, siblings, or parents. It is not that children are naturally obedient. Children, uncorrected, grow into dangerous adults.*

*Nor were Adam and Eve free from the behaviors, before they ate of the Tree, which they learned were “sin” only after they ate of the Tree. Nor was Paul free of lust before he learned lust is against God’s Law. But “sin is not counted as sin” until God identifies it as sin, Romans 7:13 (below).*

*But rather, before children can comprehend God’s Law, they are “innocent” in the most profound sense. And in that “innocence” is a beauty capable of utterly enchanting adults.*

**VerseScout:** *Romans 7:12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. 13 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. (Also see VerseScout Relevance Report on Genesis 2:16-3:7 in Chapter 19, and the VSRR on Romans 7:6-12 in Chapter 9.)*

**“They may cry from pain, they may even learn wicked habits. But wickedness will not flow from their hearts! Within the heart of every future child will be a peace, a contentment, at times, with very simple conditions.**

**VerseScout:** *Philippians 4:11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.*

**“I have done this work so that every adult may see the face of someone in paradise, and see the way back in!**

**“Now don’t misunderstand! Children are not free of evil!**

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 22:15 Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.*

“When I say wickedness will not *flow* from their hearts, I mean children will be like Adam and Eve before the Fall: full of immaturity, but with their eyes closed to how wrong they are – and thus innocent – not deliberately, consciously hateful. Not consciously choosing to rebel against Me.

“Is there is a way for parents to prevent their children from ever tasting of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil? Remember that the Tree was made to be eaten by humans! It is obvious that My plan was its eventual human consumption. We don’t WANT to spare children the experience of ‘growing up’ and opening their eyes to the difference between right and wrong!

“But parents can correct without condemning, to the extent errors are in ignorance. The knowledge of right and wrong, as long as it does not rush in ahead of the capacity of their maturing understanding to live by it, will teach them without destroying them. Parents must *train* their children in righteousness. Let them shield their children from too much knowledge of sin, beyond enough knowledge that they will know when and how to flee it.”

**VerseScout:** *Proverbs 22:6 Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.*

*Romans 6:12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.*

*Genesis 4:6 And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? 7 If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him.*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *God’s promise to Cain was that he had the ability to rule over sin. And that even though God hadn’t yet “had respect unto” Cain’s offering, the world hadn’t come to an end yet. He still had hope. He could still do well and be exalted. In other words, even after “the fall”, we still have the capacity to overcome sin.*

*But not alone! Not by ourselves! We must “yield” our hearts and bodies to God who rescues us from the jaws of death, Romans 6:13. Like music students who will become great musicians if they practice what their teachers assign them, made possible because their music teachers came down out of the Symphony to suffer not only their sour notes but also their disruption of the group rehearsals, even so we can, by yielding to God, experience the victory promised in Romans 6:14!*

“Let evil never be an ‘option’! Just say ‘no!’ Let no parent encourage his child to ‘choose’ between evil and good! Let no parent allow his child to ‘choose’ evil!”

We laughed at such an idea! “Who would do *that*?” we asked.

God warned, “Watch Adam’s first child! Beelzebub has been thinking of how to persuade Adam to teach his child ‘decision-making skills’.”

Not again! We loved Beelzebub, and meant no disrespect to the potential God put within him. But the crazy schemes he came up with since abandoning God have really been comical. We laughed, and waited for God to explain Beelzebub’s latest.

“Beelzebub will tell Adam that in order that his child grow up choosing right from wrong, he will need lots of practice in ‘choosing’.”

We had to admit, no less a created mind than Beelzebub’s could probably come up with a deception! We immediately saw how believable it was to inexperienced Adam and Eve. Even after all they have been through, they still don’t have the discernment to understand that it is choosing, itself, which is the essence of that Tree. To pressure a child to choose between good and evil, before evil even occurs to the child, is to throw a resident of Paradise up against that tree and jam books in their mouth!

“But”, we asked, “won’t such a violent assault on the innocence of a child cause the child to complain to the parents of the peace he has lost?”

“Oh, yes!” God replied. “But Beelzebub will whisper to the parents that it is good for him; it will help him ‘grow up’! Sound familiar?”

“Yes! Pretty familiar! But won’t that alert Eve? Won’t she remember how much that is like Beelzebub telling her she would become a god?”

“It is your job to remind her! But there is still another scheme Beelzebub has prepared. His utterly wicked imagination has dreamed up hundreds of scenarios in which the child will be instructed to decide which of several people he should kill! This ‘lesson plan’, which he insidiously calls ‘Values Clarification’, assumes in each situation that I will stop providing every need of every man who calls upon Me! From that impossible premise, Values Clarification imagines situations where several people have too few resources to live, but enough if one of them is killed! So who should be killed?!”

We screamed in terror! That would be taking a resident of Paradise and body-slammng him right down into the depths of Hell! “How could Adam and Eve be that dumb?”

God answered, “They won’t be for awhile. But Beelzebub is persistent. If he can’t get Adam and Eve to do it, he is quite willing to wait for a generation dumb enough to fall for it. Be vigilant!”

The cleanest angel in Heaven had the next question. He screwed up his face in disgust as he forced out the last word of his question:

“Why did you curse Adam with labor so hard that it would even make his face *SWEAT?*” We laughed merrily at Mr. Clean.

“I never cursed *Adam*. I cursed the *ground*, and I did it as a *gift* for Adam; as I told him, ‘cursed is the ground *for thy sake*’.

“We had work for him to do before he sinned which was no less challenging than what he will face now. The only difference is that after he became headstrong about doing the work he has to do to have a full life, I created the mechanism by which if he does not work, he will not eat. His hunger will pressure him to work. I did that to *bless* him, not to *curse* him.

“Far from a curse, the hard work I assign to a man is the greatest blessing I could give him. My ‘curse’ is actually a souvenir of Paradise.

“IT IS MORE THAN A SOUVENIR OF PARADISE: IT IS THE TICKET BACK IN.”

**VerseScout:** *Ecclesiastes 2:24 There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat[,] and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in[,] his labour:*

**VerseScout Relevance Report:** *the traditional KJV translation, without the commas in parenthesis, implies that there are three things best for a man: eating, drinking, and enjoying labor. This may be, but another possible correct interpretation is by inserting the commas in parenthesis; remember that Hebrew has no punctuation anyway so it is up to us to find the interpretation which is most consistent with all Scripture.*

*With the commas, we find that labor alone is the key: we are to gorge ourselves on it (in contrast to today’s “sluggards”, Proverbs 6:9-11, who worry about “workaholics”), guzzle it down, and enjoy the good of it. The sense of really pouring it down, really gorging, is in the Hebrew words. It certainly describes the way Solomon lived, as he describes earlier in the chapter! He specifies a ton of work that he did; he does not specify anything that he physically ate.*

*The first several chapters of Ecclesiastes go on to list many goals of men, which men look to for meaning, such as leaving a name for oneself: and then trash those goals, one by one, leaving only the repeated theme of labor as the purpose of life. (3:12-13, 22, 5:18, 8:15, 9:7-9.)*

*Jesus gives further information about precisely what sort of labor gives purpose to Life. The theme of Luke 12, Matthew 6, and Hebrews, is that a man doesn’t have to work for his own physical needs any more if he will take upon himself God’s “yoke”, Matthew 11:28-30, “seeking the kingdom of Heaven”. God will provide him all the food, shelter, and clothing he needs, without having to toil for it.*

*In other words, the terms God imposed on Adam because of his rebellion are precisely the same terms which Jesus will lift from the shoulders of Adam’s descendants to the extent of their obedience.*

*There is a difference between the Luke 12 statement, "Seek ye the kingdom of Heaven", and the Matthew 6 version, "seek ye **first** the Kingdom of Heaven". The Matthew 6 version implies that God may still want you to work to pay your bills, but not to make getting paid your first priority. Paul's tent making business is an example of putting money on your list of things to do, but way down below seeking the Kingdom of Heaven.*

God declared with another shout of triumph, "I do not need the Garden of Eden to provide for man the conditions of Paradise, to the extent that he seeks it!

"Yes, Adam and every one of his descendants are free to come and go from Paradise as they please! No, they may never return to the Garden of Eden. However, as soon as it is certain that they would love to be here with us for all eternity, I will bring them here, which is better than paradise, having, here, no further need of, nor desire for, the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil!"

# Chapter 30

## Pain

“Will there be any escape, for Adam and Eve, from the pain they must now suffer?” we asked.

*“To the extent* they turn to Me and willingly heed My lessons, they will not require pain *as a punishment*. However, there are benefits of pain, too, at times.

“For example, I can use pain to set a man free from fear. Fear is worse torture than pain, if it is of anything other than disobeying Me. The reason fear of me is not torture is because the only way men can fear me more than anything else is by realizing I am in control of all other dangers, which is difficult to realize without also realizing I love them and will use my control of their world to make all things work together for good for them.”

***VerseScout:** Romans 8:28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*

“In other words, when men fear only Me, their fear will be so slight that they will be virtually set free from fear.

“Pain can help accomplish this freedom. The very introduction of pain will cause *fear of pain*, which will dwarf the fear of every other danger. The only way to cure such fear will be the experience of it, and the experience of My Consolation in its midst, to prove that My Consolation is greater than any possible pain. When they are free of the fear even of pain, they will hardly fear any lesser danger!

“But in every case, pain has the power to drive away all thoughts of their passing world, which will help them concentrate on Me. As they so concentrate they will still be able to choose: whether to seek Me or curse Me. No matter how focused a soul may be upon Me, pain sharpens that focus.”

***VerseScout:** Hebrews 12:7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?*

*2 Chronicles 6:26 ...they have sinned against thee; yet if they pray..., and confess thy name, and turn from their sin, when thou dost afflict them....*

*Lamentations 3:31 For the LORD will not cast off for ever: 32 But though he cause grief, yet will he have compassion according to the multitude of his mercies. 33 For he doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.*

“For example, suppose a man lives in fear that he might abandon his faith in God were it to cost him pain. Such fear is more painful than the physical pain! So my cure might be to give him pain, so that he will learn how sweet my comfort can be in the midst of it, so that he may lose all his fear of it.”

**VerseScout:** *Job 3:25 For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me.*

“After all, when men close their ears to Me, pain (along with nightmares) is a language in which I can still reach them.”

**VerseScout:** *Job 33:14 For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. 15 In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; 16 Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, 17 That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. 18 He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. 19 He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain: 20 So that his life abhorreth bread, and his soul dainty meat. 21 His flesh is consumed away, that it cannot be seen; and his bones that were not seen stick out. 22 Yea, his soul draweth near unto the grave, and his life to the destroyers. 23 If there be a messenger with him, an interpreter, one among a thousand, [i.e. an intercessor who will pray for him] to shew unto man his uprightness: 24 Then he is gracious unto him, and saith, Deliver him from going down to the pit: I have found a ransom. 25 His flesh shall be fresher than a child's: he shall return to the days of his youth: 26 He shall pray unto God, and he will be favourable unto him: and he shall see his face with joy: for he will render unto man his righteousness. 27 He looketh upon men, and if any say, I have sinned, and perverted that which was right, and it profited me not; 28 He will deliver his soul from going into the pit, and his life shall see the light. 29 Lo, all these things worketh God oftentimes with man, 30 To bring back his soul from the pit, to be enlightened with the light of the living.*

“Of course, the only reason I will ever have for speaking to men in this language will be when they permit no other language. When they communicate with Me, and concentrate their thoughts on Me, or that is if they Pray, that is the antidote to pain.”

**VerseScout:** *James 5:13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms. 14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders*

*of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he hath committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.*

“Not just man, now, but all creation experiences pain, including you Angels. I made all of you with that capacity deliberately, the ability to Create, through the power of Imagination. I did so with the knowledge that some might create pain, but with the hope that many might help me create Heaven. Now all creation waits like an expectant mother to see how My Children will mature. When the growing pains are over for My Children, they will be over for the rest of creation, and all creation will be set free. Meanwhile, the pain heightens the yearning for, and hence readiness for, the Redemption I will offer!”

***VerseScout:** Romans 8:18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, 21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. 8:23 And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.*

Redemption! There's that hint again, of a coming full expression of God's Love! I was about to ask of this further, but the questions were coming fast, and I forgot to ask my own again until I was alone with my diary.

*“Then will You bless Humans with all possible pain?”*

“Remember that the primary purpose of pain is to compel them to do their work, through which they will find fulfillment by working alongside Me and thus getting to Know Me more than is possible through mere meditation. Focusing on Me is not the only task they have before them in order to grow towards Me. There is a great deal of Work for which I have made them, through which they will learn many lessons. They can work best when they are completely free, or at least mostly free, of pain. So I will give them pain, or withdraw it, according to what is best in each situation.”

*“How long will you allow them to live with the possibility of pain?”*

“My Goal now is to bring them here with us, to Live Eternally. I have better plans for them, than to leave them in minds which require pain in



order to think of Me. I do not want any pain here! So we will let them stay on the Earth as long as they are benefiting from our Lessons, or until their work for each other is finished.”

*“When they have finished Your lessons for them, will they then be perfect?”*

“No, not by their own labors. They have tasted sin, and will never be completely free of its lure, until I make them new bodies and minds which can take no delight in sin. The question for them will be, do you *want* the new body and mind I offer? Do you *want* to live with us in Heaven? Do you *want* to be forever sinless? Will you be sorry in Heaven where you have no opportunity to sin? We don't want anyone here who doesn't want to be here.

“When a human has decided irrevocably that he wants to wash down the fruit of the Knowledge of Good and Evil with the nectar of Complete Faith, *and to gladly receive a new body and a new mind*, we will bring them Here.

“But one day, after many souls have been prepared, I will create a New Heaven and a New Earth to be occupied by us, Adam and Eve, and as many of their descendants as so choose, together.”

*“But if they eat of the Tree of Life, they will live on Earth forever, in all that pain!”*

“Correct. So we had to drive them out of the Garden.”

When God finished, there was no sound other than the sound of hearts praising Him.

“Any more questions?” God asked. The only answer was the sound of mouths opening to praise Him for all His mercy and wisdom!

“No more questions? Then let's go! Let's set mankind on the next step of their path towards heaven!”

I guess it was the thoughtful mood I was in, that made me the last one out of the room. I noticed God had left the Future Possibilities blueprints on the desk. I added a detour past them to my route out of the room. As I glanced at them again, my eye caught a young woman who was lonely for the companionship Adam and Eve had found, yet she was in a world full of young men who would have loved to answer her need! What could possibly block her from receiving the love for which she longed, I wondered? As quickly as I wondered, I saw it was her own lack of love for those God had set before her to love! Had she loved all in her life, those relationships would quickly have led her to the special man God had created for her, and would simultaneously have prepared her for perfect, lasting love. But because she was dissatisfied with what she had, longing only for what she had not, she

found the special man late, and through lack of practice in Love spoiled the relationship so that it ended early.

What a parable of Adam and Eve, longing for what they had not, spoiling what they had!

I left the room, and came down to the beautiful Garden of Eden. I landed in a field of clover, and imagined a flower “blinded by love” enough to feel “lonely” while surrounded by thousands of friends!

A melody came to mind. I began singing:

Little flower, lonely flower, in a field of clover,  
lots of love, from above, but romance is over.  
Children sigh, young girls cry, sad to see you wilting.  
Hand in hand, across the land, mourners miss your lilting.

How could one so loved be so lonely?!  
What else matters with no one and only  
God loved Adam, knew he needed Eve  
Not some substitute named “Steve”

What about, Little Flower, angry with her Father?  
Crying long, pining song, no sweet love has found her!  
Angels sigh, in the sky, whispering the pathway  
to your man if you can follow Love as you pray!

God made you for Love! Don’t be fearful!  
For each Eve He made Adam to wipe the tears off!  
God made us to help make happy endings!  
We’re here for you, not just when a bell rings!

Little Flower, tender flower, practice Love together.  
Sorrow’s past. Have a blast! Make it last forever!  
When we come, take you home, you can bring Love’s Treasure.  
*No more tears, Love with God, Happy Endings without measure!*

# Epilogue

I will here state a few things which are already obvious to people who think about literary techniques, but I want to take this extra precaution against confusion.

It has been my purpose to recreate history as accurately as possible, but with some qualifications.

Some of the dialogue was created more to show how the lessons of Genesis apply to today's problems and questions, than to actually recreate the literal words probably spoken then.

I have been as careful as a man of my limited intelligence can be, not to teach any doctrine contrary to Scripture. But I have presented many theories which seem consistent with Scripture though not positively proved by it.

The purpose for presenting such theories, or speculations, is to counter other speculations which undermine faith in Scripture.

For example, we know Scripture says souls are condemned to eternity in Hell because of the sins of a single lifetime, and that once there, no one repents and is restored to Heaven. Unbelievers routinely speculate, in their ignorance of the rest of the story, that God is unfair, or that Hell is not literal. So I figure I can speculate as well as they can. I offer what used to be commonly called an “apology”: that is, a theory which shows how it is *possible* for every word of Scripture to be true and consistent, as well as fair, wonderful, and perfect common sense.

This falls short of proving the reasoning here is precisely God's reasoning, but it at least proves that alternatives to cynical challenges to the Bible are possible – that logic does not require cynicism – that those cynical challenges are no more than speculations.

I can hear many readers objecting, “why don't you just take it by faith? It's supposed to be simple, so a child can understand it.” This is still a pretty popular saying, even though 1 Corinthians 14:20 says “be not children in understanding”.

I *do* take all Scripture by faith, even that which I don't understand. I do that because Scripture has passed each of the thousands of rigorous scientific tests put to it, and the tests I have put to it.

The Bible contains specific prophecies about events hundreds of years in the future, which have all come true. Modern “prophets” can't even accurately predict specific events a year into the future, yet none of them are stoned.

The Bible contains descriptions of cities and cultures lost to history before archaeologists, guided specifically by Scripture, confirmed them. Most of the Bible's claims have been confirmed, and none have yet been disproved, though great archaeologists have tried!

The Bible contains facts about the orbits of planets, the quantity of stars, the water cycle, hygiene, nutrition, and even laws of thermodynamics, which were unknown to the cultures of its human authors but which are common scientific knowledge today, and in fact were the inspiration for much science today.

Miracles such as the plagues of Egypt and the miracles and resurrection of Jesus are confirmed by other ancient historical sources. They are even grudgingly acknowledged by ancient critics.

Compared with any other ancient literature, we have thousands of times more manuscripts, of much greater age, which are in far greater agreement. The handful of words which are in doubt, (as to whether they were in the original), number in the dozens, out of roughly 1200 pages. To my knowledge, no researcher alleges any of the words in doubt affect any doctrine which anyone has identified as important.

None of these claims can conscientiously be made for the Book of Mormon, or the Koran, or the Bhagavad Gita, or the Vedas. Much less for the millions of other lesser known alleged "oracles of God" published by pagans and New Agers over the centuries.

Yes, I take the Bible by faith. Although it is very nearly an insult to God, to tell Him you are taking His Word by faith, when so much of the Bible has already been proved as scientific fact!

Obviously not every claim in the Bible is testable by human science. In fact, the facts which are humanly testable are usually of the least interest to any spiritual seeker. But any news reporter, any scientist, any lawyer, any criminal investigator, knows that the way you test a witness who is telling you things you very much want to know the truth of, is to check out his story in minor details which you don't actually care about but which you are capable of checking. Thus you establish the reliability of the witness.

The Witness we want to investigate, the Bible, claims to represent God Himself. So it is appropriate that millions of investigators, over thousands of years, have devoted their lives to researching those claims of the Bible which are so unimportant as to be humanly testable.

Unbelievers take the very foolish position that they will resist believing the Bible, because a few parts of it seem irrational to them. What is irrational is to expect that anything written by God would be perfectly understandable to any human!

The first rational thing to do, when searching for that literature which God really wrote, is to determine whether it was written by God, using the

tests available to humans.

The second rational thing to do, after determining which literature God really wrote, is to obey it!

Only then, way down on number three of the list of rational things to do, is to try to figure out what it all means! And even then, not for the purpose of questioning it, but for the purpose of better obeying it!

This book is part of my labors for number three.

Although it is foolish to reject the Bible because parts of it don't make sense, I realize that there is so much skepticism that it is the first clause of this sentence that doesn't make sense today. People today say "if something doesn't make sense, it's foolish to believe it!"

But no adult would say that of a child who doesn't understand his parents' warnings of danger! But many adults, who should know better, say it of a man who doesn't understand God's warnings of Hell.

Even Christians get caught up in this foolishness. Some Christians even reject those portions of the Bible which don't make sense to them. And of course, at the top of the list of passages which don't make sense, are the opening chapters of Genesis. So they are dismissed as "figurative" of something which is never explained, or is used as sort of a spiritual Rorschach Inkblot Test, which preachers use to introduce whatever philosophy the verses sort of remind them of.

Even "Bible believers" who regard every word of the Bible as the Word of God find few lessons for their everyday lives in the first six chapters of Genesis. Why? Because there is little effort to answer the questions of unbelievers. There is little effort to make sense of every detail of How It All Began.

By "little effort", I mean throughout our culture as a whole. There may be pockets of spiritual hunger for these truths, but the typical American spends several years of his life watching TV, but doesn't even spend several hours of his life searching out the hidden meanings of Genesis.

To you believers who want your theology simple, I challenge you to make sense of passages you don't even care about, so that you can obey them more fully.

For you, and for unbelievers steering for Hell because Genesis doesn't "make sense" to you, and for myself, because the Bible is my food, I have written this book. To make it easy and entertaining for you to find the answer to every question you have thought of, about The Beginning.

This is not an attempt to "add to" the Bible (see warning in the last chapter of Revelation)! To the contrary, as much as any book I have ever seen, it is almost impossible for you to read this book *instead* of reading the Bible, and thus filling your minds with my own personal mush. That's why I have reprinted the text of the Bible along with my writing about it. Don't

make the mistake of assuming anything I have written came direct from God! I have no inside track to Heaven. I have no more than you: common sense, and Scripture. Beware of believing anything I have written which you cannot confirm from Scripture!

You can very easily distinguish my words from God's Words as you read this book. God's words are in italics. You can read my words, and as you are wondering how much of what I say is based on God's Words, lo and behold there it is, for you to read for yourself!

You ask, "but how do we know if some of what you say, which we see only weak support for in the Scriptures you reprint, might have greater support in other Scriptures you do not reprint?"

The answer is "it doesn't." I have tried to be very thorough, in citing all the Scripture I know in support of each theory I offer. So if any detail in my words seems far from God's Words, forget them. It's just a story. Don't make yourself believe them. You won't offend me.

Remember, a central purpose of my writing is to speculate! It is to offer speculation about how all Scripture fits with common sense and fairness, to compete with speculation about how it does not! I am driven by a hunger to confirm, from Scripture, every detail I can, but I have tried to make very clear to you where my reasoning ends and my speculation begins. And even my reasoning should be suspect to you: accept only Scripture as having the Inside Track.

The literary techniques adopted for this book are only to make the book entertaining enough for you to turn off your TV for long enough to read it. I hope no one really thought I was a scientist in the Grand Canyon, but in case you thought so, I WAS JUST KIDDING. That is just a literary device for "justifying" the proposition that I now find myself in the possession of the diary of an angel. (No, Virginia, that isn't true either.) A rather transparent device at that, to the point of silliness. I thought it was humorous; I hope you did. I was afraid to make it any more believable, lest it might spawn another Internet Cult.

And the bit about the VerseScout. I hope you didn't really think you were reading the output of a computer program! I wasn't born yesterday. I know people resist reading the Bible itself, even in the course of reading a book *about* the Bible. So I thought up (with God's inspiration, I trust, but now don't get weird on me; God doesn't inspire me any more than he wants to inspire you) the device of a computer program, because people like computer information as much as they dislike God's information.

Kind of ironic. People have the greatest interest in information processed by computers; less interest in the reasoning of men; and the least interest in love letters from God. Kind of the reverse order from which information is the most useful and intelligent.

The other feature of this device is that it helped me clearly distinguish between God's Word and my words, without burying God's Word in footnotes or appendices.

Anyway, I hoped you liked my little devices. I hope you enjoyed reading God's Word! I hope you are now better able to answer the cynical speculations of unbelievers. I hope you have learned lessons from Genesis which you are already applying in your everyday life, making you happier and more effective.

I also hope that if you know how to help me make this book any more Biblically accurate, that you will do so!

And I hope you will share a vision of the glory of Genesis with the whole world!

## TELEPHONE CALL FROM HELL

*Translator's note: The following fragment of the Angel Diaries was complete enough to qualify for inclusion in this volume; however, it seems different enough in style to suspect it may have been written by another angel.*

*I found nothing in it to fix its time, so I could not insert it in the chronological order that organizes the rest of this volume, either of Book One or Book Two. Actually of the two books the time is more likely to be congruent with the timeline of Book Two, but because it does not clearly fit anywhere there either, I have decided to use it as sort of a preview, at the end of Book One, of the mood of Book Two.*

“Heaven sounds like such a boring place, with all that mushy love all around you, and having to say ‘thank you, God’ for all eternity. I’d rather be in Hell, with all my friends.”

At first, he meant it as a joke. But after much repetition, he simply meant it. He really didn’t *want* to go to Heaven when he died.

So, when he died, God didn’t want to force him into heaven. We took Jack where he chose.

However, after we checked him in, he found the accommodations worse than he had bargained for. They were as bad as he’d been told! He started demanding his rights. We shrugged, showed him the telephone, and left.

As the fumes and fire engulfed him, he was at first furious. Angry with the clergyman whose hypocrisy turned him off to God. Angry with his mother for using such foolish, unpersuasive reasons to coax him into meetings. Angry with his first girlfriend for dumping him just because, Jack surmised, he wasn’t “good enough for her”, which would have driven *any* man to drink.

But as Jack’s flesh began blackening, swelling, and melting off, the pain made him cry like a little brat, as Jack complained to himself. It was



in that state, the fires without competing with the raging inferno within for Jack's attention, that he picked up the phone.

"Bad night. Thank you for calling Telephone Service from Hell. Please listen to the following options. If you would like to speak to a custodian about turning up the heat, please press "1". If you would like to speak to a demon about the status of your records, press "2". If you would like to speak to an operator, press "3".

Jack instantly pressed "3".

"Wa-ha-ha-ha-ha...!"

Jack slammed down the phone. He redialed. "Bad night. Thank you for calling Telephone Service from Hell. Please listen to..."

Eternity seemed half over by the time the mechanical voice finally reached "If you would like to speak to someone in charge, please press 6,666,666." Jack pressed 6,666,666.

"Hello. Father Abraham speaking."

"Look, you better not hang up on me or switch me to another department. I've got something to say to *you*, and I've been sitting on this phone long enough for a star to cool."

"That would explain why you sound so far away. Please stop sitting on it and hold it up to your mouth."

"Oh, a wise guy, huh? Listen, what kind of a Loving God would make anyone come to this place?"

"Excuse me, would you like to wait a minute for me to play back the choice you made, to see if we made a mistake?"

"No, never mind."

"By the way, Frank says 'hell-oh'."

"Frank? What's that little fanatic twerp doing there?"

"Oh, the usual. Partying."

Just then the flames penetrated deeper and sent stabs of pain through Jack's weary brain, breaking his intense concentration on his raging anger. He moaned. He whimpered. He pleaded into the phone, "I remember reading that God is merciful. Could you send Frank to just give me one cold beer? This place is terrible! Just one beer on my dry parched tongue would be so wonderful! But please, if all I get is one, make it a Bud."

"I'm sorry, but don't you remember, when you were on Earth, singing 'In Heaven there is no beer, that's why we will drink it here'? Can't help you, Bud. I'm afraid calling you 'Bud' is the closest we can get." Abraham laughed.

"You ain't no Bud of mine!" Jack screamed into the phone. But the only sound the phone returned to him was the sound of an overstuffed chair shifting, the sound of a person leaning forward to return a phone to

its cradle. “No, wait! Don’t hang up! Abraham?”

“Yes?”

Jack began to catch on that he was in a weak bargaining position. He was *not* going to get a beer, or an air conditioner, or a pardon – but even if he could get one, he was even madder at God now than before! Heaven? No way! He just wanted to go back home, to Jack’s Bar and Grill.

But he thought of his family! Would he want his family here? Well, not that he cared so deeply about them, or about admitting he was wrong, but here was perhaps an opportunity to get Abraham to do *something* for him. The opportunity to manipulate somebody can be as gratifying as a beer, and those heavenly do-gooders are usually crying to be manipulated.

“My poor family! They will come to this awful place! Unless someone warns them! Send the twerp to my family to tell them what I am suffering here!”

Jack thought, yes, let the world know how I am suffering! That always makes suffering sweeter, when others can be told about it! It is so sweet to hear their moans of sympathy, that I used to tell them about it when I *wasn’t* suffering. But now I really *am*, so they will be even *more* impressed! They wouldn’t believe me if I came back to them from the dead, but if *The Twerp* were to come back and testify of how much I am suffering, they would really be sad for me!

But Abraham wasn’t buying. “They have their Bibles to tell them. And even though they won’t read them, they know their Bibles tell of your accommodations.”

Jack laughed. “No, you don’t get it, Abe. That’s just a bunch of mumbo jumbo. *Of course* they won’t believe their *Bibles*; they don’t even believe in *God*. But *evidence*! Ah, *evidence* is what they will believe. *Scientific evidence*. *Absolute proof*. They will definitely believe, if someone should rise from the dead and come to warn them.”

Abraham answered, “No, Jack, you don’t get it. Was lack of evidence what kept you from listening to your mother when she told you nice girls were dumping you because you smelled so bad from taking a bath only once a month? Wasn’t the fact that girls would smile at you from a distance, but turn up their noses and frown when you got close, enough evidence?”

“That was different. My mom was just being rude. You’re not supposed to tell people they smell. That’s insulting. It wasn’t her life, anyway. But what does that have to do with evidence of God?”

“Was lack of evidence what kept you from listening to your doctor when he warned you that it was drinking that had caused your bleeding ulcers, and was fast destroying your liver? Wasn’t the searing pain in your

stomach persuasive enough? Weren't the results of his tests evidence enough for you?"

"That was different. He was telling me how to live my life. If you can't live free to choose what you want to do, life isn't worth living anyway. Besides, all that liver failure stuff is for other people. I didn't expect it to happen to me. But what does that have to do with evidence of God?"

"Was lack of evidence what made you throw out the social worker who was concerned about your children growing up in a house littered with animal waste, piles of moldy dirty clothes, leftovers turning green, and rats? Didn't her brochure about the relationship of filth to disease have enough footnotes to satisfy your love of scientific proof?"

"That was different. I had a constitutional right to live however I liked on my own property. She had no business even coming into my house, much less criticizing it. But what does that have to do with evidence of God?"

"Evidence of God? You didn't need any evidence of God! Why did you own a Bible in the first place which you rarely read? Because you wanted your visitors to see a virtuous book on your shelves. Because you thought having a virtuous book might bring you good luck! Because you thought God might see it there and give you some points for at least owning it. You knew it was a 'good book', as the idiom calls it. The fact that you were mad at God proves you understood there was a God to be mad at! The fact you got angry at anybody who ever tried to tell you about God proves there was information you were determined not to hear! You don't have an *evidence* problem, Jack. You have an *attitude* problem."

"I did *too* let people talk to me about God."

"Only if they agreed with you, and only as long as they never suggested God had commandments for you to obey! As long as they never suggested that God wanted for you a better life than you lived! As long as they never suggested that the Bible contains directions from God, rebellion against which is sin, meaning failure to reach your target."

"You mean like The Twerp used to preach? Don't I have a right to believe anything I like?"

"You most assuredly do. You have a right protected by the U.S. Constitution, and by God Almighty Himself. You have the sacred right to shoot yourself in your foot, as often as you please! We have even made it easy for you, by strapping an Uzzi to your leg! Yes indeed, you have the right to *believe* what is wrong. You have the right to *be* wrong."

"So what's the problem? Why am I here?"

Abraham sounded tired. "Because the natural consequence of *asking* to be here is *being* here."

Abraham waited for the snotty retort which never came.

He continued slowly, wondering how much he could slow this down before it stopped altogether, and wondering if it would make any difference: “You have the right to believe you can jump off a cliff and not fall. But do you have the power to not fall?”

“What a dumb question. What’s your point?”

“Is the legal right to do something, the same as freedom from the natural consequences of doing it?”

Jack was too exhausted for deep questions. He considered slamming down the phone in protest. “Don’t start getting weird on me, Abe”, Jack warned.

“To stand on your legal right to be wrong, and, on the strength of that legal right, to insist on deliberately remaining wrong, is not the position of a strong intellect. Can you grasp that concept, Jack?”

Jack didn’t answer, but he didn’t appreciate being insulted. Actually he wasn’t *positive* he was being insulted, but the existence of deeper thinking than his own, which implied the need to think more deeply in order to follow it, was insulting enough.

“To base your pride on your beliefs, and then to regard as an ‘insult’ any attempt, by anyone, to correct any errors in them, is not the habit of a strong intellect. Can you grasp that concept, Jack?”

“Are you calling me stupid? Doesn’t the Bible say not to call anyone stupid?”

“You are far from stupid. If you were stupid, you would be innocent. You said it yourself. You hold ideas about God which are not intelligent because that is your *choice*. ‘I have the right to believe whatever religion I choose’, you said. You deliberately chose your religion, not on the basis of its intelligence, but on the basis of how well it demonstrated your legal right to believe *anything*.

“Intelligence requires not only capacity, but being in the mood. It isn’t the lack of evidence or intelligent arguments that keeps you away from God.

“You have *never indicated* your desire for better, stronger evidence! The only time you demanded scientific evidence, of the Christians challenging you, was when you were satisfied they didn’t know of any. When it was offered, you said you didn’t have time for any more; you have seen all of it you want! You never sought books, or searched the internet, for another side to the lies which gave you comfort.

“You did more research to decide which career to follow for 20 years, than to decide where to spend eternity! You claimed your right to continue in your beliefs, irrespective of their intelligence!

“No, Jack, if your family won’t even read their family Bibles, after

knowing it is the most widely read Book of all human history – after knowing it tells of God’s Love for them, so great as to be willing to die in their place, the evidence you propose won’t move them. It’s been tried!

“God didn’t just send some nobody back from the grave; He sent His own Son, to prove not only that God has the means to satisfy your every need, but that God wants to! He loves you as much as it is possible to love! Anyone who doubts that needs only to examine the historical evidence, of which as much exists as for any other historical event.

“It is an obedience problem which moves most to ignore evidence. Those who first determine that if there *is* a God, they will joyfully obey whatever guidance He offers, are in the mood to admit the evidence before them.

“But if you are right, that your family won’t even read their own Bibles, then they wouldn’t believe if Albert Einstein himself came out of the grave to personally present to them all the supporting math for God and Heaven and Hell, along with his personal laboratory notes.”

Jack screamed in rage as flames swallowed him – the pain of his last opportunity to torment or manipulate somebody ripped out of his desperate hands.

Abraham hung up the phone. He turned to Sarah. He opened his mouth to speak, but Sarah was too quick for him. “Didn’t he come from one of *your* nations?”

Abraham regrouped and tried again. “Honey, it doesn’t matter how many times I see it. I just can’t get used to it. We put a man exactly where he wants to be, with only these two impositions: we keep him from ever hurting anyone else again, forever. And then we love him. I never can tell which one fills him with the more rage.”

Sarah put her arms around Abraham. “It’s like pouring salt on a rotten egg. There is nothing you can pour on hate that will make it sweet. But the creatures living in it scream in pain when you try.

“There is nothing you can pour on hate that will completely put it out. Hate is the choice of will, and will is the essence of a Soul. Will cannot be controlled by external force without extinguishing the soul. As long as the Soul exists, hate cannot be cut off except by the choice of the one who hates.

“Nevertheless I admire you for trying. Even when they scream in protest, our love comforts them more than leaving them alone.”

Abraham smiled at Sarah. There may be no marriage in Heaven, but there is Love. The phone rang again.

Abraham let the answering machine take it.

With apologies to Luke 16:19-31